

BEGINNING FRENCH

CERF
AND
GIESE

REVISED

February 4th



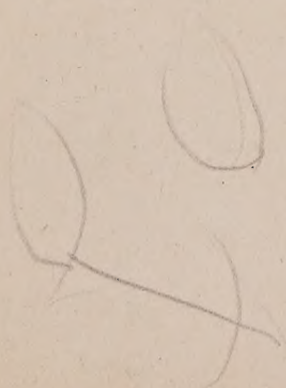
M Ryan

376-377
exo. 1+2



another? = y a - t - il
or
est - ce qu'il y a

Session R
Baldwin Light
It



BEGINNING FRENCH

REVISED

with Summary of Grammar

BY

BARRY CERF

AND

W. F. GIESE

of the University of Wisconsin

PEN-AND-INK DRAWINGS BY

J. ORMSBEE



NEW YORK

HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1919, 1921, 1923

BY

HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

May, 1924

PRINTED IN THE U. S. A.

PUBLISHERS' NOTE

Since the edition of 1921 the International System of Phonetics has been used in this book in place of the symbols used in the first Edition. The present Edition contains also a Summary of Grammar, systematically arranged, which will be useful for reference and revise.

PREFACE

BEGINNING FRENCH is strictly an introductory book intended for first year work in schools and colleges.

Grammatical theory has been cut down to what seems to the authors the irreducible minimum. Much that is ordinarily included in similar books has been omitted. Attention is concentrated on a few cardinal facts in the hope that the student will thus acquire a sure knowledge of these, in place of the usual vague smattering of many rules.

A small concrete vocabulary of about 800 words dealing with matters of every-day life has been used. These are so constantly repeated that the student is expected to end by handling the whole list with perfect readiness. The vocabulary of each lesson runs to about twenty words only, to be learned once for all.

The book, while insisting on a thoroughly mastered background of grammatical discipline, encourages oral work in the class-room, and emphasizes the importance of repeated drill on the simplest elements and constructions of colloquial French. The principle of imitation has been utilized to an unusual extent. The *Drills* enable the student to study intelligently and to make sure that he rightly understands and applies his precepts. The *Dialogues* offer him the opportunity to do this in a larger and freer way — a thing which, without such guidance, he usually finds impossible. It is hoped they will particularly appeal to teachers who emphasize oral work in the class-room, as they furnish not only subject-matter but a practicable device for preparation.

For the sake of variety, much more material for practice has been furnished than is needed. The teacher may pick and choose. Each lesson is divided into two parts, the first

sufficient in itself, the second supplementary. The latter may be largely or entirely omitted by those who desire only a rapid survey of the elements of French — or it may be reserved for use in going through the book a second time.

So far as is compatible with its purely elementary character, the French text offers to the student consecutive instead of disconnected matter, a feature whose advantages are now so commonly recognized as to require no comment. The *Readings* should be read aloud with accuracy and animation, and only occasionally and partly translated. The *Résumés*, prepared in advance, may be given with closed books, the teacher pronouncing the words one by one and calling on the first volunteer to amplify. They should not be allowed to consume much time.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	
Pronunciation	3
Table of Sounds	6
Rules for Pronunciation	7
Nasalization	12
Length of Vowels	13
Observations on Vowels — on Consonants	14
Numerals — Stress	16
Syllabification — Linking — Elision	17
Diacritical Marks	18
Alphabet — Exercises	19
LESSON	
I. L'ÉCOLE	25
Gender; Number; Definite Article.	
II. L'ÉCOLE	29
Contraction of Article; Use of Est-ce que .	
III. L'ÉCOLE	33
Present Indicative (First Conjugation); Models for Questions; Indefinite Article.	
IV. L'ÉCOLE	38
Feminine Adjectives; Plural of Adjectives; Position.	
V. REVIEW	43
VI. LA MAISON	45
Imperative; Negative.	
VII. LA MAISON	49
Present Indicative (avoir); Relative Pronoun; Il y a, voilà .	
VIII. LE JARDIN	54
Irregular Feminine Adjectives; Present Indicative (Second Conjugation).	
IX. LA FAMILLE	60
Possessive Adjectives; Possession.	

LESSON	PAGE
X. REVIEW	64
XI. LA FAMILLE	66
Present Indicative (Third Conjugation); Interrogative Pronoun.	
XII. LA RUE	70
Past Participle; Past Indefinite.	
XIII. LE RESTAURANT	76
<i>Some, any</i> (before nouns).	
XIV. LA GARE	81
Present Indicative (<i>être</i>); Past Indefinite (with <i>être</i>).	
XV. REVIEW	87
XVI. LA GARE	88
Future; Interrogative Pronoun.	
XVII. LE MAGASIN	94
Adverbs of Quantity; En .	
XVIII. LA GARE	100
Conjunctive Pronouns (Direct Object); Chez .	
XIX. LE MAGASIN	106
Conjunctive Pronouns (Indirect Object).	
XX. REVIEW	112
XXI. L'ÉGLISE	114
Present Participle, <i>etc.</i> ; Prepositions with Infinitive.	
XXII. CHEZ LE MARCHAND DE TABAC	120
(Table) Conjunctive Pronouns; Disjunctive Pronouns.	
XXIII. LES JOURS DE LA SEMAINE	125
<i>This, that</i> (adjectives).	
XXIV. L'HEURE	132
Idioms; On ; Numerals (1-12); The Clock.	
XXV. REVIEW	138
XXVI. LES MÉTIERS	140
Possession; <i>Some (any)</i> ; Present Indicative (faire).	
XXVII. LE TEMPS; LES SAISONS	146
Imperfect Indicative; Its Use; Idioms.	

CONTENTS

vii

LESSON	PAGE
XXVIII. À LA CAMPAGNE	152
Comparison of Adjectives and of Adverbs; Numerals (13-20).	
XXIX. LA FAMILLE	160
Numerals (above 20); Savoir .	
XXX. REVIEW	166
XXXI. LA POSTE	168
Conditional; Aller ; Conditions.	
XXXII. L'HÔTEL	174
Negatives; <i>Some (any)</i> ; Pouvoir, Prendre ; Irregular Verbs (<i>stem</i>).	
XXXIII. LE MAGASIN	183
Imperative (with pronoun objects); Adverbs; Venir .	
XXXIV. LES MOIS	191
Idioms; Faire, Dire .	
XXXV. REVIEW	199
XXXVI. LE THÉÂTRE	201
Agreement of Participles; Idioms; Ce qui; Lire, Écrire .	
XXXVII. LA TOILETTE	208
Reflexive Verbs; Conduire, Croire .	
XXXVIII. LA TOILETTE	216
Reflexive Verbs; Sentir, etc.	
XXXIX. LA CASERNE	222
Order of Personal Pronouns; Voir, Vouloir .	
XL. REVIEW	230
XLI. CHEZ LE MÉDECIN	232
Present Subjunctive (regular and irregular verbs); Uses.	
XLII. LA PENSION	242
Present Subjunctive: further uses; Irregular forms; Connaître, Mettre .	
XLIII. LA MAISON	249
Demonstrative Pronouns; Possessive Pronouns; Recevoir, Devoir .	

LESSON	PAGE
XLIV. UNE LETTRE: LE PAQUEBOT, LA DOUANE	258
Summary of Interrogative and Relative Pronouns; Craindre, Ouvrir.	
XLV. REVIEW	268
PAST DEFINITE; IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE	270
SCHEMES FOR VERB DRILL	272

APPENDIX

PARADIGMS OF REGULAR VERBS	275
PARADIGMS OF AUXILIARY VERBS	278
TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS	281
COMPOUND VERBS (<i>list</i>)	294
CLASS-ROOM WORDS AND PHRASES	296
USEFUL PHRASES FOR MEMORIZING	299
SUMMARY OF GRAMMAR	305
VOCABULARIES	349
INDEX	373

PRONUNCIATION

Preliminary Remarks.—The observations in §§ 1-14 are introduced here as an aid to teachers and students who desire to utilize a few of the elementary data of phonetic science as a supplement to the usual method of learning to pronounce by approximate English equivalents as given in § 15. Those who prefer to rely on the Table of Sounds will accordingly omit these preliminary remarks and pass to § 15.

1. VOWEL SOUNDS

	FRONT	BACK	
(<i>High</i>) <i>Close</i>	[j]	[w]	(<i>High</i>) <i>Close</i>
	[i] [y]	[u]	
	[e] [ø]	[o]	
	[ɛ] [œ] [ə]	[ɔ]	
(<i>Low</i>) <i>Open</i>	[a]	[ɑ]	(<i>Low</i>) <i>Open</i>

2. [i], [e], [ɛ], [a] are *front* vowels, pronounced with the tongue in the *front* of the mouth. They are progressively less *close* and more *open*, pronounced with the tongue progressively less *high* in the mouth and the mouth progressively wider *open*. The corners of the mouth are progressively less far apart, being very far apart for [i].

Practise this series, beginning first with [i], then with [a].

Practise the following: [ti] [te] [tɛ] [ta], [ta] [tɛ] [te] [ti].

3. [ɑ], [ɔ], [o], [u] are *back* vowels, pronounced with the tongue in the *back* of the mouth. They are progressively less *open* and more *close*, pronounced with the tongue progressively *higher* in the mouth and the mouth progressively less *open*. They are *rounded*, the lips forming a round opening progressively narrower, till with [u] it reaches the shape used for whistling.

Practise this series, beginning first with [ɑ], then with [u].

Practise [ba] [bɔ] [bo] [bu], [bu] [bo] [bɔ] [ba].

Combine the two series, running first from [i] to [u], then from [u] to [i].

Practice the series [ti] to [bu] and [bu] to [ti].

4. The front vowels are unrounded.

[i] rounded gives [y],

[e] rounded gives [ø],

[ɛ] rounded gives [œ]:

[y] = tongue position of [i], lip position of [u]¹

[ø] = tongue position of [e], lip position of [o]

[œ] = tongue position of [ɛ], lip position of [ɔ]

Practise the series of *rounded front* vowels, as follows: [di] [dy], [de] [dø], [dɛ] [dœ].

Practise [dy] [dø] [dœ], [dœ] [dø] [dy].

5. [ø] and [œ] when short and unstressed will have the sound indicated by [ə]. This sound can hardly be pronounced alone, since a vowel pronounced alone is stressed.

Practise: **venir, demi, ce bon ami.**

6. If the breath sent from the lungs encounters an obstacle (partial or complete stoppage), the sound produced is a consonant; if the breath is unobstructed, the sound is a vowel. [i] and [u] are pronounced with the tongue very high in the mouth. If the tongue is raised slightly more, something like a consonant is produced: [i] becomes the semi-consonant [j] and [u] becomes the semi-consonant [w].

Practise pronouncing [i] [j], [u] [w]; [ti] [tjɛ], [ku] [kwɔ].

7. Nasal Vowels. If the *oral* vowels [a] [ɛ] [ɔ] [œ] are pronounced so that the breath passes not only through the mouth but partly also through the *nose*, the result is the nasal vowels [ã] [ɛ̃] [ɔ̃] [œ̃].

Practise pronouncing [a] [ã], [ɛ] [ɛ̃], [ɔ] [ɔ̃], [œ] [œ̃]; practise also these sounds preceded by [p].

The nasal sound represented by [ɛ̃] is really intermediate between [ɛ̃] and [ã], nearer [ã] than [ɛ̃]. Most books write the sound [ɛ̃]. We have adhered to the usual practise.

¹ When [y] precedes a vowel, the two are united in a single syllable, [y] being shortened. The second vowel of the diphthong is accented: lui [lyí].

8. French vowels are all pure vowels, that is, a single sound; English vowels are really diphthongs; e.g. English *o* in *so* is really the sound [o] followed by something like the sound [u], *a* in *car* is approximately [a] followed by [ə]. This subsidiary sound, called a “glide,” should be carefully avoided in pronouncing French.

French vowels should be pronounced sharply and clearly with distinctly marked lip movements.

Pronounce the vowel sounds preceded by [m], first in the English, second in the French manner. Note the greater tenseness, sharpness and clearness of the French sounds.

CONSONANT SOUNDS

9. Consonants, like vowels, are more clearly and sharply pronounced than in English.

10. In pronouncing the “explosive” consonants, [p] [b] [t] [d] [k] [g], avoid the laxness of the corresponding English sounds. *Be careful not to omit the explosion.* This is particularly important when the sound is final, for here the explosion is omitted almost entirely in English.

For [p] and [b] bring the lips together sharply and part them with a distinct explosion.

For [t] and [d] bring the tip of the tongue sharply against the upper teeth and release it with a distinct explosion.

Practise pronouncing *cap, aube, batte, grande, flaque, dogue.*

11. The sound [ɲ] is like the English *ni* in *union*, but be careful not to make two sounds; don't pronounce *un-yon*: **dignité** (pronounce *di-gni-té*, not *din-yi-té*).

12. The usual French **r** is the so-called “uvular **r**,” pronounced by movement of the uvula, somewhat as in the German word *ach*. The “uvular **r**” can be learned only by imitation. The “tip-trill **r**” is sounded by vibration of the

tip of the tongue. It can be more readily acquired than the "uvular r," but is usually lost as the student begins to talk easily.

13. In pronouncing English [l], the tongue is loose in the mouth. For the French [l], bring the tongue sharply against the upper teeth. Compare English *long* and French *long*.

The correct pronunciation of [l] is particularly important when the sound is final. Compare English *tell* and French *tel*.

14. For [s] [z] [f] [v] [m] [n] [ʃ] [ʒ] remember the general rule, that French consonants are pronounced with quick, distinct lip and tongue movements.

15. TABLE OF SOUNDS

VOWELS

SYMBOL	SOUND
[a]	like a in 'mat': <i>dame</i> [dam], <i>lady</i>
[ɑ]	like a in 'father': <i>pâte</i> [pa:t], <i>paste</i>
[e]	like a in 'mate': <i>blé</i> [ble], <i>wheat</i>
[ɛ]	like e in 'met': <i>très</i> [tre], <i>very</i>
[ə]	like e in 'the ² man': <i>le</i> [lə], <i>the</i>
[i]	like ee in 'meet': <i>ici</i> [isi], <i>here</i>
[ɔ]	like aw in 'paw': <i>soldat</i> [sɔl-da], <i>soldier</i>
[o]	like o in 'note': <i>tôt</i> [to], <i>soon</i>
[u]	like oo in 'boot': <i>vous</i> [vu], <i>you</i>
[y]	pronounce the ee in 'meet' [i] and round the lips to the whistling position: <i>du</i> [dy], <i>of the</i>
[ø]	pronounce the a in 'mate' [e] and round the lips to the whistling position: <i>peu</i> [pø], <i>little³</i>
[œ]	pronounce the e in 'met' [ɛ] and round the lips to the whistling position: <i>peur</i> [pœr], <i>fear³</i>

¹ This [a] should not be pronounced too "flat"; it is really intermediary between the sounds of 'mat' and 'father,' considerably nearer *mat*, however.

² Pronounce *thuh* man, not *thee* man.

³ The beginner may pronounce both [ø] and [œ] like u in 'burr.'

NASAL VOWELS

- [ɛ̃] like the a in 'sang' without the final consonantal sound:
vin [vɛ̃], *wine*; see § 7
- [ɔ̃] like the o in 'song' without the final consonantal sound:
bon [bɔ̃], *good*
- [œ̃] like the u in 'sung' without the final consonantal sound:
un [œ̃], *one, a*
- [ɑ̃] like the a in 'palm' pronounced nasally: *enfant* [ɑ̃-fɑ̃], *child*

CONSONANTS

- [j] like y in 'yes': *ciel* [sjɛl], *heaven*¹
- [w] like w in 'wet': *oui* [wi], *yes*; *louer* [lwe], *to praise*²
- [ʃ] like ch in 'Chicago': *chef* [ʃɛf], *chief*
- [ɲ] like ni in 'union': *signe* [siɲ], *sign*; see § 11
- [ʒ] like s in 'pleasure': *je* [ʒə], *I*
- [s] like s in 'sing': *son* [sɔ̃], *his*
- [z] like z in 'zone': *rose* [ro:z], *rose*

Pronounce the other consonants as in English.

- [:] indicates that the vowel it follows is long: *rose* [ro:z], *rose*

RULES FOR PRONUNCIATION

VOWELS

16. [a], called "open a," is written as follows:

1. *â*: *âme* [a:m], *soul*; *pâte* [pa:t], *paste*.

EXCEPT in verb endings: *nous donnâmes* [nu dɔ̃-nam],
we gave; *vous donnâtes* [vu dɔ̃-nat], *you gave*.

2. *a* before the sound [z], i.e. before s between vowels: *base*
[ba:z], *basis*; *occasion* [ɔ̃-ka-zjɔ̃].

3. *a* before the ending -tion [-sjɔ̃]: *nation* [na-sjɔ̃], *station*
[sta-sjɔ̃].

¹ The beginner may pronounce [j] like [i]: [si-ɛl] for [sjɛl].

² The beginner may pronounce [w] like [u]: [lu-e] for [lwe].

4. **a** before silent final **s**: **pas** [pa], *not, step*; **matelas** [ma-tə-la], *mattress*.

EXCEPT in verb endings: **tu as** [ty a], *thou hast*; **tu donneras** [ty dɔ-nə-ra], *thou shalt give*.

17. [a], called "close a," is the usual sound of the French **a**. The letter **a** is to be pronounced [a] except in the cases noted under [a]: **patte** [pat], *paw*; **la** [la], *the*; **parler** [par-le], *to speak*

NOTE. **oi** is pronounced [wa]: **loi** [lwa], *law*; **oiseau** [wa-zo], *bird*.¹

18. [e], called "close e," is written as follows:

1. **é**: **blé** [ble] *wheat*; **vérité** [ve-ri-te], *truth*.
2. **ai** as verb ending; cf. [e] 2: **j'ai** [ʒe], *I have*; **je donnai** [ʒə dɔ-ne], *I gave*; **je donnerai** [ʒə dɔ-nə-re], *I shall give*.
3. **e** before all silent final consonants except **t**; cf. [e] 3: **donner** [dɔ-ne], *to give*; **les** [le], *the, them*; **clef** [kle], *key*.

19. [ɛ], called "open e," is written as follows:

1. **è, ê, ei**: **père** [pe:r], *father*; **j'achète** [ʒa-ʃet], *I buy*; **tête** [tɛ:t], *head*; **vous êtes** [vu zet], *you are*; **peine** [pen], *pain*; **neige** [nɛ:ʒ], *snow*.
2. **ai** except as verb ending; cf. [ɛ] 2: **je donnais** [ʒə dɔ-nɛ], *I was giving*; **je donnerais** [ʒə dɔ-nə-rɛ], *I should give*; **vrai** [vrɛ], *true*; **mais** [mɛ], *but*.
3. **e** before a silent final **t** or **ts**; cf. [ɛ] 3: **effet, effets** [ɛ-fɛ], *effect, effects*; **gilet** [ʒi-lɛ], *waistcoat*.

NOTE. **et** [ɛ], *and*; **est** [ɛ], *is*.

4. **e** before a pronounced final consonant: **fer** [fɛ:r], *iron*; **autel** [o-tɛl], *altar*.
5. **e** before more than one consonant; cf. [ə] 2: **rester** [rɛs-te], *to remain*; **terrain** [tɛ-rɛ̃], *land*.²

EXCEPT before consonant + **l** or + **r**; see [ə] 3.

NOTE. **x** = **ks** or **gz** (see § 50); it counts as two consonants.

¹ **oignon** [ɔ-ɲɔ̃], *onion*; **poignard** [pɔ-ɲa:r], *poniard*.

² **femme** [fam], *woman*; **solennel** [sɔ-la-nɛl], *solemn*; -**emment** as an adverbial ending is pronounced [-a-mɔ̃]: **ardemment** [ar-da-mɔ̃], *ardently*; **récemment** [re-sa-mɔ̃], *recently*; **dessus** [dɛ-sy], *above*; **dessus** [dɛ-su], *underneath*; **messieurs** [mesjø], *Messrs.*; **res-** as a prefix is pronounced [rɛ-]: **ressembler** [rɛ-sā-ble]; **ressentir** [rɛ-sāti:r], *to feel*.

6. **e** before the sound [j]: **abeille** [a-bɛ:j], *bee*; **soleil** [sɔ-lɛ:j], *sun*.

NOTE. 4, 5, 6 may be condensed as follows: **e** before a pronounced consonant in the same syllable (see § 54).

20. [ə], called “neutral **e**,” is written as follows:

1. **e** final in monosyllables: **le** [lə], *the, him*; **de** [də], *of*.
2. **e** before a single consonant in the interior of a word; cf. [ɛ] 5: **venir** [və-nir], *to come*; **demi** [də-mi], *half*.
3. **e** before consonant + **l** or + **r**; cf. [ɛ] 5: **secret** [sə-kʁɛ], *secret*; **reflet** [rɛ-flɛ], *reflection*.

NOTE. 1. The *second* consonant, not the *first*, must be **l** or **r**: pronounce [ɛ] in **celtique**, **perdition**. **ll**, **rr**, **lr**, **rl** count as two consonants: pronounce [ɛ] in **celle**, **serre**, **merle**.

NOTE 2. See § 40.

NOTE 3. § 20, 1, 2, 3 may be condensed as follows: **e** final in a syllable (see § 54).

21. [i] is written **i**: **cire** [si:r], *wax*; **citron** [si-trɔ̃], *lemon*.

EXCEPT before a vowel; see § 26, 1.

NOTE. The letter **y** is merely an orthographic variant of the letter **i** (**lyre**, **style**, **mystère** are pronounced as if written **lire**, **stile**, **mistère**); all rules applying to **i** apply also to **y**: **yeux** [jø], *eyes* (see § 26, 1). But for **y** between vowels, see § 43.

22. [o], called “close **o**,” is written as follows:

1. **ô**: **vôtre** [vo:tr], *yours*; **contrôler** [kɔ̃-tro-le], *to control*.
2. **o** before the sound [z], i.e. before **s** between vowels: **rose** [ro:z], **position** [po-zi-sjɔ̃].
3. **o** before the ending **-tion** [-sjɔ̃]: **motion** [mo-sjɔ̃], **notion** [no-sjɔ̃].
4. **o** final or before a silent final consonant: **zéro** [ze-ro], **piano** [pjɑ-nɔ]; **mot** [mo], *word*; **nos** [no], *our*.
5. **au**, **eau**; **saut** [so], *leap*; **flambeau** [flɑ̃-bo], *torch*.¹

EXCEPT that **au** before **r** is pronounced [ɔ]: **j'aurai** [ʒ-ɔ-re].
I shall have; **Maure** [mɔ:r], *Moor*.

23. [ɔ], called “open **o**,” is the usual sound of the French **o**. The letter **o** is to be pronounced [ɔ] except in the cases

¹ **Paul** [pɔl], *Paul*.

noted under [o]: **votre** [votr], *your*; **école** [e-kɔl], *school*; **donner** [dɔ-ne], *to give*.¹

NOTE. Compare the rules for [a], [a] with those for [o], [ɔ].

24. [ø], called "close eu," is written as follows:

1. **eu** final or before a silent final consonant: **peu** [pø], *little*; **douteux** [du-tø], *doubtful*.

NOTE. So also **œu**: **bœufs** [bø], *oxen*; **œufs** [ø], *eggs*.

2. **eu** before the sound [z]: **creuser** [krø-ze], *to dig*; **douteuse** [du-tø:z], *doubtful*.

25. [œ], called "open eu." The group **eu** is to be pronounced [œ] except in the cases noted under [ø].

eu is pronounced [œ] in the following cases:

1. **eu** when not final nor before a silent final consonant: **peur** [pœ:r], *fear*; **heureux** [œ-rø], *happy*.

NOTE. So also **œu**: **bœuf** [bœf], *ox*; **œuf** [œf], *egg*.

2. **eu** before the sound [j]: **deuil** [dœ:j], *mourning*; **feuillage** [fœ-ja:ʒ], *foliage*.

NOTE. So also **ue**,² **œ**: **recueil** [rə-kœ:j], *collection*; **œil** [œ:j], *eye*.

26. [j] is written as follows:

1. **i** before another pronounced vowel: **ciel** [sjel], *sky*; **viande** [vjā:d], *meat*.

EXCEPT that when **i** follows consonant+**l** or+**r** it remains [i]: **prier** [pri-e], *to pray*; **client** [kli-ā], *client*.

NOTE. Contrast **étudier** [e-ty-dje], *to study* and **j'étudie** [ʒe-ty-di], *I study*; in **j'étudie** silent **e** does not affect the pronunciation and **i** remains [i].

2. **il** after **i**: **filles** [fi:j], *daughters*; **pillages** [pi-ja:ʒ], *pillages*.

EXCEPT **ville** [vil], *city*; **village** [vi-la:ʒ], *village*; **mille** [mil], *thousand*; **tranquille** [trā-kil], *tranquil*; and **ill-** initial: **illégal** [i-le-gal], *illegal*; **illimité** [i-li-mi-te], *unlimited*.

¹ **fosse** [fos], *ditch*; **grosse** [gros], *big*.

² **ue** is merely an orthographic variation of **eu** used after **c** and **g** in order to guard the sounds [k] and [g]: **recueil** would be pronounced [rə-sœ:j], and **orgueil**, if spelled **orgeuil**, would be [ɔr-ʒœ:j]; see § 45.

3. **ill** after any vowel: **travailler** [tra-va-je], *to work*; **feuille** [fø:ʝ], *leaf*.

4. **il** final after a vowel: **travail** [tra-va:ʝ], *work*; **œil** [œ:ʝ], *eye*.¹

NOTE. **ill** could never be written after **i**; if this were possible **file** would be written **fiille**. Also, French orthography avoids **-ill** final. So, **ill** may be considered the regular spelling of [ʝ], **il** (rule 2) and **il** (rule 4) being accidental.

27. [u] is written **ou**: **tout** [tu], **pour** [pu:r].

EXCEPT before a pronounced vowel; see § 29.

28. [y] is written **u**: **pur** [py:r], *pure*; **furtif** [fyr-tif], *furtive*; **sûr** [sy:r], *sure*.

NOTE. **u** before a vowel is shorter than otherwise and forms a single syllable with the vowel. The accent falls on the second vowel of the diphthong: **lui** [lyi], *him*; **puis** [pyi], *then*; **puiser** [pyi-ze], *to draw*. Distinguish **lui** [lyi] and **Louis** [lwi], see § 29.

29. [w] is the sound of **ou** before a *pronounced* vowel: **oui** [wi], *yes*; **Louis** [lwi].

EXCEPT that when **ou** follows consonant+**l** or+**r** it remains [u]: **éblouir** [e-blu-i:r], *to dazzle*; cf. § 26, 1.

NOTE. Contrast **jouer** [ʒwe], *to play*, and **je joue** [ʒə ʒu], *I play*: in **je joue** *silent e* does not affect the pronunciation and **ou** remains [u]; cf. § 26, 1, Note.

30. How is the letter **a** pronounced? See [ɑ], [a]. How is **ai** pronounced? See [e] 2, [ɛ] 2. How is **au** pronounced? See [o] 5.

31. How is **eu** pronounced? See [ø], [œ]. How is **e** pronounced (1) before more than one consonant: see [ɛ] 5; (2) before one consonant: see [ə] 2; (3) before a final consonant: see [ɛ] 4, [e] 3, [ɛ] 3?

¹ **poil** [pwal], *hair*.

NASALIZATION

32. A vowel is nasalized before **m** or **n** if the **m** or **n** is not followed by a vowel or **m** or **n** (i.e. vowel + **m** or **n** when **m** or **n** is final or followed by any consonant except **m** or **n**). Rule otherwise stated: A vowel is nasalized before **m** or **n** if the **m** or **n** ends the syllable; see § 54. For examples, see §§ 33-36. Do not nasalize the vowels in such words as **enne-mi** [ɛ-nə-mi], *enemy*; **hymne** [imn]; **inouï** [i-nwi], *unheard of*; **image** [i-maɪʒ]; **commis** [kə-mi], *clerk*; **immodeste** [i-mə-dest].¹

33. [ã]² represents:

1. a nasalized: **dans** [dã], *in*; **tante** [tã:t], *aunt*.
2. e nasalized: **en** [ã], *in*; **client** [kli-ã].³

EXCEPT the cases noted under [ē] 4.

34. [ẽ] represents:

1. i nasalized: **vin** [vẽ], *wine*; **simple** [sẽ:pl].
2. ai nasalized: **pain** [pẽ], *bread*; **plaindre** [plẽ:dr], *to pity*.
3. ei nasalized: **plein** [plẽ], *full*; **Reims** [rẽ:s], *Rheims*.
4. **en** final after i: **rien** [rjẽ], *nothing*; **bien** [bjẽ], *well*; and **en** in forms of the verbs **venir**, **tenir** and their compounds: **je viens** [ʒə vjẽ], *I come*; **il tiendra** [il tjẽ-dra], *he will hold*; **il retient** [il rə-tjẽ], *he retains*.

NOTE. oi nasalized is pronounced [wẽ]: **point** [pwẽ]; **moindre** [mwẽ:dr], *least*.

35. [õ] represents o nasalized: **don** [dõ], *gift*; **fontaine** [fõ-tən], *fountain*.⁴

¹ ennui [ã-nyi], *bore* (so also **ennuyer** [ã-nyi-je], **ennuyeur**); **emmener** [ã-mə-ne], *to carry away*; **enivrer** [ã-ni-vre], *to intoxicate*; **nous tîmes** [nu tẽ:m], *we held*; **nous vîmes** [nu vẽ:m], *we came*; **néanmoins** [ne-ã-mwẽ], *nevertheless*.

² [ã] palm 1. a **dans**
2. e **en**

[ẽ] sang 1. i **vin**
2. ai **pain**
3. ei **plein**

[õ] song o **don**
[õẽ] sung u **un**

³ examen [ɛg-za-mẽ], *examination*: -éen final = [-eẽ]: **Européen** [œ-rə-pe-ẽ].

⁴ **monsieur** [mə-sjø], *Mr.* (for *messieurs*, see § 19, footnote 2); **faon** [fã], *fawn*; **paon** [pã], *peacock*.

36. [œ̃] represents **u** nasalized: **un** [œ̃], *one, a*; **parfum** [par-fœ̃], *perfume*.¹

37. Observe the pronunciation of feminines whose masculines end in **n**: **vain** [vê], **vaine** [ven]; **ancien** [ã-sjê], **ancienne** [ã-sjen], *ancient*; **un** [œ̃], **une** [yn], *one, a*.

LENGTH OF VOWELS

38. Vowels are usually short in French; they are always short in *unstressed* syllables. The stress in French words falls on the last pronounced vowel; see § 53.

The following vowels are long:

1. *Stressed* vowels before the sounds [z], [ʒ], [v], [j]: **rose** [ro:z]; **j'engage** [ʒã-ga:ʒ]; **brave** [bra:v]; **je travaille** [ʒə tra-va:j], *I work*. [a] in **engager**, **travailler**, is short because it is unstressed.
2. *Stressed* vowels before **r** when **r** is pronounced final: **affaire** [a-fê:r]; **rapport** [ra-pø:r], *report*; but the vowel is short in **porte** [pørt], *door*, since **r** is not pronounced final.
3. *Stressed* nasal vowels, *unless* they are pronounced final: **bonde** [bõ:d], *leap*; **amante** [a-mã:t], *lover*; but the vowels are short in **bon** [bõ], *good*; **amant** [a-mã], *lover*, since they are pronounced final.
4. *Stressed* vowels bearing a circumflex, *unless* they are pronounced final: **pâte** [pa:t], *paste*; **côte** [ko:t], *coast*; but **mât** [ma], *mast*; **ci-gît** [si ʒi], *here lies*.

EXCEPT **vous êtes** [vu zet], *you are*; and the endings of the past definite: **nous donnâmes** [nu dɔ-nam], *we gave*; **vous finîtes** [vu fi-nit], *you finished*.

¹ **eu** nasalized is pronounced [œ̃]; the only common word of this class is **à jeun** [a ʒœ̃], *fastino*

OBSERVATIONS ON VOWELS

39. **ai** before the sound [z] in forms of the verb **faire**, *to do*, is pronounced [ə]: **nous faisons** [nu fə-zɔ̃], *we do*; **il faisait** [il fə-zɛ], *he was doing*; **faisant** [fə-zɑ̃], *doing*.

40. [ə] is dropped unless an unpronounceable combination of consonants (usually three consonants) would result: **matelot** [ma-tlo], *sailor*; **venir** [vni:r], *to come*; but **Angleterre** [ɑ̃-glə-tɛ:r], *England*; **relier** [rə-lje], *to bind*. The beginning student, however, will do well to give full value to [ə] in all cases.

41. **-e** final, **-es** final, **-ent** as a verb ending (third person plural) are silent: **rose**, **roses** [ro:z]; **ils donnent** [il dɔn], *they give*; **ils donnèrent** [il dɔ-ne:r], *they gave*.

42. **eu** in forms of the verb **avoir**, *to have*, is pronounced [y]: **nous eûmes** [nu zym], *we had*; **il a eu** [i la y], *he has had*; i.e. pronounce as if the **e** were omitted.

43. **y** between vowels is equivalent to two **i**'s: **payer** = **paier** [pɛ-jɛ] (**pai** = [pɛ], see § 19, 2; **-ier** = [je], see § 26, 1); **voyons** = **voi + ions** [vwa-jɔ̃], *let us see*; **tuyau** = **tui + iau** [tyi-jɔ], *pipe*.¹

NOTE 1. For **y** not between vowels, see § 21, Note.

NOTE 2. The **y** in **pays**, *country*, and its compounds is treated as if it were between vowels: **pays** = **pai + i** [pɛ-i]; so **paysan** [pɛ-i-zɑ̃], *peasant*; and **paysage** [pɛ-i-za:ʒ], *landscape*.

OBSERVATIONS ON CONSONANTS

44. **b** before **s** or **t** is pronounced [p]: **obscur** [ɔp-skyr]; **obtenir** [ɔp-tɛ-ni:r], *to obtain*. Cf. Latin *urbs* [urps].

45. **c**, **g** before **a**, **o**, **u** are pronounced [k], [g] (cf. English *cat*, *col*, *cut*): **car** [kair], *for*; **goût** [gu], *taste*.

¹ **La Fayette** [la fa-jɛt], **mayonnaise** [ma-jɔ-ne:z].

c, g before **e, i** are pronounced [s], [ʒ] (cf. English *cent, city*): **cette** [sɛt], *this*; **gilet** [ʒi-lɛ], *waistcoat*.

ç, ge before **a, o, u** are pronounced [s], [ʒ]: **nous commençons** [nu kɔ-mɑ̃-sɔ̃], *we begin*; **nous mangeons** [nu mɑ̃-ʒɔ̃], *we eat*.

qu, gu are pronounced [k], [g]: **qui** [ki], *who*; **guerre** [gɛʁ], *war*.

46. cc is pronounced [ks] and **gg** is pronounced [gʒ] before **e, i**: **succéder** [syk-se-de], *to succeed*; **suggérer** [syg-ʒe-re], *to suggest*; elsewhere (i.e. before **a, o, u** or a consonant) **cc** = [k], **gg** = [g]: **occasion** [ɔ-ka-zjɔ̃], **aggraver** [a-gra-ve].

47. ch is ordinarily pronounced [ʃ]: **chou** [ʃu], *cabbage*; **acheter** [a-ʃɛ-te], *to buy*.

NOTE. **ch** before a consonant is pronounced [k]: **chrétien** [kre-tjɛ], *Christian*; **chronique** [krɔ-nik], *chronicle*; also in **chœur** [kœ:r], *chorus*; **écho** [e-ko], and some other words mainly of Greek origin.

48. s between vowels is pronounced [z], elsewhere [s]: **rose** [roɪz]; **phrase** [fraɪz]; **somme** [sɔm], *sum*; **passage** [pa-saɪʒ]; **vaste** [vast].

NOTE 1. Final **s** is not pronounced, unless it is linked (see § 55, note 2).

NOTE 2. In compounds **s** usually retains the sound [s] of the simple word: **vraisemblable** [vrɛ-sɑ̃-blabl], *likely*; **présupposer** [pre-sy-po-ze], *to presuppose*.

49. The ending -tion is pronounced [sjɔ̃]: **nation** [na-sjɔ̃], **motion** [mo-sjɔ̃].

EXCEPT **-stion** [stjɔ̃]: **question** [kɛs-tjɔ̃], **suggestion** [syg-ʒes-tjɔ̃].

50. x is pronounced [ks]: **fixer** [fik-se], **excuser** [ɛk-sky-ze].

EXCEPT that initial **ex-** before a vowel is pronounced [ɛgz-]: **exemple** [ɛg-zɑ̃:pl], **exister** [ɛg-zis-te].

NOTE 1. **x** at the end of a word is equivalent to **s** and follows the rules for **s**; cf. § 55, note 2.

NOTE 2. **x** is pronounced [z] in **deuxième** [dø-zjɛm], *second*; **sixième** [si-zjɛm], *sixth*; **dixième** [di-zjɛm], *tenth*.

NOTE 3. **x** is pronounced [s] in **soixante** [swa-sɑ̃t], *sixty*; cf. **six**, **dix** in § 52, 1.

51. Final consonants are usually silent, but final **c**, **f**, **l** and **r** are in most cases pronounced: **bec** [bɛk], *beak*; **chef** [ʃɛf], *chief*; **fil** [fil], *wire*; **cher** [ʃɛr], *dear*.

NUMERALS

52. Pronunciation of numerals **cinq** (5), **six** (6), **sept** (7), **huit** (8), **neuf** (9), **dix** (10):

1. standing alone: [sɛk], [sis], [sɛt], [yit], [nœf], [dis]: **il en a cinq** [i lɑ̃ na sɛk], *he has five*.
2. before a word beginning with a vowel: [sɛk], [siz], [sɛt], [yit], [nœv], [diz]. Pronounce the consonant with the word following in accordance with § 55: **cinq ans** [sɛ̃ kɑ̃], *five years*; **dix amis** [di zami]. See § 55, note 2.
3. before a word beginning with a consonant: [sɛ], [si], [sɛ], [yi], [nœ], [di]: **cinq chevaux** [sɛ ʃə-vo], *five horses*.

NOTE 1. **dix-huit** [di zyit] 18; **dix-neuf** [diz nœf] 19; **vingt** [vɛ̃] 20; **vingt-deux** [vɛ̃t dø] 22, etc., to **vingt-neuf** [vɛ̃t nœf] 29; but in **quatre-vingt-un** 81, to **quatre-vingt-dix-neuf** 99, **vingt** is pronounced [vɛ̃].

NOTE 2. See § 50, notes 2, 3.

NOTE 3. **c** = [g] in **second** [sə-gɔ̃], *second*, and its derivatives: **secondaire**, etc.

STRESS (ACCENTUATION)

53. There is a slight stress on the last pronounced syllable of all French words, but this stress is so slight that it is well to disregard this rule and to *stress all syllables equally*.

For the first year the student will do well to pronounce syllable by syllable; in this way only will he free himself from the tendency to misaccentuate, especially in the case of words which resemble English words. Say **cón-cén-trér** to avoid **concéntrer**.

SYLLABIFICATION

54. *Correct division of syllables is essential to a good pronunciation.* In dividing into syllables pronounce a single consonant with the vowel following, but separate two or more consonants: **plu-ra-li-té**, **ad-mi-rer**, **par-fait**, **ter-rain**.

NOTE. The group consonant +l or +r is not separated but is pronounced with the vowel following: **se-cret**, **re-flet**; cf. [ə] 3 (§ 20).

LINKING

55. When a word ending with a consonant precedes a word beginning with a vowel or (in most cases) **h** (see § 56, note 4), the consonant is generally carried over to the following word: **vous allez** [vu zale], *you go*; **un autre** [œ noitr], *another*; **les hommes** [le zòm], *the men*.

NOTE 1. Linking takes place even though the consonant would be silent if the word to which it belongs were pronounced alone: **vous** [vu], but **vous allez** [vu zale], *you are going*.

NOTE 2. In linking **d** becomes [t], **f** becomes [v], **s** or **x** becomes [z]: **quand il** [kã til], *when he*; **neuf amis** [nœ va-mi], *nine friends*; **des amis** [de za-mi], *some friends*; see § 52, 2.

NOTE 3. Do not link after **et** [e], *and*: **et il a** [e i la], *and he has*.

NOTE 4. See § 56, note 3.

ELISION

56. Before a word beginning with a vowel or (in most cases) **h**, the final **e** of monosyllables is dropped (elided) and replaced by an apostrophe: **le+ami**=**l'ami** [la-mi], *the friend*; **l'homme** [lòm], *the man*. So with **je**, *I*; **me**, *me*; **te**, *thee*; **se**, *himself, herself*; **de**, *of*; **ne**, *not*; **que**, *that*; **ce**, *this, that*.

NOTE 1. **a** is elided in **la**, *the*, **her**: **l'encre** [lā:kr], *the ink*; **je l'aime** [ʒə ləm], *I love her*.

NOTE 2. **i** is elided in **si**, *if*, when **il**, *he*, or **ils**, *they*, follows: **s'il vient** [sil vjɛ], *if he comes*; **s'ils viennent** [sil vjen], *if they come*.

NOTE 3. Do not elide nor link before **huit**¹, *eight*; **huitième**¹, *eighth*; **onze**, *eleven*; **onzième**, *eleventh*; **le onzième livre** [lə ɔ̃zjɛm livʁ], *the eleventh book*.

NOTE 4. Initial **h** is not pronounced; linking and elision take place before words beginning with **h**: **des hommes** [de zɔm], *some men*; **l'homme** [lɔm], *the man*.

EXCEPT that **h** at the beginning of a certain number of words, mainly of Germanic origin, prevents linking and elision ("aspirate **h**"): **les héros** [le e-ro], **le héros** [lə e-ro]. These words, which must be learned by observation, are indicated in dictionaries by ' or *: '**héros** or ***héros**.

57.

DIACRITICAL MARKS

(´) *acute accent* (l'accent aigu [lak-sā te-gy]): **blé** [ble], *wheat*

(˘) *grave accent* (l'accent grave [gra:v]): **père** [peir], *father*

(^) *circumflex accent* (l'accent circonflexe [sir-kō-fleks]): **tête** [tɛt], *head*

These three accents indicate the quality of the vowels, not stress (see §§ 16, 18, 19, 22, 53).

(¸) *cedilla* (la cédille [se-di:j]): **leçon** [lə-sō], *lesson* (see § 45)

(¨) *dieresis* (le tréma [tre-ma]): **Noël** [nɔ-ɛl], *Christmas*

The dieresis is used to show that the vowel over which it is placed is in a separate syllable from the vowel preceding. Compare **Noël** [nɔ-ɛl] with **poêle** [pwal], *stove*; **aiguë** [ɛ-gy], *sharp*, with **longue** [lō:g], *long*.

(.) **le point** [pwɛ]

(?) **le point d'interrogation**

(,) **la virgule** [vir-gyl]

[dɛ-tɛ-rɔ-ga-sjō]

(;) **le point et virgule**

(!) **le point d'exclamation**

(:) **deux points**

[dek-skla-ma-sjō]

¹ But link in compound numerals: **dix-huit** [di zyit], **vingt-huitième** [vɛ tyitjɛm].

(-)	le trait d'union [trə dy-njɔ̃]	(. . .)	les points suspensifs [sys-pũ-sif]
(—)	le tiret [ti-rɛ]	()	la parenthèse [pa-rũ- tɛ:z]
(« »)	les guillemets [gi-jə-mɛ]		

The *tiret* is used to indicate a change of speaker:

— Est-il venu? — Non! — Où est-il? — Je ne sais pas.

The *guillemets* are not used so much as the English quotation marks.

ALPHABET

58. The letters of the alphabet are as follows:

a	a [ɑ]	j	ji [ʒi]	s	esse [ɛs]
b	bé [be]	k	ka [ka]	t	té [te]
c	cé [se]	l	elle [ɛl]	u	u [y]
d	dé [de]	m	emme [ɛm]	v	vé [ve]
e	é [e]	n	enne [ɛn]	w	double vé [du-blə ve]
f	effe [ɛf]	o	o [o]	x	iks [iks]
g	gé [ʒe]	p	pé [pe]	y	i grec [i grɛk]
h	ache [aʃ]	q	ku [ky]	z	zèd [zɛd]
i	i [i]	r	erre [ɛr]		

It is not advisable to use the *names* of the letters as given above; speak of *sounds* instead: say [s], not *esse*. In the case of the explosive consonants add a "neutral e" [ə] to the sound: [bə], [də], [gə], [kə], [pə], [tə].

EXERCISES

59. Exercise on [ɑ], [a], §§ 16-17, 53-54: 1. la place. 2. nous parlâmes, *we spoke*. 3. le vase. 4. le fracas, *noise*. 5. moi, *me*. 6. le dégât, *injury*. 7. il dira, *he will say*. 8. la Loire. 9. vous désirâtes, *you desired*. 10. le tas, *heap*. 11. la tâche, *task*. 12. l'évasion, *escape*. 13. le poisons. 14. tu vas, *thou goest*. 15. pâle. 16. j'arrive. 17. l'opération. 18. écraser, *to crush*. 19. déjà, *already*.

20. froid, *cold*. 21. l'animal. 22. le cas, *case*. 23. la phrase. 24. l'obstacle. 25. tu diras, *thou shalt say*. 26. la nomination. 27. la table. 28. le repas, *meal*. 29. la paroisse, *parish*.

60. Exercise on [e], [ɛ], [ə], §§ 18-20, 53-54: 1. je parlai, *I spoke*. 2. je parlais, *I was speaking*. 3. la mer, *sea*. 4. l'éveil, *awakening*. 5. assez, *enough*. 6. le mètre. 7. le regret. 8. me. 9. été, *been*. 10. je dirai, *I shall say*. 11. mener, *to drive*. 12. la pêche, *peach*. 13. je dirais, *I should say*. 14. je ferai, *I shall make*. 15. vous parlez, *you speak*. 16. pareille, *similar*. 17. je mène, *I drive*. 18. l'effet, *the effect*. 19. te, *thee*. 20. errer, *to wander*. 21. la Seine. 22. replier, *to fold up*. 23. la reprise, *taking again*. 24. il mènerait, *he would drive*. 25. le chef (*f* is pronounced), *chief*. 26. la clef (*f* is silent), *key*. 27. perdu, *lost*. 28. le degré. 29. gai.

61. Exercise on [ɔ], [o], §§ 22-23, 53-54: 1. composer. 2. la potion. 3. le poète. 4. la côte, *coast*. 5. la curiosité. 6. le restaurant. 7. le dos (*s* is silent), *back*. 8. la dot (*t* is pronounced), *dowry*. 9. la pause. 10. notre, *our*. 11. le nôtre, *ours*. 12. la popularité. 13. sot (*t* is silent), *foolish*. 14. sotté, *foolish*. 15. la locomotion. 16. l'écho. 17. la peau, *skin*. 18. tu auras, *thou shalt have*.

62. Exercise on [i], [ø], [œ], [u], [j], [w], §§ 21, 24-29, 53-54: 1. le feu, *fire*. 2. le tablier, *apron*. 3. la sœur, *sister*. 4. veuillez, *please*. 5. la muraille, *wall*. 6. le vœu, *vow*. 7. la prière, *prayer*. 8. la truite, *trout*. 9. la pitié, *pity*. 10. le bleuet, *cornflower*. 11. l'ouvrière, *working-woman*. 12. le bataillon, *battalion*. 13. luisant, *shining*. 14. le beurre, *butter*. 15. cueillir, *to gather*. 16. le fil, *thread*. 17. vieil, *old*. 18. la famille, *family*. 19. familier. 20. initial. 21. heureux, *happy*. 22. heureuse. 23. l'œillet, *pink*. 24. friand, *dainty*. 25. illuminé.

63. Exercise on the nasal sounds, §§ 32-37, 53-54: 1. le panier, *basket*. 2. inférieur. 3. l'ancre, *anchor*. 4. la reine, *queen*. 5. bien, *well*. 6. commun. 7. vous viendriez, *you would come*. 8. joindre, *to join*. 9. pendant, *during*. 10. intime, *intimate*. 11. la conscience. 12. l'âne, *donkey*. 13. l'an, *year*. 14. la peinture, *painting*. 15. ils viennent, *they come*. 16. tenant, *holding*. 17. nous tiendrons, *we shall hold*. 18. la dentelle, *lace*. 19. indiscret. 20. américain. 21. humble. 22. annuel. 23. bon, *good*. 24. bonne. 25. le soin, *care*. 26. le moineau, *sparrow*. 27. immense. 28. américaine. 29. la honte, *shame*.

64. Exercise on § 38: mark the long vowels in §§ 59-63.

65. General exercise on §§ 16-38, 53-54: 1. édifier, *to edify*. 2. redresser, *to straighten*. 3. l'hôpital, *hospital*. 4. l'enjeu, *stake*. 5. l'enfant, *child*. 6. l'intuition. 7. ce, *this*. 8. le câble. 9. je tiendrai, *I shall hold*. 10. la position. 11. illicite. 12. orgueilleux, *proud*. 13. orgueilleuse. 14. il retiendra, *he will retain*. 15. chez, *at the house of*. 16. nous aimâmes, *we loved*. 17. loin, *far*. 18. le moine, *monk*. 19. la dévotion. 20. emprunter, *to borrow*. 21. craindre, *to fear*. 22. l'œuvre, *work*. 23. bravo. 24. le casier, *pigeon-holes*. 25. pêcher, *to fish*. 26. pécher, *to sin*. 27. la cuisine, *kitchen*. 28. la Chartreuse. 29. le veau, *calf*. 30. la reine, *queen*. 31. trois, *three*. 32. l'écueil, *reef*. 33. la caution. 34. ceindre, *to gird*. 35. il achèterait, *he would buy*. 36. l'hésitation. 37. nous craignons, *we fear*. 38. tu as, *thou hast*. 39. le paquet, *package*. 40. la feuille, *leaf*. 41. le bec, *beak*. 42. cacher, *to conceal*. 43. Laure. 44. nouer, *to tie*. 45. la pioche, *pickaxe*. 46. fort, *strong*. 47. le balai, *broom*. 48. vermeil, *vermilion*. 49. sevrer, *to wean*. 50. ils viendront, *they will come*. 51. ils tiennent, *they hold*. 52. patiente. 53. coquin, *rascal*. 54. coquine. 55. vous montâtes, *you mounted*.

66. General exercise on §§ 16-56: 1. la théière, *teapot*. 2. l'hôte, *host*. 3. le bilan, *balance-sheet*. 4. isoler, *to isolate*. 5. le blâme. 6. défunte, *defunct*. 7. le cahier, *note-book*. 8. la groseille, *currant*. 9. la ceinture, *belt*. 10. la frayeur, *fright*. 11. le Maine. 12. l'essai, *trial*. 13. j'achèterai, *I shall buy*. 14. l'émotion. 15. les vœux, *vows*. 16. vous racontâtes, *you related*. 17. la peine, *pain*. 18. la science. 19. le grelot, *bell*. 20. vous tiendriez, *you would hold*. 21. jaser, *to chatter*. 22. l'œillade, *glance*. 23. l'avoine, *oats*. 24. l'aumône, *alms*. 25. ils mènent, *they drive*. 26. le fléau, *scourge*. 27. le soin, *care*. 28. tu aurais, *thou wouldst have*. 29. seize, *sixteen*. 30. chrétien, *Christian*. 31. le jouet, *plaything*. 32. le tien, *thine*. 33. nous crions, *we cry*. 34. exigeant, *exacting*. 35. le tuyau, *pipe*. 36. décemment, *decently*. 37. quel, *what*. 38. la canaille, *rabble*. 39. le poignard, *poniard*. 40. le moyen, *means*. 41. égayer, *enliven*. 42. et, *and*. 43. il réveille, *he awakens*. 44. la tienne, *thine*. 45. la cuisine, *kitchen*. 46. la femme, *woman*. 47. que, *that*. 48. fuir, *to flee*. 49. elle est, *she is*. 50. l'indignité. 51. la fosse, *ditch*. 52. six hommes, *six men*. 53. nous enrageons, *we are enraged*. 54. le paysage, *landscape*. 55. le secrétaire. 56. il maintiendra, *he will maintain*. 57. anxieux, *anxious*. 58. le lycéen. 59. monsieur. 60. mieux, *better*. 61. l'invitation. 62. l'affût, *hiding-place*. 63. guère, *scarcely*. 64. chrétienne, *Christian*. 65. prodigue, *prodigal*. 66. tu ennuyeras, *thou wilt bore*. 67. l'entraîn, *spirit*. 68. second. 69. tu feras, *thou wilt do*. 70. vous êtes, *you are*. 71. l'engin. 72. le combat. 73. huit, *eight*. 74. l'ennemi. 75. le bastion. 76. l'innovation. 77. succinct. 78. partir, *to leave*. 79. la reclusion. 80. faisant, *doing*. 81. Paul. 82. le rayon, *beam*. 83. ressortir, *to come out again*. 84. solennel, *solemn*. 85. anxieuse, *anxious*. 86. chasser, *to hunt*. 87. ensuite, *then*. 88. vous tîntes, *you held*. 89. balayant, *sweeping*. 90. le pillage. 91. nous eûmes, *we had*. 92. toi, *thee*. 93. la besogne, *task*.

94. quand il faisait, *when he was making*. 95. neuf œufs, *nine eggs*. 96. je devrai, *I shall have to*. 97. le poil, *hair*. 98. l'obscurité. 99. le beffroi, *belfry*. 100. vous creuseriez, *you would dig*. 101. ayant, *having*. 102. ardemment, *ardently*. 103. le voisin, *neighbor*. 104. inanimé. 105. il brille, *he shines*. 106. l'emprunt, *loan*. 107. vous sembliez, *you seemed*. 108. l'examen, *examination*. 109. à jeun, *fasting*. 110. l'accueil, *welcome*. 111. l'excuse. 112. la main, *hand*. 113. le geai, *jay*. 114. le succès, *success*. 115. baiser, *to kiss*. 116. baisser, *to lower*. 117. le fusil, *gun*. 118. l'absinthe. 119. qu'il aille! *let him go!* 120. l'ail, *garlic*. 121. l'aile, *wing*. 122. le mécanicien. 123. le pigeon. 124. la pilule, *pill*. 125. le feuillet, *leaf*. 126. soixante, *sixty*. 127. deuxième, *second*. 128. le poison. 129. le poisson, *fish*.

1. PREMIÈRE LEÇON [prəmje:r ləsɔ̃]

L'ÉCOLE

I

1. **Gender.** All French nouns are either masculine or feminine¹

2. **Number.** Nouns usually form the plural by adding **s** to the singular: **école** [ekɔl], *school*; **écoles** [ekɔl], *schools*.²

3. **Definite Article :** *the*.

le [lə] before a masculine noun: **le livre** [livr], *the book*

la [la] before a feminine noun: **la table** [tabl], *the table*

l' [l] before either a masculine or a feminine noun beginning with a vowel³: **l'élève** [lelɛv], *the pupil*; **l'école** [lekɔl], *the school*

les [le] before *all* plurals: **les écoles** [le zekɔl⁴], *the schools*; **les livres** [le li:vʁ], *the books*

4.

VOCABULARY

le cahier [kaje], *the copy-book*

le crayon [krejɔ̃], *the pencil*

dans [dā], *in, into* *dans*

de [də], *of, from*

devant [dəvā], *in front of*

l'école [lekɔl] (*f.*), *the school*

l'élève [lelɛv] (*m., f.*), *the pupil*

est [ɛ], *is* *est*

la fenêtre [fənɛ:tr], *the window*

le livre [li:vʁ], *the book*

¹ The gender of all nouns must be learned.

² This final **s** being silent, singulars and plurals are pronounced alike. If the singular ends in **s**, the singular and plural are identical: **le Français**, *the Frenchman*; **les Français**, *the Frenchmen*.

³ Nouns beginning with **h** are treated as if they began with a vowel: **l'histoire** [listwa:r], *the story*. There are a few exceptions; none occur in the lessons of this book. See Introduction, § 56, 4.

⁴ See Introduction, § 55.

le maître d'école [mɛˈtrø dekol], the school-master	la salle de classe [sal də klas], the class-room
la maîtresse d'école [mɛˈtrɛs dekol], the school-mistress	sur [syʁ], on
où [u], where	la table [tabl], the table

5.

DRILL

1. The copy-book; the window	Le cahier; la fenêtre
2. The copy-books; the windows	Les cahiers; les fenêtres
3. The pupil; the school	L'élève; l'école
4. The pupils; the schools	Les élèves; les écoles
5. The book; the books	Le livre; les livres
6. The class-room	La salle de classe
The class-rooms	Les salles de classe
7. The school; the schools	L'école; les écoles
8. The school-masters	Les maîtres d'école
9. The school-mistress	La maîtresse d'école
10. In the school; in front of the class	Dans l'école; devant la classe
11. On the table; in front of the tables	Sur la table; devant les tables
12. On the copy-book; in the copy-books	Sur le cahier; dans les cahiers
13. On the pencil; in the pencils	Sur le crayon; dans les crayons
14. Of the pupil; of the school	De l'élève; de l'école
15. Of the window; of the school-mistress	De la fenêtre; de la maîtresse d'école

6. **Reading.** Où est la salle de classe? La salle de classe est dans l'école. Où est la maîtresse d'école? La maîtresse d'école est dans la salle de classe devant les élèves. La table de la maîtresse d'école est devant la fenêtre. Où est l'élève? L'élève est devant la maîtresse. Où est le livre de l'élève? Le livre de l'élève est sur les cahiers. Le crayon de l'élève est dans le livre. La maîtresse est devant les élèves. Le livre de la maîtresse est sur la table. Le crayon de l'élève est sur le cahier dans la salle de classe. Où est le maître

d'école? Le maître d'école est devant la table. Le cahier ¹⁰ est sur la table. La table est devant la fenêtre. La fenêtre est dans la salle de classe. La salle de classe est dans l'école.



L'élève est devant la maîtresse

7. Résumé for Oral Work. Reproduce what you can of the *Reading* with the aid of the following hints, or use them to construct similar matter:

salle de classe; maîtresse d'école; table; élève; livre; crayon; maîtresse d'école; livre; crayon de l'élève; maître d'école; cahier; table; fenêtre; salle de classe.

8. Oral Drill. 1. the pencil; the pencils. 2. the window; the windows. 3. the pupil; the pupils. 4. the book; the books. 5. the table; the tables. 6. the copy-book; the copy-books. 7. the school; the schools. 8. in front of the school-master; in front of the school-mistress. 9. the book of the pupil; the table of the school-mistress. 10. on the pencils; in the books.

II

9.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. Where is the pupil? | Où est l'élève? |
| 2. The pupil is in the class-room | L'élève est dans la salle de classe |
| 3. Where is the class-room? | Où est la salle de classe? |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 4. The class-room is in the school | La salle de classe est dans l'école |
| 5. Where is the school-master? | Où est le maître d'école? |
| 6. The school-master is in front of the pupils | Le maître d'école est devant les élèves |
| 7. Where is the table of the mistress? | Où est la table de la maîtresse? |
| 8. The table of the mistress is in front of the window | La table de la maîtresse est devant la fenêtre |
| 9. Where is the copy-book of the pupil? | Où est le cahier de l'élève? |
| 10. The copy-book of the pupil is on the table | Le cahier de l'élève est sur la table |
| 11. Where is the pencil of the pupil? | Où est le crayon de l'élève? |
| 12. The pencil of the pupil is in the book | Le crayon de l'élève est dans le livre |
| 13. Where is the book? | Où est le livre? |
| 14. The book is on the table | Le livre est sur la table |
| 15. Where is the table? | Où est la table? |
| 16. The table is in front of the windows | La table est devant les fenêtres |

10. Conversation. A student puts one of the following questions into French; another student answers it, using the *Reading* (not the *Dialogue*) as a basis:

1. Where is the school-master? 2. Where is the pupil?
3. Where is the book of the pupil? 4. Where is the table?
5. Where is the pencil of the school-mistress?

11. Theme. The pupil is in front of the window. The window is in the class-room. The class-room is in the school. The school-mistress is in front of the tables. The book of the pupil is on the table. The copy-book of the pupil is on the books. The pencil is in the copy-book. Where is the school-master? The school-master is in front of the table of the pupil.

12. **Exercises.** A. Put the definite article, first singular, then plural, before the following:

school-master	copy-book	pencil	pupil	window
school-mistress	school	class-room	table	book

B. Use the above words in sentences.

2. DEUXIÈME LEÇON [døzjem ləsɔ̃]

L'ÉCOLE

I

13. **à** [a] = *at, to* **de** [də] = *of, from*

à+le contracts to **au** [o]; *never say à le*

de+le contracts to **du** [dy]; *never say de le*

à+les contracts to **aux** [o]; *never say à les*

de+les contracts to **des** [de]; *never say de les*

au livre, *to the book*; **du** livre, *of the book*

à la leçon, *to the lesson*; **de la** leçon, *of the lesson*

à l'élève, *to the pupil*; **de l'élève**, *of the pupil*

aux livres, *to the books*; **des** livres, *of the books*

14. To ask a question, put **est-ce que** [es kə], *is it (true) that*, before the affirmative form.¹

Le livre est sur la table, The book is on the table

Est-ce que le livre est sur la table? Is the book on the table?

15.

VOCABULARY

l'anglais [lāgle] (*m.*), English

le banc [bā], bench

ce [sə], this, that, it

difficile [difisil], difficult

donne [dɔn], gives

l'étude [letyd] (*f.*), study

facile [fasil], easy

le français [frāse], French

¹ Exception: With **où?** follow the order learned in Lesson I.

l'histoire ¹ [listwa:r] (f.), story	la plume [plym], pen
la leçon [ləsɔ̃], lesson	le professeur [profesœ:r], pro-
non [nɔ̃], no	fessor, the teacher
oui [wi], yes	sont [sɔ̃], are
le devoir [dəvwa:r], paper, exercise	

16.

DRILL

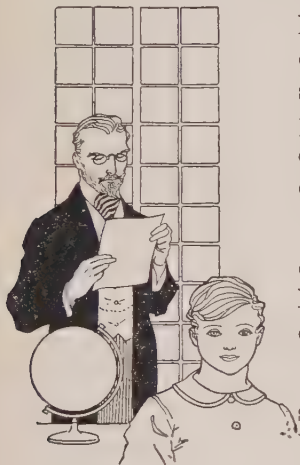
1. To the professor; to the lesson	Au professeur; à la leçon
2. To the professors; to the lessons	Aux professeurs; aux leçons
3. Of the paper; of the lesson	Du devoir; de la leçon
4. Of the papers; of the lessons	Des devoirs; des leçons
5. To the pupil; to the school	À l'élève; à l'école
6. To the pupils; to the schools	Aux élèves; aux écoles
7. Of the pupil; of the school	De l'élève; de l'école
8. Of the pupils; of the schools	Des élèves; des écoles
9. Of the window; of the study	De la fenêtre; de l'étude
10. Of the table; of the papers	De la table; des papiers
11. To the bench; of the story	Au banc; de l'histoire
12. Of the stories; to the papers	Des histoires; aux devoirs
13. To the story; of the English	À l'histoire; de l'anglais
14. Of the windows; to the studies	Des fenêtres; aux études
15. To the pen; of the lesson	À la plume; de la leçon
16. To the stories; of the benches	Aux histoires; des bancs
17. To the professor; to the window	Au professeur; à la fenêtre
18. To the English; of the pen	À l'anglais; de la plume
19. To the pens; of the studies	Aux plumes; des études

17. **Reading.** Le professeur est dans l'école devant la fenêtre. Les bancs des élèves sont dans la salle de classe devant la table du professeur. Le professeur donne les livres aux élèves. Est-ce que l'étude du français est facile?

5 L'étude de l'anglais est facile. L'étude du français est

¹ See p. 25, note 3.

difficile. La leçon sur l'histoire dans le livre est facile. Le professeur donne la plume à l'élève. L'élève donne le devoir au professeur. Le devoir de l'élève est dans le cahier. Les cahiers des élèves de l'école sont ¹⁰ sur les bancs devant la table du professeur. Est-ce que la leçon des élèves est difficile? Non, la leçon des élèves est facile.



L'élève donne le devoir au professeur

18. Résumé.¹ Professeur; bancs; donne; étude du français; anglais; leçon; plume; devoir; cahiers; leçon difficile.

19. Oral Drill. 1. to the professor; of the professor. 2. to the bench; to the benches. 3. of the benches; of the bench. 4. of the pen; of the pens. 5. to the pen; to the pens. 6. to the pencil of the mistress; to the pencils of the masters. 7. of the study of the lessons; to the study of the lesson. 8. to the story of the mistress; of the stories of the masters. 9. to the bench of the pupil; to the pupils of the school. 10. to the pens of the pupils; to the benches of the school.

II

20.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Is the study of (the) English easy? | Est-ce que l'étude de l'anglais est facile? |
| 2. Yes, the study of (the) English is easy | Oui, l'étude de l'anglais est facile |

¹ For all Résumés follow instructions on p. 27, § 7.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 3. Is the study of (the) French easy? | Est-ce que l'étude du français est facile? |
| 4. No, the study of (the) French is difficult | Non, l'étude du français est difficile |
| 5. Where are the copy-books of the pupils? | Où sont les cahiers des élèves? |
| 6. The copy-books of the pupils are on the bench | Les cahiers des élèves sont sur le banc |
| 7. Does the professor give the pens to the pupils? | Est-ce que le professeur donne les plumes aux élèves? |
| 8. No, the professor gives the papers to the pupils | Non, le professeur donne les devoirs aux élèves |
| 9. Is the study of the story difficult? | Est-ce que l'étude de l'histoire est difficile? |
| 10. Yes, the study of the story is difficult | Oui, l'étude de l'histoire est difficile |
| 11. Where are the books of the pupils? | Où sont les livres des élèves? |
| 12. The books of the pupils are on the table of the professor | Les livres des élèves sont sur la table du professeur |

21. Conversation.¹ 1. Where are the papers of the pupils? 2. Is the story difficult? 3. Does the pupil give the book to the mistress? 4. Does the master give the pen to the pupil? 5. Is the study of (the) English easy? 6. Are the books on the table? 7. Does the mistress give the pens to the master? 8. Does the master give the lesson to the pupils? 9. Is the study difficult? 10. Where are the lessons?

22. Theme. The professor is in the class-room of the school. The pupils of the school are in front of the table of the professor. The professor gives the books to the pupils. The lesson is difficult. The study of the story is easy. The pupil gives the paper to the professor. The papers of the

¹ For all Conversations follow instructions on F. 28, § 10.

pupils are on the table of the professor in front of the window.
The pens are on the papers.

23. Exercises. *A.* Put *of the* and *to the* before the following words, first singular, then plural:

pen	school	bench	paper	pupil	school-master
story	lesson	study	professor	window	copy-book

B. Use the above words in sentences.

C. A student asks questions (based on *A*); another answers.

3. TROISIÈME LEÇON [trwazjem]

L'ÉCOLE

I

24. Present Indicative of First Conjugation (verbs ending in **-er** in the infinitive): **donner** [dəne], *to give*.

je donn e	[ʒə dən],	I give ¹
(tu donn es	[ty dən],	thou givest ²)
il donn e	[il dən],	he gives ³
elle donn e	[el dən],	she gives ³
nous donn ons	[nu dənɔ̃],	we give
vous donn ez	[vu dəne],	you give
ils donn ent	[il dən],	they (<i>m.</i>) give
elles donn ent	[el dən],	they (<i>f.</i>) give

25. Note that the three singular forms and the third person plural are pronounced alike, the endings **-e**, **-es**, **-ent** being silent.

¹ **Je donne** = *I give, I do give, I am giving.*

² **Tu** is used only in speaking to children or intimate friends. Always use the **vous** form for *you*.

³ *Il* = *il* or *elle* according to the gender of the noun to which it refers: *il* (*le livre*) **est difficile**; *elle* (*la leçon*) **est facile**.

26. Interrogative.

Est-ce que je donne? [es kə ʒə dən], do I give?¹

(donnes-tu? [dɔn ty], dost thou give?)

donne-t-il?² [dɔn til], does he give?

donne-t-elle?² [dɔn tel], does she give?

donnons-nous? [dɔnɔ̃ nu], do we give?

donnez-vous? [dɔne vu], do you give?

donnent-ils? [dɔn til], do they (m.) give?

donnent-elles? [dɔn tel], do they (f.) give?

27. MODELS FOR QUESTIONS

(Use this table for reference until it is learned)

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. If the subject is a <i>pronoun</i>
(except <i>je</i>): | Donnez-vous? or
Est-ce que <i>vous</i> donnez? |
| 2. If the subject is a <i>noun</i> : | Est-ce que le <i>livre</i> est sur la table? ⁴ |
| 3. With <i>où</i> ? and some other
interrogative words: | Où est le livre? ³ |

28. Indefinite Article: *a, an*.

un [œ̃] before a masculine noun: *un banc, a bench*

une [yn] before a feminine noun: *une étude, a study*

29.

VOCABULARY

<i>l'allemand</i> [lalmã] (<i>m.</i>), German	<i>et</i> [e], and
<i>après</i> [apre], after	<i>le mot</i> [mo], word
<i>aussi</i> [osi], also	<i>parler</i> [parle], to speak
<i>chanter</i> [šate], to sing	<i>la phrase</i> [fra:z], sentence
<i>la classe</i> [klas], class	<i>prononcer</i> [prɔnɔ̃se], to pronounce

¹ The *est-ce que* form is to be used in the first person singular, and *may* be used in all persons and numbers. For elision of *e* before a vowel (*est-ce qu'il donne?*), see Introduction, § 56.

² When *il* or *elle* follows its verb, *t* (between hyphens) intervenes, if the verb ends in a vowel.

³ See § 26, and Note 1.

⁴ Or *Le livre est-il sur la table?* (less used).

⁵ Or *Le livre où est-il?* (less used). This construction or the *est-ce que* form *must* be used if the subject of the verb is a noun and the verb has a direct object.

Où est-ce que le maître trouve le livre? } Where does the master find the
Le maître où trouve-t-il le livre? } book?

30.

DRILL

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Do you sing? I sing | Chantez-vous? je chante |
| 2. Do you give? we give | Donnez-vous? nous donnons |
| 3. Does he speak? she speaks | Parle-t-il? elle parle |
| 4. They (<i>m.</i>) give; we speak | Ils donnent; nous parlons |
| 5. Does she speak? he speaks | Parle-t-elle? il parle |
| 6. Do you speak? I speak | Parlez-vous? je parle |
| 7. Do I pronounce? | Est-ce que je prononce? |
| 8. I pronounce; he pronounces | Je prononce; il prononce |
| 9. Do they (<i>m.</i>) pronounce? | Prononcent-ils? elles prononcent |
| they (<i>f.</i>) pronounce | |
| 10. Of a sentence; of a pupil | D'une ¹ phrase; d'un! élève |
| 11. Of a pencil; of a story | D'un ¹ crayon; d'une! histoire |
| 12. Do I sing? | Est-ce que je chante? |
| 13. They give; they (<i>f.</i>) speak | Ils donnent; elles parlent |
| 14. Does he pronounce? does she speak? | Prononce-t-il? parle-t-elle? |
| 15. Do I give? | Est-ce que je donne? |
| 16. Do the pupils speak to the masters? | Est-ce que les élèves parlent aux maîtres? |
| 17. Does the class sing? | Est-ce que la classe chante? |

31. Reading. Le maître est dans l'école. Les élèves sont dans l'école aussi. Le maître est devant la fenêtre. Les élèves sont devant les bancs. Le maître donne la leçon d'allemand aux élèves. Après la leçon d'allemand, il donne la leçon de français aux élèves. Les élèves prononcent les mots et les phrases du livre après le maître. Est-ce que vous chantez après la leçon de français? Nous chantons après la leçon d'anglais. Est-ce que la classe chante? Oui, elle chante. Donnez-vous les cahiers au maître? Oui, nous donnons les cahiers au maître, et les devoirs aussi. Est-ce que l'élève prononce les phrases de l'histoire? Il prononce les phrases de l'histoire après le maître. Est-ce que l'étude de l'allemand est difficile? Oui, elle est difficile. Est-ce que l'étude de l'anglais est difficile aussi? Non, elle est facile.

¹ See Introduction, § 56.

- 15 Parlez-vous français au maître? Oui, nous parlons français au maître après la classe.

32. Résumé. Maître; élèves; leçon d'allemand; après; prononcent; chantez?; classe chante; donnez?; prononce; étude de l'allemand; de l'anglais; parler français.

33. Oral Drill. 1. a copy-book; a pupil. 2. a school; a window. 3. a professor; a class-room. 4. a school-mistress; a table. 5. a bench; a study. 6. to pronounce; I give; he pronounces. 7. she speaks; they pronounce; we sing. 8. to sing; we give; you pronounce. 9. they speak; she sings; I speak. 10. Does the master speak of the pupils? 11. Does the mistress speak to the pupil? 12. Does the professor give the papers to the class? 13. Does he pronounce?; do I give?; does she speak? 14. Do they (*m.*) pronounce?; do you sing? 15. Do we speak?; do they (*f.*) sing?

II

34.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Do you speak French to the professor? | Parlez-vous français au professeur? |
| 2. No, I speak German to the professor | Non, je parle allemand au professeur |
| 3. Does the professor speak German to the pupils? | Est-ce que le professeur parle allemand aux élèves? |
| 4. No, the pupils speak German to the professor | Non, les élèves parlent allemand au professeur |
| 5. Do the pupils pronounce the sentences after the professor? | Est-ce que les élèves prononcent les phrases après le professeur? |
| 6. Yes, they pronounce the words and the sentences of the book after the professor | Oui, ils prononcent les mots et les phrases du livre après le professeur |
| 7. Do we speak of the mistress to the pupil? | Est-ce que nous parlons de la maîtresse à l'élève? |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 8. No, the pupil speaks of you to the mistress | Non, l'élève parle de vous à la maîtresse |
| 9. Does the master give a French lesson (lesson of French) to the pupils? | Est-ce que le maître donne une leçon de français aux élèves? |
| 10. No, he gives an English lesson (lesson of English) to the pupils | Non, il donne une leçon d'anglais aux élèves |
| 11. Does the class pronounce the words after the master? | Est-ce que la classe prononce les mots après le maître? |
| 12. No, it pronounces the sentences after the master | Non, elle ¹ prononce les phrases après le maître |
| 13. Do you sing at (the) school? | Est-ce que vous chantez à l'école? |
| 14. We sing after the lesson | Nous chantons après la leçon |
| 15. Does the master sing also? | Est-ce que le maître chante aussi? |
| 16. The master and the mistress sing | Le maître et la maîtresse chantent |

35. Conversation. 1. Are the pupils in front of the window? 2. Do you sing after the lesson? 3. Does she pronounce the sentences? 4. Does the master give the lesson to the pupil? 5. Do I give the pencil to the mistress? 6. Do we sing? 7. Do you pronounce the words also? 8. Does the class sing? 9. Do they speak to the pupils? 10. Do you speak to the mistress?

36. Theme. Where is the professor? Is he in the school? Yes, he is in the class-room in front of the pupils. Does the professor give the lesson to the pupils? Yes, he gives the lesson to the pupils, and they pronounce the words and the sentences of the lesson. Does the class pronounce the sentences after the professor? Yes, they pronounce the sentences and the words also. Is the study of (the) German difficult? Yes, and the study of (the) French is difficult also. The study of (the) English is easy. Do you sing after the lessons? Yes, we sing after the lessons.

¹ See page 33, footnote 3.

37. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

I give a book. Do I speak of the school?
 I sing the words. Do I speak to a professor?

B. Students fill in the blanks in the following; other students answer the questions:

1. Est-ce que — est dans l'école?
2. Est-ce que — sont dans la salle de classe?
3. — -vous les mots?

C. Put the indefinite article before the following words:

pen	school-mistress	school	class	lesson
bench	professor	word	sentence	paper

D. Verb Drill on **donner**, **parler**, **chanter**, **prononcer** in the affirmative and in the interrogative: § 480, A.

4. QUATRIÈME LEÇON [katriem]

L'ÉCOLE

I

38. **Feminine Adjectives** are formed by adding **e** to the masculine (the final consonant being *now* pronounced — but not the **e**).¹

Il est petit [pəti], He is small

Elle est petite [pətit], She is small

39. **Plural of Adjectives.** Adjectives form the plural like nouns. See p. 25, § 2, note 2.

¹ Adjectives ending in **-e** remain unchanged:

Le livre est facile [fasil], The book is easy

La leçon est facile [fasil], The lesson is easy

Il est petit [pəti], He is small
 Elle est petite [pətit], She is small
 Ils sont petits [pəti], They are small
 Elles sont petites [pətit], They are small

40. Position of Adjectives.

1. Adjectives usually follow their noun:

la leçon facile, the easy lesson
 la leçon difficile, the difficult lesson

2. Adjectives of color and nationality *always* follow their nouns:

la langue française, the French language
 l'encre noire, the black ink

3. Many short common adjectives precede their nouns; such are **grand** and **petit** which are used in this lesson.

4. Position of adjectives must in the main be learned by observation.

41. VOCABULARY

bleu [blø], blue	grand [grā], big, large
chercher [ʃerʃe], to seek,	jouer [ʒwe], ¹ to play
look for	la langue [lā:g], language
la cour [kur], yard	noir [nwa:r], black
l'encre [lā:kr] (<i>f.</i>), ink	petit [pəti], small, little
l'enfant [lāfā] (<i>m., f.</i>), child	rouge [ru:ʒ], red
enseigner [āse:ne], to teach	trouver [truve], to find
la fille [fi:j], daughter, girl	vert [ve:r], green
le garçon [garsō], boy	

42. DRILL

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. The small boy; the small yard | Le petit garçon; la petite cour |
| 2. The small boys; the large rooms | Les petits garçons; les grandes salles |
| 3. The easy lesson; the difficult books | La leçon facile; les livres difficiles |

¹ See p. 11, § 29, Note, on pronunciation [ʒwe] and [ʒə ʒu].

4. The French sentences; the French words	Les phrases françaises; les mots français
5. The big sentences; the small words	Les grandes phrases; les petits mots
6. The red pencil; the red pencils	Le crayon rouge; les crayons rouges
7. The big girls; the little boys	Les grandes filles; les petits garçons
8. Of the blue ink; to the green inks	De l'encre bleue; aux encres vertes
9. To the English language; of the big windows	À la langue anglaise; des grandes fenêtres
10. To the German sentences; of the blue copy-book	Aux phrases allemandes; du cahier bleu
11. Of the green ink; of the French language	De l'encre verte; de la langue française
12. To the difficult lesson; of the English child	À la leçon difficile; de l'enfant anglais
13. To a small child; of the French word	À un petit enfant; du mot français
14. Of the difficult languages; of the daughter of the master	Des langues difficiles; de la fille du maître
15. To a big yard; to the black ink	À une grande cour; à l'encre noire

43. Reading. Les enfants sont à l'école. Les grandes filles et les grands garçons sont dans la salle de classe; les petits garçons et les petites filles jouent dans la cour. Le maître est devant la fenêtre. Il enseigne la langue française à la classe des petites filles et la langue allemande à la classe des grandes filles. Il enseigne la langue anglaise aux petits garçons et la langue allemande aux petites filles. Il donne un livre français au petit élève français et un livre allemand à la petite élève anglaise. L'élève français trouve le livre français facile et l'élève anglaise trouve le livre allemand difficile. La fille du maître est dans la salle de classe.



Les petits garçons et les petites filles jouent dans la cour

44. **Résumé.** Enfants; grandes filles et grands garçons; petits; petites; maître; langue française, allemande, anglaise; donne; élève français; élève anglaise; fille du maître.

45. **Oral Drill.** 1. Does he pronounce the English words? 2. The children pronounce the French sentences. 3. Do you give the blue copy-books to the pupils? 4. We give the English books to the daughter of the professor. 5. Does the girl speak to the German school-master? 6. She is looking for the green ink. 7. Do the boys and the girls play in the big yard? 8. The boys play in the yard in front of the class-room. 9. Are you teaching the French language to the child? 10. I am teaching¹ the English language to the little girl. 11. Where is the red ink? 12. Does the master give the easy lessons to the pupils?

II

46.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Where are the children? | Où sont les enfants? |
| 2. The big boy is in the yard
and the little girl is in the
class-room | Le grand garçon est dans la cour
et la petite fille est dans la salle
de classe |

¹ For elision of *e* of *je* with *enseigner* (*j'enseigne*), see Introduction, § 56.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 3. Does the little girl play? | Est-ce que la petite fille joue? |
| 4. No, she is looking for the ink and the pencil | Non, elle cherche l'encre et le crayon |
| 5. Is she looking for the red ink? | Est-ce qu'elle cherche l'encre rouge? |
| 6. No, the red ink is on the table of the master; she is looking for the black ink | Non, l'encre rouge est sur la table du maître; elle cherche l'encre noire |
| 7. Does she find the pencil? | Est-ce qu'elle trouve le crayon? |
| 8. Yes, she finds the blue pencil and the black ink | Oui, elle trouve le crayon bleu et l'encre noire |
| 9. Does the master teach the English language to the big boys? | Est-ce que le maître enseigne la langue anglaise aux grands garçons? |
| 10. No, he teaches the French language to the little girls and the German language to the big boys | Non, il enseigne la langue française aux petites filles et la langue allemande aux grands garçons |
| 11. Are the lessons difficult? | Est-ce que les leçons sont difficiles? |
| 12. The lessons of the little girls are easy; the lessons of the big boys are difficult. The little girls find the French books easy, and the big boys find the German books difficult | Les leçons des petites filles sont faciles; les leçons des grands garçons sont difficiles. Les petites filles trouvent les livres français faciles, et les grands garçons trouvent les livres allemands difficiles |

47. Conversation. 1. Do you play in the class-room? 2. Do you teach the English language? 3. Where are the masters? 4. Do you give the French books to the German pupils? 5. Is the little girl French? 6. Do you find the French books difficult? 7. Are you seeking the German pupils? 8. Is the French book difficult? 9. Does the English pupil give the pencils to the little girls? 10. Where are the pupils?

48. Theme. We find the little German children in the big yard of the school. The little boys are playing with the

little girls. Is the school-master in the yard with the pupils?
 (No, he is teaching the French language to the big girls and
 to the big boys. Is the French language difficult? No, it is 5
 easy. The daughter of the master is looking for the red ink.
 She finds the blue ink, the green ink and the black ink. She
 gives the blue ink to the pupils. Are they playing in the
 yard? The little children are playing in the yard. Do the
 big children play in the yard? They play in the yard after 10
 the class. They are pronouncing the difficult words and the
 difficult sentences after the master.

49. Exercises. A. Use the indefinite article and an appropriate adjective with the following words:

yard	girl	boy	sentence
story	ink	bench	book

B. With these same words use the plural of the definite article and an adjective.

C. Conjugate:

I teach the French language. Do I look for the red ink?

D. Drill on present indicative of **chercher** and **enseigner**:
 § 480, A.

5. CINQUIÈME LEÇON [sêkjem]

Review

I

50. 1. On the table; before the pupils. 2. In the yards;
 of the tables. 3. To the pupil; of the schools. 4. To the
 class-room; of the copy-books. 5. To the pencils; of the
 pupils. 6. Of the masters; to the windows. 7. Of the yard;
 to the professor. 8. To the lessons; of a yard. 9. Of a pen;
 of a paper. 10. Of the pens; to the professors. 11. To a

bench; of the study. 12. Of the studies; to the story. 13. To the stories; do you sing? 14. We sing; does he speak? 15. They speak; do I pronounce? 16. You pronounce; do we give? 17. He gives; she sings. 18. Does he speak?; does she give? 19. The English language; the big window. 20. The green ink; of the little girl. 21. To the black ink; of the small child. 22. Are you seeking? I am finding. 23. Do you teach German? We teach English. 24. Does she play? She sings. 25. Do you speak to the school-mistress? 26. They look for the daughters of the professor.

II

51. 1. Where is the school? 2. The pencil is on the table. 3. The little boy is in front of the window. 4. The French book is on the table. 5. Does the daughter of the professor give the papers to the children? 6. Do you find the study of the lesson difficult? 7. The study of the French language is easy. 8. The copy-books of the pupils are on the bench. 9. The mistress gives the little books to the pupils. 10. I am looking for the blue ink in the class-room. 11. The boys in front of the window are singing. 12. A little girl is pronouncing the German words after the master. 13. The study of the stories is difficult. 14. Are you looking for the red ink? 15. I find the French books. 16. The boy is playing in front of the house. 17. Does the master teach the English language to the little girls? 18. We teach the French language to the big boys. 19. Is the professor teaching the German language to the English pupils in the class-room? 20. The daughters of the school-mistress are playing in the yard of the school. 21. Are you looking for the girls? 22. No, they are looking for the boys. 23. We find the study of (the) English easy and the study of (the) French difficult.

52. Oral. Students talk about *The School*, asking and answering questions.

6. SIXIÈME LEÇON [sizjem]

LA MAISON

I

53. **Imperative** = indicative with pronoun omitted: **vous donnez**, *you give*; **donnez!** *give!*

54. **Negative**. *Not* = **ne + verb + pas** [nə . . . pa]:

I do not give, etc.

je ne donne pas

(*tu ne donnes pas*)

il ne donne pas

nous ne donnons pas

vous ne donnez pas

ils ne donnent pas

Do I not give? etc.

est-ce que je ne donne pas?

(*ne donnes-tu pas?*)

ne donne-t-il pas?

ne donnons-nous pas?

ne donnez-vous pas?

ne donnent-ils pas?

55.

VOCABULARY

la chambre [ʃā:br], room

entrer (dans) [ātre (dā)], to enter

fermer [ferme], to close, shut

la maison [mezō], house

manger [māʒe], to eat

la porte [port], door

la salle à manger [sal a māʒe], dining-room

le salon [salō], living-room

sonner [sōne], to ring

la sonnette [sōnet], bell

je peux [ʒə pø], I can

il peut [il pø], he can

nous pouvons [nu puvō], we can

vous pouvez [vu puve], you can

je veux [ʒə vø], I wish, want

il veut [il vø], he wishes

nous voulons [nu vulō], we wish

vous voulez [vu vule], you wish

56.

DRILL

1. I give; I do not give

2. We enter; we do not enter

3. She rings; she does not ring

4. We give; we don't give

5. You give; don't you give?

6. They enter; they don't enter

Je donne; je ne donne pas

Nous entrons; nous n'entrons pas

Elle sonne; elle ne sonne pas

Nous donnons; nous ne donnons pas

Vous donnez; ne donnez-vous pas?

Ils entrent; ils n'entrent pas

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 7. He can; he cannot | Il peut; il ne peut pas |
| 8. We wish; we don't wish | Nous voulons; nous ne voulons pas |
| 9. Do you wish? don't you wish? | Voulez-vous? ne voulez-vous pas? |
| 10. Can he? can't he? | Peut-il? ne peut-il pas? |
| 11. Give! don't give! | Donnez! ne donnez pas! |
| 12. Eat! don't eat! | Mangez! ne mangez pas! |
| 13. She wishes; doesn't she wish? | Elle veut; ne veut-elle pas? |
| 14. I ring; I don't ring | Je sonne; je ne sonne pas |
| 15. He shuts the door | Il ferme la porte |
| 16. Doesn't he shut the door? | Ne ferme-t-il pas la porte? |
| 17. Close the doors! | Fermez les portes! |
| 18. Don't close the windows! | Ne fermez pas les fenêtres! |
| 19. Enter the house! | Entrez dans la maison! |
| 20. Don't enter the living-room! | N'entrez pas dans le salon! |

- 57. Reading.** Les petits garçons jouent devant la maison. Une grande fille est dans le salon et une petite fille est dans la salle à manger. La petite fille dans la salle à manger cherche le petit garçon, et la grande fille dans le salon cherche la petite fille dans la salle à manger. Le petit garçon veut entrer. La petite fille ferme la porte. Le petit garçon ne peut pas entrer. Il sonne.
- Le maître de la maison est dans une grande chambre. Il entre dans le salon. Il veut sonner. Il cherche la sonnette. Il ne trouve pas la sonnette.
- Voulez-vous¹ chercher les enfants? — Je cherche les enfants. Je trouve les petites filles, mais je ne peux pas trouver les petits garçons.
- Est-ce que les petites filles ne sont pas dans la salle à manger? — Non, elles sont dans la cour devant la maison.



Il sonne

¹ Voulez-vous? = do you wish? or will you?

58. Résumé. Petits garçons; grande fille; petite fille; cherche; veut entrer; ferme; ne peut pas; maître; entre; sonner; chercher les enfants; je trouve, où?

59. Oral Drill. 1. You give. 2. You don't speak. 3. Sing! 4. We give. 5. We don't teach. 6. Don't pronounce! 7. They seek. 8. They don't close the door. 9. She eats. 10. She doesn't give. (1) Does she ring? 12. Does she not teach? 13. Do you pronounce? 14. Don't you sing? 15. Do I eat? 16. Do I not ring? 17. He can play. 18. Can he find? 19. Can she not give? 20. She cannot speak. 21. Do you wish? 22. We wish. 23. Does he wish? 24. He wishes. 25. He does not wish to give the ink. 26. Does she not wish to give the papers? 27. Eat! 28. Don't eat! 29. Enter the school! 30. Don't enter the house! 31. Do you enter the room? 32. You do not enter the living-room. 33. Close the windows! 34. Don't shut the door of the house! 35. Ring the bell! 36. Do they ring the bell? 37. Do you not want the ink? 38. I want the ink. 39. Give the ink to the boys!

II

60.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Do you wish to enter the house? | Voulez-vous ¹ entrer dans la maison? |
| 2. I wish to enter the house, and the little boy does not wish to ring | Je veux entrer dans la maison, et le petit garçon ne veut pas sonner |
| 3. Will you close the door? | Voulez-vous fermer la porte? |
| 4. I do not wish to close the door; the little girl wishes to enter the room | Je ne veux pas fermer la porte; la petite fille veut entrer dans la chambre |
| 5. Where is the master of the house? | Où est le maître de la maison? |

¹ See p. 46, note 1.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 6. He is not in the living-room,
he is in the dining-room | Il n'est pas dans le salon, il est
dans la salle à manger |
| 7. Will you not enter the dining-room? | Ne voulez-vous pas entrer dans
la salle à manger? |
| 8. No, I do not wish to eat | Non, je ne veux pas manger |
| 9. Where are the children? | Où sont les enfants? |
| 10. The children are not in the house | Les enfants ne sont pas dans la
maison |
| 11. Will you look for the little boy and the little girl?
They are in front of the house | Voulez-vous chercher le petit garçon et la petite fille? Ils sont
devant la maison |
| 12. I cannot find the little girl | Je ne peux pas trouver la petite
fille |
| 13. Is she not in the living-room? Look! Ring! | Est-ce qu'elle n'est pas dans le
salon? Cherchez! Sonnez! |
| 14. Can't you find the bell? | Ne pouvez-vous pas trouver la
sonnette? |
| 15. I cannot find the bell | Je ne peux pas trouver la sonnette |

61. Conversation (*answer in the negative*). 1. Are the little boys and the little girls in the yard? 2. Is the little girl in the house? 3. Does she close the door of the dining-room? 4. Can you enter the house? 5. Can we find the bell? 6. Do you wish to enter the room? 7. Does he wish to look for the children? 8. Does he find the little girls? 9. Are they not in the dining-room? 10. Can you not find the bell on the table?

62. Theme. We do not find the little children.² They are playing in the yard.³ Are the girls not entering the house? ⁴The little girls are in the living-room, and the little boys are in the dining-room.⁵ Ring! ⁶Do you not wish to ring? ⁷You cannot close the door; find the bell, ring! ⁸The school-master can close the door. ⁹Do you not wish to eat? ¹⁰Enter the dining-room! ¹¹We do not wish to enter the dining-room; we wish to look for the little boys and the little girls in the yard in front of the house.¹² Can you not find the children?

63. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

I do not enter the house. Do I not close the door?

B. Translate: We do not give; do they (*f.*) not give?; you do not give; do I not give?; she does not give. Replace *give* by *close, ring, teach*.

C. One student asks questions (using § 57 as a basis); another answers in the negative.

D. Verb Drill on **fermer, sonner, enseigner** in the negative: § 480, A.

7. SEPTIÈME LEÇON [setjem]

LA MAISON

I

64. Present Indicative of *avoir* [avwair], *to have*.*I have, etc.**I have not, etc.*

j'ai [ʒe]

je n'ai pas [ʒə ne pa]

(tu as [ty a])

(tu n'as pas [ty na pa])

il a [il a]

il n'a pas [il na pa]

nous avons [nu zavõ]

nous n'avons pas [nu navõ pa]

vous avez [vu zave]

vous n'avez pas [vu nave pa]

ils ont [il zõ]

ils n'ont pas [il nõ pa]

65. Relative Pronoun (Persons and Things)

Subject **qui** [ki]Object **que**¹ [kə]

L'enfant *qui* est ici est petit, The child *who* is here is small

L'enfant *que* vous cherchez est petit, The child *whom* you seek is small

La maison *qui* est ici est petite, The house *that (which)* is here is small

La maison *que* vous cherchez est petite, The house *that (which)* you seek is small

66. Il y a [il ja] = *there is, there are*; voilà [vwala] = *there is!, there are!*

¹ For elision, see Introduction, § 56: L'enfant qu'il cherche.

Il y a un livre sur la table, There is a book on the table (*statement of fact*)

Voilà un livre sur la table! There is a book on the table! (*pointing out object; exclamation*)

Voilà les livres que je veux! There are the books that I want!

67.

VOCABULARY

la bonne [bɔ̃n], maid

la chaise [ʃɛːz], chair

la chambre à coucher [ʃɑːbr a kuʃe], bed-room

la cuisine [kyizin], kitchen

la cuisinière [kyizinjeːr], cook

déjeuner [deʒœne], to breakfast

dîner [dine], to dine

en bas [ɑ̃ ba], downstairs

en haut [ɑ̃ o], upstairs

l'escalier [leskalje] (*m.*), stairs

ici [isi], here

Jean [ʒɑ̃], John

là [la], there

monter [môte], to mount, go up

très [tre], very

68.

DRILL

- | | |
|------------------------------------|--|
| 1. The book which I have | Le livre que j'ai |
| 2. The house which is here | La maison qui est ici |
| 3. The rooms which they have | Les chambres qu'ils ont |
| 4. The child who is downstairs | L'enfant qui est en bas |
| 5. Have we a small house? | Avons-nous une petite maison? |
| 6. You have not a large house | Vous n'avez pas une grande maison |
| 7. Have you a small table? | Est-ce que vous avez une petite table? |
| 8. The table which I have is large | La table que j'ai est grande |
| 9. Has he a chair? | Est-ce qu'il a une chaise? |
| 10. He has no bench | Il n'a pas de banc |
| 11. Have they no bed-room? | N'ont-ils pas de chambre à coucher? ¹ |
| 12. They have a bed-room | Ils ont une chambre à coucher |
| 13. Have you a room upstairs? | Avez-vous une chambre en haut? |
| 14. I have a room downstairs | J'ai une chambre en bas |
| 15. Is there a boy here? | Est-ce qu'il y a un garçon ici? |

¹ No = pas de (with ne before the verb).

16. There is a boy here

Il y a un garçon ici

17. Is there a pen here?

Est-ce qu'il y a une plume ici?

18. There are the pens!

Voilà les plumes!

19. Has the maid a chair?

Est-ce que la bonne a une chaise?

20. She has no chair

Elle n'a pas de chaise

69. Reading. Nous avons une grande maison. Il y a une sonnette à la porte. Sonnez! J'ai une chambre en haut qui est très petite, et Jean a une chambre en bas devant



Voilà la bonne qui monte l'escalier!

la salle à manger. Les enfants dînent dans la petite chambre. La bonne dîne là aussi. Nous dînons ici dans la salle à 5 manger qui est très grande, et la cuisinière dîne dans la cuisine. Voilà la bonne qui monte l'escalier! Elle n'a pas une grande chambre.¹ La chambre qu'elle a est en haut devant les chambres à coucher des enfants. Elle cherche le petit garçon qui est en haut et qui ne veut pas déjeuner. Il 10 y a un grand escalier devant le salon, et il y a un petit escalier devant la cuisine. Montez l'escalier et entrez dans la petite chambre qui est là! Le livre que vous cherchez est sur la table. Il y a un livre aussi sur le banc qui est devant la fenêtre. Fermez la fenêtre et la porte aussi! 15

¹ Translate *not a*. What would *Elle n'a pas de chambre* be? See p. 50, *note*.

70. Résumé. Grande maison; sonnette; petite chambre; Jean; enfants dînent; bonne; dînons; cuisinière; bonne monte; chambre qu'elle a; cherche; grand escalier, petit escalier; montez, entrez; livre; fermez!

71. Oral Drill. 1. Has he? 2. Has he not? 3. He has not. 4. We have. 5. We have not. 6. You have not. 7. They have. 8. She has not. 9. Has she not? 10. Have you not? 11. Have we not? 12. I have. 13. I have not. 14. They have not. 15. Have I not? 16. Has he? 17. Has she not? 18. She has. 19. Have we? 20. We have not. 21. Have you? 22. Have you not? 23. You have not. 24. There is. 25. Is there? 26. Are there? 27. There are. 28. There's the book! 29. The book which they have. 30. There are the books on the table! 31. The books which we have are upstairs. 32. There are the boys in the kitchen! 33. The boys who are breakfasting here are in the dining-room. 34. Can you find the book that you are looking for? 35. There is the table! 36. Look for the boys whom you wish to find. 37. We have no book (*see p. 50, Note*).

II

72.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Have you a large house? | Avez-vous une grande maison? |
| 2. We have a very large house | Nous avons une très grande maison |
| 3. Is there a large living-room in the house? | Est-ce qu'il y a un grand salon dans la maison? |
| 4. Yes, there is a living-room which is very large | Oui, il y a un salon qui est très grand |
| 5. Where is the kitchen? | Où est la cuisine? |
| 6. There is the kitchen which you are looking for! | Voilà la cuisine que vous cherchez! |
| 7. And where is the dining-room? | Et où est la salle à manger? |
| 8. Here. Do you wish to dine? | Ici. Voulez-vous dîner? |

- | | |
|---|---|
| 9. Yes, I wish to dine | Oui, je veux dîner |
| 10. Enter! There is the table
in front of the window!
Can you find a chair? | Entrez! Voilà la table devant la
fenêtre! Pouvez-vous trouver
une chaise? |
| 11. There is no chair here.
Here is a very large chair! | Il n'y a pas de chaise ici. Voici
une très grande chaise! |
| 12. There is a little chair! The
chair that you have is the
chair of the cook | Voilà une petite chaise! La chaise
que vous avez est la chaise de
la cuisinière |
| 13. Where are the cook and the
maid? Are they upstairs? | Où sont la cuisinière et la bonne?
Sont-elles en haut? |
| 14. The cook is in the bed-room
upstairs | La cuisinière est dans la chambre
à coucher en haut |
| 15. And where is the maid? Is
she not here? | Et où est la bonne? Est-ce qu'elle
n'est pas ici? |
| 16. No. There is the maid who
is going up the stairs,
there in front of the
kitchen! | Non. Voilà la bonne qui monte
l'escalier, là devant la cuisine! |
| 17. Has she a French book? | Est-ce qu'elle a un livre français? |
| 18. The book that she has is
German | Le livre qu'elle a est allemand |

73. Conversation. 1. Where is the dining-room? 2. Does the maid go upstairs? 3. Does she go up the stairs? 4. Does the little boy wish to eat? 5. Do you enter the room of the children? 6. Where is the book that I wish? 7. Is there a book on the chair? 8. Where is the bench? 9. Do we not close the doors? 10. Where is the boy who closes the windows of the class-room?

74. Theme. There is a small chair in the bed-room which is upstairs and a very large table in the dining-room which is downstairs. The maid who is in the bed-room is German; the cook who is in the kitchen is French. The children who breakfast and dine in the dining-room go up the stairs to the bed-room where they play. The maid does not dine in the bed-room, she dines in the kitchen. The

¹ See p. 50, note.

cook, whom you are looking for, dines there also. The little boys and the little girls, whom I am looking for, do not play
10 in the kitchen.

75. Exercises. A. Drill on present indicative of **avoir**: § 480, A, first positive, then negative.

B. Finish the following sentences:

La bonne qui . . .	La maison qui . . .
La bonne que . . .	La maison que . . .

8. HUITIÈME LEÇON [yitjem]

LE JARDIN

I

76. Irregular Feminine Adjectives:

	<i>beautiful</i>	<i>good</i>	<i>which? what?</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	beau ¹ [bo]	bon [bō]	quel ² [kɛl]
<i>Fem.</i>	belle [bɛl]	bonne [bɔn]	quelle ? [kɛl]
	<i>old</i>	<i>white</i>	
<i>Masc.</i>	vieux [vjø]	blanc [blā]	
<i>Fem.</i>	vieille [vjɛ:j]	blanche [blā:ʃ]	

77. Present Indicative of Second Conjugation (verbs ending in **-ir** in the infinitive): **finir** [finiʁ], *to finish*.³

je fin is [fini], *I finish*
 (tu fin is [fini], *thou finishest*)
 il fin it [fini], *he finishes*
 nous fin issons [finisɔ̃], *we finish*
 vous fin issez [finisɛ], *you finish*
 ils fin issent [finis], *they finish*

¹ The plural of **beau** is **beaux**.

² Used only before nouns; not for *which* or *what* standing alone.

³ All regular verbs ending in **-ir** are conjugated like **finir**.

78

VOCABULARY

choisir [ʃwazi:r], to choose

la fleur [flœ:r], flower

l'herbe [lɛrb] (*f.*), grass

le jardin [ʒardɛ̃], garden

mais [mɛ], but

l'œillet [lœjɛ] (*m.*), pink

pousser [puse], to grow

la rose [ro:z], rose

saisir [sezi:r], to seize

le travail [trava:j], work

la tulipe [tylip], tulip

79.

DRILL

- | | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Which garden? which gardens? | Quel jardin? quels jardins? |
| 2. Which rose? which roses? | Quelle rose? quelles roses? |
| 3. The beautiful rose; the beautiful garden | La belle rose; le beau jardin |
| 4. The white pink; the white rose | L'œillet blanc; la rose blanche |
| 5. A good master; a good mistress | Un bon maître; une bonne maîtresse |
| 6. What masters? what mistresses? | Quels maîtres? quelles maîtresses? |
| 7. The old master; the old mistress | Le vieux maître; la vieille maîtresse |
| 8. We finish; I finish | Nous finissons; je finis |
| 9. He finishes; they finish | Il finit; ils finissent |
| 10. You finish; you don't finish | Vous finissez; vous ne finissez pas |
| 11. He seizes; they seize | Il saisit; ils saisissent |
| 12. Seize! do not seize! | Saisissez! ne saisissez pas! |
| 13. Are you finishing? finish! | Finissez-vous? finissez! |
| 14. What house? the old house | Quelle maison? la vieille maison |
| 15. Which boys? which girls? | Quels garçons? quelles filles? |
| 16. Find the flower! which flower? | Trouvez la fleur! quelle fleur? |
| 17. Which tulip? the beautiful tulip | Quelle tulipe? la belle tulipe |
| 18. What flowers do you choose? | Quelles fleurs choisissez-vous? |
| 19. We choose the white tulips | Nous choisissons les tulipes blanches |
| 20. Finish the lesson! | Finissez la leçon! |



Elle donne une rose blanche à la petite fille

80. Reading. La bonne vieille maîtresse de la maison et la petite fille finissent le travail qui n'est pas difficile. La maîtresse entre dans le jardin qui est devant la maison. Les enfants qu'elle cherche entrent dans le jardin aussi. Elle donne une rose blanche à la petite fille et un œillet blanc au 5 petit garçon. La bonne vieille maîtresse n'est pas belle, mais le bon vieux maître est beau. Il entre dans le jardin. Les enfants finissent le travail qu'il donne. Ils entrent dans le jardin. Ils choisissent les fleurs qui poussent dans le jardin. Ils donnent les tulipes rouges au bon vieux maître 10 et les roses blanches à la bonne cuisinière qui n'entre pas dans le jardin. Ils choisissent les fleurs qui poussent dans l'herbe verte. Ils ferment la porte du jardin et ils entrent dans la salle à manger. La cuisinière finit le travail dans la salle à manger. Le petit garçon cherche la sonnette. Il 15 ne peut pas trouver la sonnette. La petite fille trouve la sonnette. Elle sonne. La bonne entre. Elle saisit le petit garçon. Voulez-vous entrer dans la chambre à coucher? — Non, nous voulons manger. — Vous ne pouvez pas manger. Fermez la porte! Voilà le vieux maître qui cherche 20 un petit garçon et une petite fille!

81. Résumé. Finissent le travail; entre dans le jardin; enfants aussi; donne rose blanche, œillet blanc; belle, beau; enfants finissent; jardin; fleurs qui; donnent tulipes, roses; fleurs, herbe; ferment; entrent; cuisinière; garçon.

82. Oral Drill. 1. Which work? 2. The good work. 3. Which flowers? 4. The beautiful flowers. 5. Is the boy good? 6. The girl is good. 7. The beautiful garden. 8. The beautiful girl. 9. Does he finish the lesson? 10. He does not finish the lesson. 11. Find the master! 12. Which master? 13. The old master. 14. Seek the good mistress! 15. Which mistress? 16. The old mistress. 17. Choose a flower. 18. I choose a white pink. 19. Which roses do you

choose? 20. I choose the white roses. 21. Do you finish the work? 22. We finish the work. 23. Do they finish the lessons? 24. They do not finish the lessons. 25. Do not finish the work!

II

83.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Which garden are you looking for? | Quel jardin cherchez-vous? |
| 2. I am looking for the garden which is in front of the white house. Is there a door here? | Je cherche le jardin qui est devant la maison blanche. Est-ce qu'il y a une porte ici? |
| 3. There is the door! You can enter the garden | Voilà la porte! Vous pouvez entrer dans le jardin |
| 4. What is the flower that you have? | Quelle est la fleur que vous avez? |
| 5. The flower that I have is a pink. It is very beautiful; it is white | La fleur que j'ai est un œillet. Il est très beau; il est blanc |
| 6. What flowers do you choose? | Quelles fleurs choisissez-vous? |
| 7. I choose the black tulips. Is there no black tulip in this beautiful garden? | Je choisis les tulipes noires. Est-ce qu'il n'y a pas de tulipe noire dans ce beau jardin? |
| 8. No, choose the roses! They are very beautiful. They do not grow in the green grass, but they grow in front of the stairs. Will you enter the house? | Non, choisissez les roses! Elles sont très belles. Elles ne poussent pas dans l'herbe verte, mais elles poussent devant l'escalier. Voulez-vous entrer dans la maison? |
| 9. I do not wish to enter the house; the school-master is there. Does he dine there? | Je ne veux pas entrer dans la maison; le maître d'école est là. Est-ce qu'il dîne là? |
| 10. Yes, and he is not very good, but the school-mistress is very good | Oui, et il n'est pas très bon, mais la maîtresse d'école est très bonne |

11. Is he old?

Est-ce qu'il est vieux?

12. He is very old, but she is
not very old

Il est très vieux, mais elle n'est
pas très vieille

84. Conversation. 1. Do you not finish the work which I give? 2. Where are the children? 3. Do you give the beautiful flowers to the boy? 4. Where do the white roses grow? 5. Are the roses that grow in front of the house white? 6. What flowers do you choose? 7. Where is the bell? 8. Can't you find the bell? 9. Do you not close the door of the dining-room? 10. Which pupils finish the work?

85. Theme. ' The children finish the work which the good old school-mistress gives. ♪ They enter the garden. § They play. ♫ They look for the flowers which are growing there. 5 What flowers are you looking for? ♫ We are looking for the white flowers. ♫ There are the white flowers! ♫ They are very beautiful. ♫ Do you choose the pinks? ♫ No, we choose the tulips; where are they? ♫ They are in the old garden in front of the house. ♫ Which house? ♫ The white house which is there in front of you. ♫ Can you find the door? ♫ There is a bell there. ♫ Ring! ♫ The roses do not grow in the green grass, 10 but the pinks grow there.

86. Exercises. A. Use the definite article and the correct form of 'beautiful,' 'good,' 'old,' 'white,' with the following words: 'house,' 'book,' 'chair,' 'pencil.'

B. Drill on present indicative of **finir, choisir, saisir**: § 480, A, first positive, then negative, then interrogative.

C. Conjugate:

I seize the old book.

I do not choose the white flower.

What lesson do I finish?

Do I not choose the beautiful
flowers?

9. NEUVIÈME LEÇON [nœvjem]

LA FAMILLE

I

87. Possessive Adjectives:

	<i>my</i>	<i>his, her, its</i>	<i>our</i>	<i>your</i>	<i>their</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	mon [mɔ̃] ¹	son [sɔ̃]	notre [nɔtr]	votre [vɔtr]	leur [lœ:r]
<i>Fem.</i>	ma [ma]	sa [sa]	notre [nɔtr]	votre [vɔtr]	leur [lœ:r]
<i>Pl.</i>	mes [me]	ses [se]	nos [no]	vos [vo]	leurs [lœ:r]

88. Note that these words agree with the nouns *following* them: **son livre**, *his or her book*; **sa plume**, *his or her pen*; **ses plumes**, *his or her pens*.

89. Possession. The French have no form corresponding to *John's*, *the maid's*; they say of *John*, of *the maid*.

le livre de Jean (the book of John), John's book

la chambre de la bonne (the room of the maid), the maid's room

90.

VOCABULARY

l'**ami** [ami] (*m.*), friend
avec [avɛk], with
le cousin [kuzɛ̃], **la cousine** [kuzin], cousin
la famille [famij], family
la femme [fam], woman, wife
la fille [fi:j], daughter
le fils [fis], son
le frère [frɛ:r], brother
le mari [mari], husband

Marie [mari], Mary
la mère [mɛ:r], mother
l'oncle [lɔ̃:kl], uncle
ou [u], or
le parent [parā], relative
le père [pɛ:r], father
Pierre [pjɛ:r], Peter
la sœur [sœ:r], sister
la tante [tā:t], aunt
tout (*m. pl. tous*) [tu], all, every

91.

DRILL

- His daughter or my daughter **Sa fille ou ma fille**
- Her son and our son **Son fils et notre fils**
- His father and your brother **Son père et votre frère**

¹ *Thy* is **ton** [tɔ̃], **ta** [ta], **tes** [te].

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 4. Her father or her mother | Son père ou sa mère |
| 5. His relatives or his mother | Ses parents ou sa mère |
| 6. Our brothers and your sisters | Nos frères et vos sœurs |
| 7. My aunt and Peter's sisters | Ma tante et les sœurs de Pierre |
| 8. Mary's sisters and my uncles | Les sœurs de Marie et mes oncles |
| 9. Our relatives and your aunts | Nos parents et vos tantes |
| 10. Your sons or our son | Vos fils ou notre fils |
| 11. There's their cousin! | Voilà leur cousin! |
| 12. There's her husband! | Voilà son mari! |
| 13. Where are my sisters? | Où sont mes sœurs? |
| 14. There's Mary's rose! | Voilà la rose de Marie! |
| 15. Where is Mary's cousin (f.)? | Où est la cousine de Marie? |
| 16. There's Peter's wife! | Voilà la femme de Pierre! |
| 17. Where are their relatives? | Où sont leurs parents? |
| 18. There is your family! | Voilà votre famille! |
| 19. All my sons; all the ink | Tous mes fils; toute l'encre |
| 20. All the paper; all your daughters | Tout le papier; toutes vos filles |

92. Reading. Voilà ma maison et mon jardin! Entrez, mes amis! Voilà mon frère et sa femme dans le jardin avec



Voilà ma maison et mon jardin

leurs enfants! Ils ont une très belle fille. Leur fils, qui joue là dans l'herbe, est l'ami de mes fils. Ils jouent avec leur petit cousin. Leur cousine Marie cherche une belle rose 5
blanche. Son petit frère Pierre est là aussi. Il cherche un

œillet blanc. Pierre et sa sœur ne trouvent pas la rose blanche et le petit œillet blanc. Tous mes œillets et toutes mes roses sont rouges. Voilà Pierre qui choisit une fleur! Sa
 10 sœur choisit une fleur aussi. La rose de Marie est très belle et l'œillet de Pierre est très beau aussi. Il y a un grand banc dans le jardin devant la maison. Toute notre famille est là devant l'escalier, mon bon père, ma bonne mère, notre oncle et ses enfants, et mes bonnes vieilles tantes.
 15 Devant le banc, dans l'herbe verte où poussent les belles tulipes, sont leurs fils et leurs filles, tous nos petits cousins et toutes nos petites cousines. Votre femme, vos fils et nos filles sont là aussi. Marie donne sa fleur à votre femme, et Pierre donne son œillet à une de vos filles.

93. Résumé. Voilà; entrez; frère et...; fille, fils... ami; jouent avec; Marie; Pierre; cherche; ne trouvent pas; œillets; roses; choisit; sœur; banc; famille; poussent; Marie donne; Pierre donne.

94. Oral Drill. 1. Your son and my daughter. 2. His mother; her father. 3. Her brother; his sister. 4. His aunt; her uncles and my mother. 5. Her uncle; his aunts and their father. 6. Our son and his sisters. 7. Her husband and his daughter. 8. His wife and her father. 9. Your aunts and their cousins. 10. Where is Peter's brother? 11. Is Mary's husband in the garden? 12. Are your cousins and their sisters in the house? 13. Do your friends dine with their relatives?

II

95.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Where are your children? | Où sont vos enfants? |
| 2. One of my sons is here. He is playing with his sister in front of my house | Un de mes fils est ici. Il joue avec sa sœur devant ma maison |
| 3. Where is your son Peter? | Où est votre fils Pierre? |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 4. He is in your garden with his cousin Mary | Il est dans votre jardin avec sa cousine Marie |
| 5. The little girl there, on the bench, is she his cousin? | La petite fille là, sur le banc, est-elle sa cousine? |
| 6. Yes, Mary is the daughter of my sister | Oui, Marie est la fille de ma sœur |
| 7. Does your little Peter look for a flower in our garden? | Est-ce que votre petit Pierre cherche une fleur dans notre jardin? |
| 8. Yes, he wants to give a red rose to his cousin Mary | Oui, il veut donner une rose rouge à sa cousine Marie |
| 9. I have no red rose in my garden | Je n'ai pas de rose rouge dans mon jardin |
| 10. Are your tulips and your pinks red? | Est-ce que vos tulipes et vos œillets sont rouges? |
| 11. My tulips are not blue, all my pinks are red and all my roses are white | Mes tulipes ne sont pas bleues, tous mes œillets sont rouges et toutes mes roses sont blanches |
| 12. Mary, do you want a white rose? | Marie! voulez-vous une rose blanche? |
| 13. Yes, my friend, your white roses are very beautiful | Oui, mon ami, vos roses blanches sont très belles |
| 14. Do you wish to give your flowers to our aunts or to their friends? | Voulez-vous donner vos fleurs à nos tantes ou à leurs amis? |
| 15. I want to give my flowers to my mother | Je veux donner mes fleurs à ma mère |
| 16. There are all my pinks and all my roses. Choose! | Voilà tous mes œillets et toutes mes roses. Choisissez! |
| 17. I choose one of your beautiful roses and one of your beautiful pinks. I have Peter's beautiful red flower here | Je choisis une de vos belles roses et un de vos beaux œillets. J'ai la belle fleur rouge de Pierre ici |

96. Conversation. 1. Where are your old friends? 2. Where are their children? 3. Do your sons play with my son? 4. Does their cousin play with my little boys? 5. Is

my cousin with her husband in the garden? 6. Have they all my pinks or all your roses? 7. Are there no beautiful flowers in your brother's garden? 8. Is there a beautiful white tulip in her garden? 9. Where are my sister's children? 10. Where do his sister's sons and daughters play?

97. **Theme.** No, my cousin John is not my uncle's son, he is my aunt's son. My cousin Mary is my uncle's daughter. My uncle Peter is not Mary's mother's husband; Mary and John are not brother and sister. My father's family is very large; all his relatives are here in our house; his brother and his brother's wife are here with all their children. All my cousins (*m.*) are not handsome (see § 76, note 1), but all my cousins (*f.*) are beautiful. Have you a large family also?

98. **Exercises.** A. Put the adjectives *our, my, your, his, their, her*, first singular, then plural, before the following:

cousin (*f.*) friend daughter son aunt uncle

B. Use the following words in sentences:

all relative with or father mother

10. DIXIÈME LEÇON [dizjem]

Review

I

99. 1. Finish your lessons! 2. Don't enter my house! 3. Have you her flower? 4. We have not his pen. 5. We enter their house. 6. They find our house. 7. Shut the door! 8. I shut the door. 9. Which garden do you seek? 10. We seek his garden. 11. Does she finish her work? 12. We do not finish our work. 13. Which books do you choose? 14. I choose your books. 15. Have you not

my pen? 16. I have your pencil. 17. Have you John's chair? 18. John's wife has my chair. 19. Give my daughter your rose! 20. We give our roses to your sons. 21. Has her husband a brother? 22. I have a sister. 23. Has she not his pen? 24. We have no pencil. 25. They have your copy-books. 26. Give our books to the boys! 27. We have not his pens. 28. Have you no flowers? 29. They have her flowers. 30. There is a rose! 31. There is a bell in my room. 32. Finish the work! 33. Do not finish your work! 34. They have a beautiful house. 35. His mother and her sisters are looking for our aunt.

II

100. 1. Choose one of our beautiful flowers! 2. Which rose does John's brother wish? 3. There is an old chair in her kitchen or in her living-room. 4. His good old aunt is finishing our work. 5. There are my blue flowers; there is your beautiful little pink! 6. Which French books have your friends? 7. Have you not my sister's pencils? 8. Does her father choose the house which I wish? 9. Mary's relatives do not finish the books which are not English. 10. Finish the lesson which you have! 11. Do not give my good pens to your sisters! 12. I am giving their old copy-books to my pupils. 13. His uncles are finishing their work. 14. Is the good old school-master her uncle or her father? 15. Is there a dining-room in front of their kitchen? 16. Do you close the door of your house? 17. Where are our children? 18. There are your sons with my daughters! 19. There is a good pen on his mother's table. 20. In which room of her house has she her books? 21. Ring, or look for my maid! 22. There is a cook in the kitchen of their house. 23. In what house? 24. There's the house! 25. Enter the dining-room!

11. ONZIÈME LEÇON [ɔ̃zjɛm]

LA FAMILLE

I

101. Present Indicative of Third Conjugation (verbs ending in **-re** in the infinitive): **vendre**¹ [vɑ̃dʁ], *to sell*.

je vend s [vã], I sell
 (tu vend s [vã], thou sellest)
 il vend² [vã], he sells
 nous vend ons [vãdɔ̃], we sell
 vous vend ez [vãde], you sell
 ils vend ent [vãd], they sell

102. Interrogative Pronoun (*Persons*) = **qui?** *who? whom?*

Qui est là? *Who is there?*

Qui cherchez-vous? *Whom are you looking for?*

À qui parlez-vous? *To whom are you speaking?*

103.

VOCABULARY

le bâtiment [batimã], building

bâtir [batir], to build

le chapeau (*pl. chapeaux*) [ʃapo],
 hat

descendre [desãdʁ], to go down

deux [dø], two

entendre [ãtãdʁ], to hear

frapper [frape], to knock, strike

mettre [metʁ], to put, put on

il met [me], he puts (*irregular*)

rencontrer [rãkɔ̃tre], to meet

la rue [ry], street

104.

DRILL

1. Who goes down? I go **Qui descend? je descends**
 down

2. Do you hear? we hear **Entendez-vous? nous entendons**

3. Do they put? you put **Mettent-ils? vous mettez**

¹ Regular verbs ending in **-re** are conjugated like **vendre**.

² If the consonant preceding the ending **-re** of the infinite of verbs of the third conjugation is not **d** or **t**, a **t** (which does not affect the pronunciation) is added in the third person singular: **rompre** [rɔ̃:pr], *to break*; **il rompt** [rɔ̃], *he breaks*.

4. Who sells? they sell	Qui vend? ils vendent
5. Whom do you meet?	Qui rencontrez-vous?
6. I don't hear; she hears	Je n'entends pas; elle entend
7. He does not build; we build	Il ne bâtit pas; nous bâtissons
8. Go down! don't go down!	Descendez! ne descendez pas!
9. They put; we put	Ils mettent; nous mettons
10. She goes down; she builds	Elle descend; elle bâtit
11. To whom do you speak?	À qui parlez-vous?
12. Whom are you looking for?	Qui cherchez-vous?
13. There is the boy whom they meet!	Voilà le garçon qu'ils rencontrent
14. Who meets his friends?	Qui rencontre ses amis?
15. To whom does he sell his building?	À qui vend-il [vā til] son bâtiment?
16. To the friends who build	Aux amis qui bâtissent
17. We go up; you go down	Nous montons; vous descendez
18. Choose a good hat!	Choisissez un bon chapeau!
19. The hats we choose are beautiful	Les chapeaux que nous choisissons sont beaux
20. What books does he sell?	Quels livres est-ce qu'il vend?

105. Reading. Le père entend la petite fille qui frappe à la porte de sa chambre. Elle rencontre son père. Son père et elle saisissent leurs chapeaux. Ils mettent leurs chapeaux. Ils descendent l'escalier. Ils entrent dans le beau jardin. Ils choisissent toutes les belles fleurs qu'ils rencontrent dans l'herbe verte. Ils montent l'escalier. Ils ferment la porte. La mère de la petite fille n'est pas dans la maison, mais son frère est là. Elle rencontre sa sœur aussi. Le frère et la sœur descendent l'escalier avec leur père. Ils sont dans la rue. La rue est belle. Il y a un beau bâtiment là. Le beau bâtiment est une école. Les enfants bâtissent une belle maison dans leur jardin. Le garçon monte en haut chercher un ami. Il descend avec son ami et la sœur de son ami. Voilà deux garçons et deux filles! Ils jouent. La bonne cherche les enfants. Elle ne peut pas trouver Pierre et Marie qu'elle entend, mais qui ne sont pas dans le jardin. Où sont-ils?

Ils sont dans la rue. N'entendez-vous pas Pierre qui parle à Marie? Voilà le beau bâtiment qu'ils cherchent! La vieille tante d'un des enfants vend les fleurs qui sont devant la
 20 porte du beau bâtiment.

106. Résumé. Père entend; rencontre; chapeaux; mettent; escalier; jardin; fleurs; montent; mère, frère; descendent; rue; bâtiment; enfants, maison; monte; descend; jouent; bonne; Pierre, Marie; bâtiment; tante.

107. Oral Drill. 1. He hears. 2. We hear. 3. You don't meet. 4. Go down! 5. Don't build! 6. Choose! 7. Don't go down! 8. Which boys do you meet? 9. What lesson do you choose? 10. Do not build a house! 11. She sells the pens. 12. He meets a friend. 13. Are you building a large house? 14. I am building a little house. 15. Which house? 16. The little building which is in her garden. 17. The buildings which they sell. 18. To whom do you sell the hats? 19. Whom do you choose?

II

108.**DIALOGUE**

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Whom do you hear? Who is knocking at my door? | Qui entendez-vous? Qui frappe à ma porte? |
| 2. Your friend Peter | Votre ami Pierre |
| 3. Whom are you looking for? | Qui cherchez-vous? |
| 4. I am looking for my sister and my brother | Je cherche ma sœur et mon frère |
| 5. With whom are they? | Avec qui sont-ils? |
| 6. They are with my uncle and my aunt | Ils sont avec mon oncle et ma tante |
| 7. Put on your hats, go down into the street and meet your relatives. I am going down with you | Mettez vos chapeaux, descendez dans la rue et rencontrez vos parents! Je descends avec vous |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 8. There is a fine building!
Who is selling the flowers
which are there? | Voilà un beau bâtiment! Qui
vend les fleurs qui sont là? |
| 9. I am selling the flowers.
Which flowers do you
choose? | Je vends les fleurs. Quelles
fleurs choisissez-vous? |
| 10. Do you wish to sell all the
roses which are on the
bench? | Est-ce que vous voulez vendre
toutes les roses qui sont sur le
banc? |
| 11. I wish to sell all the white
roses, but I do not sell the
white pinks. Choose! | Je veux vendre toutes les roses
blanches, mais je ne vends pas
les œillets blancs. Choisissez! |
| 12. Good! I choose the white
roses | Bon! Je choisis les roses blanches |
| 13. The flowers which you
choose, my friend, are
very beautiful. There
are your white roses! | Les fleurs que vous choisissez,
mon ami, sont très belles.
Voilà vos roses blanches! |
| 14. There is a flower there
which I wish to have | Il y a une fleur là que je veux
avoir |
| 15. I do not hear. Which flower
do you wish to have? | Je n'entends pas. Quelle fleur
voulez-vous avoir? |
| 16. I wish to have the beautiful
flower which is there in
front of the window. Do
you hear? | Je veux avoir la belle fleur qui est
là devant la fenêtre. Entendez-
vous? |
| 17. I hear. There are all your
flowers, my child! | J'entends. Voilà toutes vos
fleurs, mon enfant! |

109. Conversation. 1. Whom do you hear at my door?
2. To whom do you sell the hats? 3. Do you go up or do
you go down? 4. Where is the little boy's family? 5. With
whom does his sister go down the stairs? 6. Who meets
the little girls? 7. Do her brothers build and sell the houses?
8. Who builds and sells the beautiful buildings in your
garden? 9. Do the children hear the boys who play in the
street? 10. To whom do they sell the two beautiful build-
ings?

110. Theme. ¹Who sells the ink to the girls? ²My daughters sell the black ink to the girls. ³To whom do you sell your pencils? ⁴I sell my pencils to the children. ⁵Whom is your aunt looking for? ⁶She is looking for her son who is in the garden. ⁷Who meets your cousin Mary at the school? ⁸My brother. ⁹Who is going down the stairs into the street? ¹⁰My sisters. ¹¹What work are they finishing? ¹²They are finishing the work which my husband gives. ¹³Have you no work for your sisters? ¹⁴There are your sons! ¹⁵Can't you find your hats? ¹⁶Where do they put their hats?

111. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

I go down the stairs.

Do I hear the bell?

I do not sell the hats.

Do I not choose the old hat?

B. Drill on present indicative of **vendre, descendre, entendre**: § 480, A, first positive, then negative, then interrogative.

C. Complete the following: 'who . . .?' 'whom . . .?' 'of whom . . .?' A second student answers the questions.

12. DOUZIÈME LEÇON [duzjem]

LA RUE

I

112. Past Participle (endings of the three conjugations):

I. donn é [dɔne], *given*

II. fin i [fini], *finished*

III. vend u [vādy], *sold*

113. Past Indefinite: *I have given, I have finished, etc.*, are expressed in French as in English:

j'ai donné, I have given

(tu as fini, thou hast finished)

je n'ai pas donné

(tu n'as pas fini)

il a vendu, he has sold
 nous avons bâti, we have built
 vous avez entendu, you have heard
 ils ont rencontré, they have met

il n'a pas vendu
 nous n'avons pas bâti
 vous n'avez pas entendu
 ils n'ont pas rencontré

This is the most commonly used past tense in French and has a double function, corresponding not only to the English *I have given*, etc., but also to the English *I gave*, etc.¹

114.

VOCABULARY

le chemin [ʃəmɛ̃], road
 le coin [kwɛ̃], corner
 l'église [legliz] (*f.*), church
 entre [ɑ̃:tr], between
 le magasin [magazɛ̃], store
 maintenant [mɛ̃tnɑ̃], now
 marcher [marʃe], to walk
 le parc [park], park

perdre [perdr], to lose
 pour [pu:r], for
 le tramway [tramwe], street-car
 le trottoir [trotwa:r], sidewalk
 la ville [vil], city
 la voiture [vwaty:r], carriage, vehicle, wagon

115.

DRILL

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| 1. I have given; we have heard | J'ai donné; nous avons entendu |
| 2. They have finished; he sold | Ils ont fini; il a vendu |
| 3. She built; you sought | Elle a bâti; vous avez cherché |
| 4. I taught; she seized | J'ai enseigné; elle a saisi |
| 5. We lost; he sang | Nous avons perdu; il a chanté |
| 6. You chose | Vous avez choisi |
| 7. I pronounced; you lost | J'ai prononcé; vous avez perdu |
| 8. She walked; we heard | Elle a marché; nous avons entendu |
| 9. They (<i>f.</i>) met; he knocked | Elles ont rencontré; il a frappé |
| 10. With whom did you build the store? | Avec qui avez-vous bâti le magasin? |
| 11. Who spoke French? | Qui a parlé français? |
| 12. Whom did you hear? | Qui avez-vous entendu? |
| 13. To whom did you sell the books? | À qui avez-vous vendu les livres? |

¹ The past participle agrees with the direct object *when the object precedes* (see § 362):

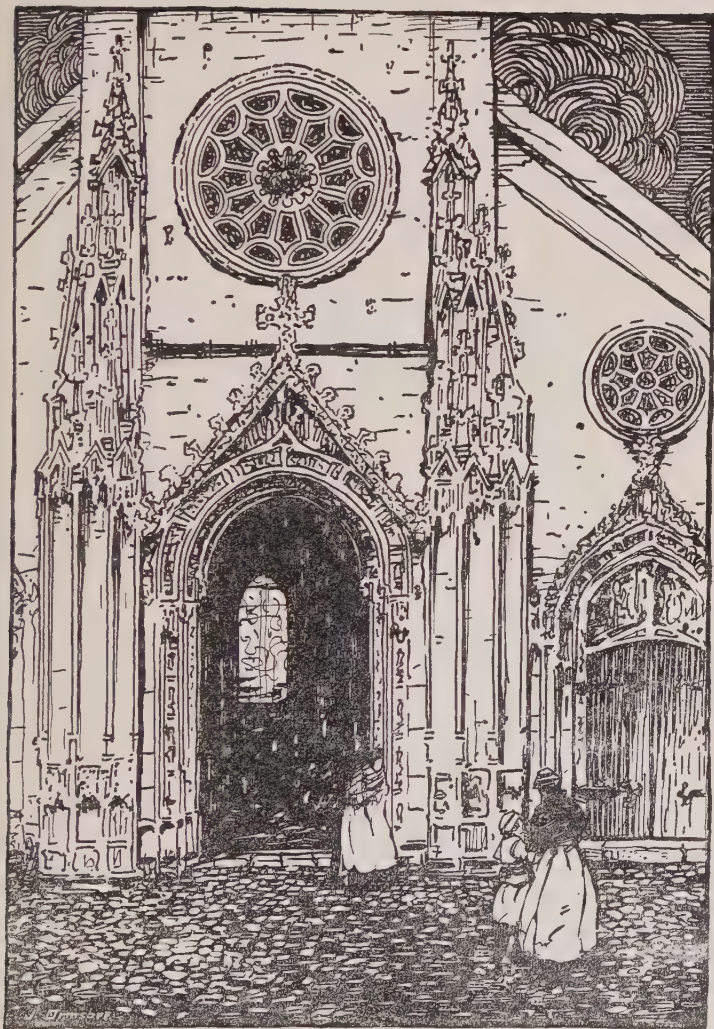
Quelle leçon avez-vous étudiée? What lesson have you studied?

But: J'ai étudié la leçon. I have studied the lesson.

14. I sold the books to the boys J'ai vendu les livres aux garçons
15. Did the children meet their friends? Est-ce que les enfants ont rencontré leurs amis?

116. Reading. J'ai cherché mes enfants en haut et en bas. J'ai rencontré ma petite fille au coin de la rue devant l'église, mais je n'ai pas trouvé mon fils Pierre. Où est-il maintenant? N'a-t-il pas entendu la sonnette? A-t-il
5 monté l'escalier? N'a-t-il pas joué dans le jardin avec sa petite sœur Marie? Où a-t-il joué dans la rue ou dans le parc? A-t-il perdu son chemin? A-t-il marché sur le trottoir devant les magasins ou dans la rue entre les tramways et les voitures? La ville est très grande et Pierre est très
10 petit. Marie! Marie! cherchez votre petit frère! Il n'est pas dans le jardin. Il a descendu l'escalier; il a joué sur le trottoir; il a perdu son chemin. — Non, ma mère, Pierre n'est pas dans la rue; il a descendu l'escalier et il a joué sur le trottoir devant les tramways, mais il n'a pas perdu son
15 chemin. Notre oncle, qui a bâti le grand magasin au coin de la rue devant l'église, a rencontré mon petit frère. Ils ont monté l'escalier. Mon bon oncle est dans le jardin; il n'a pas entendu la sonnette. Il a choisi une belle rose blanche pour sa femme et un œillet blanc qu'il a donné à ma cousine
20 et qu'elle a perdu. Elle perd toutes ses fleurs. Pierre et sa cousine sont maintenant dans la salle à manger. Ils ont déjeuné avec la cuisinière et la bonne. Nous n'avons pas fini nos leçons. Pierre et elle ont joué dans le jardin. Ils ont marché sur les tulipes. Ils ont chanté. Ils ont parlé
25 français aussi. Notre oncle est maître d'école et il a enseigné le français à toute sa famille. J'ai choisi un œillet blanc, très beau, que j'ai donné à ma cousine et que Pierre a saisi. Marie a frappé Pierre, et Pierre a prononcé un mot que je ne peux pas et ne veux pas prononcer.

117. Résumé. Cherché; rencontré; où?; entendu; monté; joué; chemin; trottoir; ville; cherchez!; escalier; perdu;



J'ai rencontré ma petite fille au coin de la rue devant l'église

non; oncle; jardin; rose; œillet; salle à manger; cuisinière; Pierre et elle; tulipes; chanté; français; maître d'école; œillet; saisi; prononcé.

118. Oral Drill. 1. We have heard. 2. We heard. 3. Have you walked? 4. He lost. 5. They met. 6. Did he not teach? 7. You built. 8. We seized. 9. Has she taught? 10. Did you sing? 11. We sang. 12. I have not lost. 13. I lost. 14. Did you knock? 15. Did they not finish? 16. We knocked. 17. Have you finished? 18. Who spoke? 19. You heard. 20. Have you chosen? 21. Did you pronounce the French words? 22. I did not pronounce the English words. 23. Pronounce the German sentences. 24. We have not spoken German. 25. Have you spoken the French language?

II

119.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Where have you looked for your children? | Où avez-vous cherché vos enfants? |
| 2. I have looked for my son and my daughter in your garden | J'ai cherché mon fils et ma fille dans votre jardin |
| 3. Did you not meet your son Peter? | N'avez-vous pas rencontré votre fils Pierre? |
| 4. No, I found my daughter, but I did not meet my son | Non, j'ai trouvé ma fille, mais je n'ai pas rencontré mon fils |
| 5. Look in the street at the corner in front of the old church. He played there with his cousin Mary | Cherchez dans la rue au coin devant la vieille église. Il a joué là avec sa cousine Marie |
| 6. There is the cook who has looked for Peter also. Have you met my son? | Voilà la cuisinière, qui a cherché Pierre aussi. Avez-vous rencontré mon fils? |
| 7. I found your son at the corner of the street. He is with his uncle and his aunt. | J'ai trouvé votre fils au coin de la rue. Il est avec son oncle et sa tante. La bonne vieille tante |

The good old aunt met the little boy on the stairs of the church. She heard Peter and his sister who are playing in the street

a rencontré le petit garçon sur l'escalier de l'église. Elle a entendu Pierre et sa sœur qui jouent dans la rue

8. I heard the children also
9. Did they not meet the maid?
10. No, she lost her way. She looked for the children in the park

J'ai entendu les enfants aussi
N'ont-ils pas rencontré la bonne?
Non, elle a perdu son chemin. Elle a cherché les enfants dans le parc

120. Conversation. 1. Did not the mother meet her daughter? 2. Did the son meet his mother? 3. Did the boy hear the bell in the dining-room? 4. Did he play in the street between the carriages and the street-cars? 5. Did the children walk on the sidewalks in front of the stores? 6. Did they go down the stairs of the church? 7. Who built the large building at the street-corner? 8. With whom did the boy and girl dine? 9. Who taught French to the children? 10. Will you pronounce the word which the little boy pronounced?

121. Theme. Where did you look for the child's mother? I looked for the child's mother in the church, but I found his sister there. She did not meet her mother there. I met your two sons in front of the store. What language did they speak¹? I did not hear. They spoke French; the school-master taught (the) French to all my family. Did you choose French? No, they chose French. Who is the woman on the sidewalk in front of the church at the street-corner? She is our old cook's aunt; we met her son in the street-car. Has she lost her way? No, she is going into the church

122. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

I met my friends. I did not build the church.
Did I lose my way? Did I not walk on the sidewalk?

¹ See p. 71, footnote 1.

B. Drill on past indefinite of **rencontrer**, **bâtir**, **entendre**:
§ 480, A.

C. Use forms of the past indefinite with the following words in sentences:

road corner church between city for now

13. TREIZIÈME LEÇON [trezjem]

LE RESTAURANT [restorā]

I

123. *Some*, adjective (i.e. followed by a noun) = *of the*.
Some, object pronoun (i.e. used alone) = **en**, which is placed
immediately before the verb.¹

J'ai *des* pommes, I have some (i.e. of the) apples

J'ai *de la* viande, I have some meat

J'*en* ai, I have some

En avez-vous? Have you any?²

Il n'*en* a pas, He has none²

124. *Some* may be omitted in English, but must not be omitted in French:

J'ai du lait et de l'eau, I have milk and water

125.

VOCABULARY

apporter [apɔʁte], to bring

le beurre [bœʁ], butter

le café [kafɛ], coffee

la crème [krɛ:m], cream

l'eau [lo] (f.), water

le garçon [garsɔ̃], boy, waiter

¹ In the case of the past indefinite, the auxiliary (*have, has*) is considered the verb, and **en** goes before it; *il en a trouvé*, *he has found some*; *il n'en a pas trouvé*, *he has not found any, he has found none*.

² In questions *any* is substituted for *some* in English; in negative sentences *no* (see p. 50, note), *none* = *not any*. The French constructions are not affected. Observe that in negative sentences **ne** precedes **en**.

En a-t-il? Has he any (= some)?

Il n'en a pas. He has none (= not any).

le lait [lə], milk
 monsieur [møsjø], Mr., sir
 le pain [pɛ̃], bread
 la pomme de terre [pɔm də tɛ:r],
 potato [la terre, the earth]

la pomme [pɔm], apple
 le potage [pɔta:ʒ], soup
 la viande [vjã:d], meat
 le vin [vɛ̃], wine

126.

DRILL

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Some butter; some meat | Du beurre; de la viande |
| 2. Some coffee; have you any? | Du café; en avez-vous? |
| 3. Some apples; he has none | Des pommes; il n'en a pas |
| 4. Some milk; he sold some | Du lait; il en a vendu |
| 5. Some water; he brought none | De l'eau; il n'en a pas apporté |
| 6. Some cream; did he bring any? | De la crème; en a-t-il apporté? |
| 7. Some potatoes; some soup | Des pommes de terre; du potage |
| 8. Some paper; some ink | Du papier; de l'encre |
| 9. He brought meat and potatoes | Il a apporté de la viande et des pommes de terre |
| 10. Have you any? He has none | En avez-vous? Il n'en a pas |
| 11. Has the waiter brought any wine? | Est-ce que le garçon a apporté du vin? |
| 12. We gave none to the boys | Nous n'en avons pas donné aux garçons |
| 13. Did she give some water to your sister? | Est-ce qu'elle a donné de l'eau à votre sœur? |
| 14. Did they (f.) sell any? | Est-ce qu'elles en ont vendu? |
| 15. He sold apples and potatoes | Il a vendu des pommes et des pommes de terre |

127. Reading. Voilà mon fils qui monte l'escalier! Il y a deux de ses amis ici. Ils ont marché dans la rue, ils n'ont pas perdu leur chemin, ils ont cherché notre maison et ils ont trouvé la porte. Ils ont sonné. Maintenant ils sont dans le jardin. Il y a des fleurs et de l'herbe là. Ils ont dîné dans le jardin. La bonne a apporté du pain, de l'eau, du beurre, des pommes de terre, de la viande, du café, de la

crème. Elle n'a pas apporté de¹ vin. Elle a donné du café à mon fils et du lait à ma fille. Ma fille a donné le lait à
10 l'ami de son frère, et mon fils a donné le café à la sœur de son ami. Ma femme cherche les enfants, elle a descendu l'escalier, elle a trouvé les petits garçons et les petites filles dans le jardin. Elle a donné du potage à notre fils qui ne peut pas



Ils ont dîné dans le jardin

manger avec les grands enfants. Elle en a donné aux grands
15 enfants aussi, mais ils n'en ont pas mangé. Notre fils en a mangé; il veut en donner à l'ami de son frère, mais l'ami de son frère n'en veut pas. Ils ont entendu la sonnette. Ils ont monté l'escalier. Ils sont maintenant dans la chambre à coucher.

128. Résumé. Fils; ami; marché; chemin; maison; porte; sonné; jardin; fleurs, herbe; dîné; bonne; pain, eau,

¹ See p. 50, note.

beurre, pommes de terre, viande, café, crème; vin; fils, fille; donné; femme cherche; jardin; potage; grands enfants; notre fils, l'ami; sonnette.

129. Oral Drill. 1. Some wine; some ink; I have some. 2. Some meat; some pens; has he any? 3. Bring milk and cream! 4. Have you any? I have none. 5. Some soup; some potatoes. 6. Black coffee, white milk; they have none. 7. Water; has the boy any? He has some. 8. Blue ink; English words; difficult languages. 9. Has his wife any?; no, but their son has some. 10. He has none; have we any?; we have none. 11. She has no milk (*see p. 50, Note*).

II

130.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Waiter, bring some bread for my son! | Garçon, apportez du pain pour mon fils! |
| 2. Yes, sir, there is some bread and some butter! | Oui, monsieur, voilà du pain et du beurre! |
| 3. Now he wishes coffee and milk | Maintenant il veut du café et du lait |
| 4. Do you wish some coffee also, sir? | Voulez-vous du café, aussi, monsieur? |
| 5. No, I want some water | Non, je veux de l'eau |
| 6. What meat do you choose, sir? | Quelle viande choisissez-vous, monsieur? |
| 7. I do not want any. I want some soup; have you any? | Je n'en veux pas. Je veux du potage; est-ce que vous en avez? |
| 8. Yes, sir, we have some; it is very good | Oui, monsieur, nous en avons; il est très bon |
| 9. Is the meat good? | Est-ce que la viande est bonne? |
| 10. Yes, it is very good; do you wish some now after your soup? | Oui, elle est très bonne; en voulez-vous maintenant après votre potage? |
| 11. Yes, and bring some water for my son! | Oui, et apportez de l'eau pour mon fils! |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 12. (My) father, there is (my) uncle in front of the big red building! | Mon père, voilà mon oncle devant le grand bâtiment rouge! |
| 13. Waiter, some butter! . . . Doyouwantsomewater? | Garçon, du beurre! . . . Voulez-vous de l'eau? |
| 14. No, I want some milk and some bread; I have not eaten. Bring some potatoes and meat! | Non, je veux du lait et du pain; je n'ai pas mangé. Apportez des pommes de terre et de la viande! |

131. Conversation. 1. In what house did you meet your friend? 2. Whom did you find in the garden? 3. With whom did his son speak in the street? 4. Who brought water, bread and meat into the garden? 5. Did she bring coffee and cream also? 6. Did she bring wine? 7. Whom did your wife look for? 8. Did she give some milk and coffee to her children? 9. To whom did she give some? 10. Did she give any to her son and to her daughter?

132. Theme. I have no¹ wine; I want none. Waiter, bring some meat, some bread and some butter! Does your son wish soup also, sir? Yes, and have you any milk? No, we have none now. I can bring some coffee and cream. 5 Do you wish any? Yes. Have you apples? Yes, they are very good. Do you wish some? Yes, you can bring some; and bring some water, also; we haven't any. My son, who is the boy whom we met at the school? My friend Peter. Did Peter find some friends there? Yes, he found a boy and 10 his sisters. Did the girls dine at the school? Yes, they ate bread, but when they looked for butter, they did not find any.

133. Exercises. A. Conjugate 'I have' with the following words:

butter cream water potatoes.

B. Conjugate 'have I?' with the same words.

C. Conjugate 'I have brought some,' 'I have sold none.'

¹ See p. 50, note.

14. QUATORZIÈME LEÇON [katorzjem]

LA GARE

I

134. Present Indicative of *être* [èitr], *to be*:

je suis [ʒə syi], I am
(tu es [ty ɛ], thou art)
il est [il ɛ], he is

nous sommes [nu sòm], we are
vous êtes [vu zɛt], you are
ils sont [il sɔ̃], they are

135. Past Indefinite with *être*. The French do not say 'I have gone,' they say 'I am gone.' Other verbs so conjugated are:

aller [alɛ], to go
arriver [arivɛ], to arrive
descendre,¹ to descend
entrer, to enter
monter,¹ to go up
partir [partir], to depart, go away,
leave
sortir [sɔrtir], to go out
venir [vənir], to come

je suis allé,² I have gone = I went
(tu es arrivé, thou hast arrived)
il est descendu, he descended
elle est entrée, she entered
nous sommes montés, we went up
vous êtes parti (s),² you departed
ils sont sortis, they went out
elles sont venues, they came

¹ Verbs conjugated with *être* are intransitive (that is, they have no direct object). Some may be used also transitively (that is, with a direct object), as in the case of *descendre*, *monter*: *I descended* (intransitive), and *I descended the stairs* (transitive). In the second case they are conjugated with *avoir*:

Je suis descendu (monté), I went down (went up)

J'ai descendu (monté) l'escalier, I went down (went up) the stairs

² The past participle with *être* agrees with the subject like an adjective:

vous êtes parti: vous = a single person, masculine

vous êtes partie: vous = a single person, feminine

vous êtes partis: vous = more than one person, masculine or masculine and feminine

vous êtes parties: vous = more than one person, feminine

Similarly, the past participle will take the feminine form of *I* or *we* refer to females:

Je suis partie, I (a woman) departed

Nous sommes montées, we (women) went up

If there is no reason to the contrary, *je* and *nous*, in these lessons, will be understood to be masculine, and *vous* masculine singular.

NOTE 1. The past participle of verbs conjugated with *être* agrees with the subject; see p. 81, Note 2. This is usually merely a matter of spelling, not affecting the pronunciation. Page 71, note refers to verbs conjugated with *avoir*.

NOTE 2. All verbs to be conjugated with *être* will be followed in vocabularies by an asterisk, e.g., *venir*.*

136.

VOCABULARY

les bagages [bagaʒ], baggage	Paris [pari], Paris
le billet [biʒe], ticket	la place [plas], seat, fare
le buffet [byʃe], lunch-counter	Reims [rɛ:s], Rheims
le colis [kɔli], piece of baggage, package	la salle d'attente [sal datɑ̃t], waiting-room
le facteur [faktœr], porter	le train [trɛ̃], train
la gare [gar], station	la valise [valiz], valise
le guichet [giʃe], ticket-window	le wagon [vagɔ̃], car
la malle [mal], trunk	

137.

DRILL

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. I have given; I have de-
parted | J'ai donné; je suis parti |
| 2. Has he dined? she went | A-t-il diné? elle est allée |
| 3. Did you arrive? you lost | Êtes-vous arrivé? vous avez perdu |
| 4. They have found; have they
(<i>m.</i>) entered? | Ils ont trouvé; sont-ils entrés? |
| 5. We got down; we gave | Nous sommes descendus; nous
avons donné |
| 6. Did she sell? he went up | A-t-elle vendu? il est monté |
| 7. You came; you finished | Vous êtes venu; vous avez fini |
| 8. He sought; she got down | Il a cherché; elle est descendue |
| 9. Did we build? we departed | Avons-nous bâti? nous sommes
partis |
| 10. They came; they heard | Ils sont venus; ils ont entendu |
| 11. I did not lose; I have arrived | Je n'ai pas perdu; je suis arrivé |
| 12. We did not enter; we seized | Nous ne sommes pas entrés; nous
avons saisi |
| 13. She sang; she did not go
down | Elle a chanté; elle n'est pas des-
cendue |
| 14. You did not come; you have
spoken | Vous n'êtes pas venu; vous avez
parlé |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 15. They (<i>f.</i>) chose; she did not go | Elles ont choisi; elle n'est pas allée |
| 16. You went out; did we hear? | Vous êtes sorti; avons-nous entendu? |
| 17. He did not meet; they went up | Il n'a pas rencontré; ils sont montés |
| 18. Did he go? we did not seize | Est-il allé? nous n'avons pas saisi |
| 19. You did not knock; did you arrive? | Vous n'avez pas frappé; êtes-vous arrivé? |
| 20. Did you go out? I did not meet | Êtes-vous sorti? je n'ai pas rencontré |



Le facteur

138. Reading. Nous sommes arrivés à Paris. Nous allons à Reims. Nous sommes dans la gare. Nous voulons dîner au buffet. Il est devant la salle d'attente. Est-ce que 5 Pierre n'est pas venu avec sa sœur? Où sont-ils allés? Ah! la petite fille et son frère ne sont pas descendus du wagon. Descendez, mes enfants! Bon! Vous êtes descendus. Est-ce 10 que ma bonne vieille tante est descendue aussi? Ah, oui! elle est arrivée avec Pierre et ils sont entrés au buffet où ils ont dîné, et ils sont allés maintenant dans la salle 15 d'attente. Mais mon mari, où est-il allé? Est-ce qu'il n'est pas là devant le guichet? Il cherche des billets. Non, il est allé avec le facteur mettre nos valises et nos colis dans le wagon. 20 Il est monté, il est entré dans le wagon; le facteur a trouvé deux places — deux bonnes places — devant la fenêtre. Maintenant où sont nos colis? Voilà nos colis! Mon mari est

25 sorti du wagon. Il est descendu du train. Mais où sont nos malles, la valise de Pierre, les colis de ma tante? Ils ne sont pas arrivés à la gare. Mais nous pouvons manger maintenant. Voulez-vous manger ici au buffet? Nous sommes entrés. Nous avons dîné. Nous sommes sortis
30 maintenant. Mais nos bagages ne sont pas arrivés! Et où est notre train? Notre train est parti! — et nos colis, nos valises, dans le wagon, là devant la fenêtre? Partis aussi!

† 139. **Résumé.** Paris; Reims; gare; dîner; Pierre; où?; wagon; tante, Pierre; mari, billets; facteur; monté, places; colis; malles, valise, colis; manger; buffet; sortis; bagages; train.

140. **Oral Drill.** 1. We have gone. 2. They have dined. 3. You arrived. 4. He spoke. 5. They departed. 6. She went out. 7. I chose. 8. He came. 9. We got down. 10. We sought. 11. He did not find. 12. We entered. 13. Did he not sell? 14. Did they not get down? 15. They went up. 16. You did not give. 17. He did not eat. 18. Did you come? 19. You did not go up. 20. Did you lose? 21. She arrived at the station. 22. Her aunt entered the car. 23. Did she go to the ticket-window? 24. They sold all the tickets. 25. Have they left the waiting-room?

II

141.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Did you come from Paris? | Êtes-vous venus de Paris? |
| 2. We came from Rheims | Nous sommes venus de Reims |
| 3. Have you any baggage? | Est-ce que vous avez des bagages? |
| 4. Yes, I have some packages,
a valise and two trunks | Oui, j'ai des colis, une valise et
deux malles |
| 5. Didn't your brother come
with you? | Est-ce que votre frère n'est pas
venu avec vous? |
| 6. No, he went to the city | Non, il est allé à la ville |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 7. And your sister? Did she leave with your brother? | Et votre sœur? Est-elle partie avec votre frère? |
| 8. No, she came in the train, too | Non, elle est venue dans le train aussi |
| 9. Where is she? | Où est-elle? |
| 10. She entered the waiting-room or she went to the lunch-counter. No — she has gone to the ticket-window | Elle est entrée dans la salle d'attente ou elle est allée au buffet. Non — elle est allée au guichet |
| 11. Good! Do you wish to leave? | Bon! Voulez-vous partir? |
| 12. We can't leave. We are looking for a porter | Nous ne pouvons pas partir. Nous cherchons un facteur |
| 13. A porter! There is a porter in front of the ticket-window | Un facteur! Il y a un facteur devant le guichet |
| 14. No, he is gone. He has got into the car | Non, il est parti. Il est monté dans le wagon |
| 15. No, he has got down and he has gone into the waiting-room | Non, il est descendu, et il est allé à la salle d'attente |
| 16. Porter, will you get into the train to look for our baggage? | Facteur, voulez-vous monter dans le train chercher nos bagages? |
| 17. In what coach, sir? | Dans quel wagon, monsieur? |
| 18. There's the coach! My packages are in the corner, in front of the window | Voilà le wagon! Mes colis sont dans le coin, devant la fenêtre |
| 19. I got into the train, sir; I entered the coach; I looked in the corner, but I have not found your packages | Monsieur, je suis monté dans le train; je suis entré dans le wagon; j'ai cherché dans le coin, mais je n'ai pas trouvé vos colis |

142. Conversation. 1. Have you not come to the station? 2. Where did you dine? 3. Did the children come?

with my aunt? 4. Where did the brother and sister go? 5. Did the uncle enter the car? 6. Did he find a good seat? 7. Did he get out of the coach? 8. Did the porter get into the train with his valises and his packages? 9. Did his baggage arrive at the station? 10. Did the train leave?

143. **Theme.** I have come from Rheims. I have arrived at Paris. I went to the lunch-counter. I met my friend. We dined. We left. We met our friends. They went with us. We arrived at the ticket-window where we asked for tickets. "The train has left!" We found the porter. He went with my friends to look for their packages and their trunk. I found the stairs. I went down. I went out. On the sidewalk I met Peter. We departed. My friends are in the station. Paris is a beautiful city. Its parks are very beautiful.

144. **Exercises.** A. Conjugate:

I entered the house.	I departed.	I went out.
I went down.	I came.	I arrived.
I went up.	I went.	

B. Drill on present indicative of *être*: § 480, A.

C. Drill on past indefinite of *aller*, *partir*, *descendre*, *venir*: § 480, A.

D. Use the following words in sentences:

ticket	ticket-window	trunk	Rheims
station	seat	porter	Paris

15. QUINZIÈME LEÇON [kêzjem]

145.

Review

I

1. Who sells? 2. He sells. 3. We hear. 4. You hear.
 5. Who sold? 6. She sold. 7. You heard. 8. I heard.
 9. He arrived. 10. We got down. 11. They went. 12. I came.
 13. Has he come? 14. She came. 15. Did you go?
 16. We did not get down. 17. Don't go! 18. Who came?
 19. Some bread. 20. Have you any? 21. Some potatoes.
 22. Have you any? 23. Eat soup! 24. I have eaten some.
 25. They sold apples. 26. Who brought the potatoes?
 27. The porter has arrived. 28. Have you any ink?
 29. Who has some? 30. Who has some trunks? 31. Did they arrive with baggage? 32. Their packages arrived.)
 33. At what station? 34. Who looked for valises here?
 35. I arrived, and I looked for my valises and my trunks.
 36. Did you go to the waiting-room? 37. We went to the ticket-window.
 38. Who sells tickets? 39. They sell some.
 40. They have none. 41. There are none.

II

146. 1. Who sells milk? 2. We sell wine. 3. To whom do they sell coffee? 4. He sold apples. 5. Bring some cream! 6. Is there any cream? 7. He ate meat. 8. We ate soup. 9. Eat potatoes! 10. He brought bread. 11. The milk has arrived. 12. The waiter came. 13. Did he sell butter? 14. Did you bring water? 15. We went to the station. 16. Did you bring any baggage? 17. Did the porter find any packages? 18. Did you go to the ticket-window? 19. Whom did you look for? 20. We looked for friends. 21. Did your friends arrive? 22. They went out of the station. 23. Did you find any carriages at the door?)

(24. We did not look for any. 25. The porter brought our valises and our packages to the railway-coach. 26. We have none. 27. Did you bring some baggage? 28. I brought some. 29. We brought none. 30. With whom did you get down from the carriage? 31. I got down with my son, whom you met in the waiting-room. 32. We went to the ticket-window. 33. Did they sell tickets? 34. They sold some.

16. SEIZIÈME LEÇON [sezjɛm]

LA GARE

I

147. Future. To form the future, add to the *whole infinitive* the following endings¹:

-ai [e] ²	je donner ai [ʒə dɔnɔʁe]
-as [a]	(tu finir as [ty finira])
-a [a]	il vendr a ³ [il vɑ̃dra]
-ons [ɔ̃]	nous finir ons [nu finirɔ̃]
-ez [e]	vous vendr ez ³ [vu vɑ̃dre]
-ont [ɔ̃]	ils donner ont [il dɔnɔʁɔ̃]

I. *I shall give, etc.*

je donner ai
(tu donner as)
il donner a⁴
nous donner ons
vous donner ez
ils donner ont

II. *I shall finish, etc.*

je finir ai
(tu finir as)
il finir a⁴
nous finir ons
vous finir ez
ils finir ont

I shall sell, etc.

je vendr ai³
(tu vendr as)
il vendr a⁴
nous vendr ons
vous vendr ez
ils vendr ont

¹ Note that these are the endings of the present indicative of *avoir* (see § 64).

² Note that when -ai is a verb-ending it is pronounced [e]; elsewhere it is [ɛ]; see p. 8, § 19, 2.

³ Note that the final e of third conjugation verbs is dropped before the endings are added.

⁴ Interrogative third person singular: *donnera-t-il? finira-t-il? vendra-t-il?* Cf. *donne-t-il? a-t-il?* See p. 34, Note 2.

148. Interrogative Pronoun.¹ *Things* (cf. § 102).

Subject: **Qu'est-ce qui?** [kɛs ki], *what?*

Object: **Que?** [kə] *or* **Qu'est-ce que?** [kɛs kə], *what?*

Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table? What is on the table?

Que cherchez-vous?

Qu'est-ce que vous cherchez? } What are you looking for?

NOTE. The last two forms correspond to *que* followed by the alternate interrogative forms **cherchez-vous?** **est-ce que vous cherchez?** (See § 26, note 1.) When the verb is in the first person singular, or when the subject of the verb is a noun, use the longer form. (See § 27, and note 1.)

Qu'est-ce que je cherche? What am I looking for?

Qu'est-ce que Jean cherche? What is John looking for?

149.

VOCABULARY

aimer [ɛme], to like, love

l'amie [lami] (*f.*), friend

appeler² [aple], to call

l'argent [larʒɑ̃] (*m.*), money, silver

bientôt [bjɛ̃to], soon

la carte [kart], bill-of-fare

cinq [sɛ̃k³], five

le cocher [kɔʃe], coachman, cabby

demander [dəmɑ̃de], to ask, ask for

laisser⁴ [lɛse], leave

madame [madam], madam, Mrs.

merci [mersi], thanks

parce que [pars kə], because

peu [pø], little (*adverb*)

peut-être [pø tɛːtr], perhaps

porter [pɔrte], to carry

le restaurant [restɔrɑ̃], restaurant

le voyageur [vwajaʒœ:r], traveler

150.

DRILL

1. We shall like; they (*f.*) will carry **Nous aimerons; elles porteront**

2. He will finish; she will ask **Il finira; elle demandera**

3. I shall sell; we shall ring **Je vendrai; nous sonnerons**

4. She will depart; you will lose **Elle partira; vous perdrez**

¹ The interrogative adjective is **quel?** (see § 76).

² *Present*: j'appelle (tu appelles), il appelle; nous appelons, vous appelez, ils appellent. (Cf. **acheter**, § 160, Note.)

Future: j'appellerai, etc

³ Pronounce [sɛ̃] before a word beginning with a consonant: **cinq voyageurs**, [sɛ̃ vwajaʒœ:r]. (See § 234, Note.)

⁴ **partir** is intransitive: *to leave, go away*; **laisser** is transitive: *to leave behind, abandon*.

5. We shall descend; I shall dine	Nous descendrons; je dînerai
6. They will ask; he will seize	Ils demanderont; il saisira
7. I shall meet; they will depart	Je rencontrerai; ils partiront
8. We shall hear; I shall break-fast	Nous entendrons; je déjeunerai
9. She will pronounce; he will knock	Elle prononcera; il frappera
10. They (f.) will like; you will choose	Elles aimeront; vous choisirez
11. What is? who is?	Qu'est-ce qui est? qui est?
12. Whom do you call? what do you leave?	Qui appelez-vous? que laissez-vous?
13. To whom are you speaking?	À qui parlez-vous?
14. What is there? who is here?	Qu'est-ce qui est là? qui est ici?
15. What have you heard?	Qu'est-ce que vous avez entendu?
16. Whom have they met?	Qui est-ce qu'ils ont rencontré?
17. What has the traveler brought?	Qu'est-ce que le voyageur a apporté?
18. What did your friend sell?	Qu'est-ce que votre ami a vendu?
19. What book did your brother carry?	Quel livre est-ce que votre frère a porté?
20. What did your sister choose?	Qu'est-ce que votre sœur a choisi?

151. **Reading.** Allez chercher le facteur. Appelez mon¹ amie qui est entrée dans la gare; elle cherchera le facteur avec vous. Nous n'appellerons pas votre amie. Le facteur est arrivé. Facteur, vous porterez mes cinq colis dans le wagon.
- 5 Voilà de l'argent! Maintenant je veux parler au cocher. Il est sorti de la gare. Il est parti, peut-être. Non, mais il est entré au buffet. Cocher, j'ai laissé un de mes colis dans la voiture. Voulez-vous aller chercher mon colis? Merci! Maintenant nous dînerons. Que voulez-vous manger? Garçon! Vous
- 10 demandez, madame? Apportez la carte Voilà la carte,

¹ Before feminine nouns or adjectives beginning with a vowel, the masculine forms **mon**, **ton**, **son** are used.

madame! Nous mangerons très peu parce que notre train partira bientôt. Nous descendrons à Chicago et nous trouverons un bon restaurant là. Voilà des voyageurs qui montent dans le train. Le cocher n'est pas venu. Il est allé chercher mon colis, mais il n'est pas arrivé! Le train partira, ¹⁵ il arrivera à Chicago, mon mari me cherchera à la gare, je n'arriverai pas, il ne trouvera pas sa femme! Voilà le cocher! Le train n'est pas parti. Merci, cocher! Nous arriverons



Voilà la carte, madame!

bientôt à Chicago. Nous rencontrerons mon mari. Nous ne laisserons pas nos cinq colis dans le wagon. Le cocher mettra ²⁰ notre valise dans la voiture, mais le facteur portera notre malle à la salle des bagages. Nous trouverons tous nos amis à la gare. Nous partirons de Chicago bientôt et nous descendrons du train à Buffalo où il y a un très bon ami de mon mari.

152. Résumé. Facteur; amie; facteur; cinq colis; cocher; voiture; chercher; manger; carte; peu; Chicago; voyageurs; cocher!; mari; Chicago, mari; valise; malle; amis; Buffalo.

153. Oral Drill. 1. They will descend; he will break-fast. 2. We shall depart; will they carry? 3. She will sell; I shall ask. 4. We shall go out; will she give? 5. You will sell; shall we lose? 6. I shall ring; they (*f.*) will like. 7. He will seize; shall I meet? 8. They (*m.*) will leave; you will hear. 9. We shall choose; will she hear? 10. They (*f.*) will bring; you will play. 11. Who is there? 12. Whom is she looking for? 13. What is in the church? 14. What will the girl choose? 15. To whom will they speak? 16. What sentences will the pupil pronounce? 17. What is here? 18. Who speaks of the tickets? 19. Whom do we call? 20. What did the porter bring?

II

154.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Peter, has your aunt arrived? | Pierre, est-ce que votre tante est arrivée? |
| 2. I have not gone up to the waiting-room; she went there, perhaps | Je ne suis pas monté à la salle d'attente; elle est allée là, peut-être |
| 3. Do you want to go to break-fast now? Have you any money? | Voulez-vous aller déjeuner maintenant? Avez-vous de l'argent? |
| 4. Can we not find my aunt? She will not go out of the station. I do not like to leave my aunt here. She is old. | Ne pouvons-nous pas trouver ma tante? Elle ne sortira pas de la gare. Je n'aime pas laisser ma tante ici. Elle est vieille |
| 5. We shall go up to the waiting-room | Nous monterons à la salle d'attente |
| 6. There is my aunt! Now we can go and dine | Voilà ma tante! Maintenant nous pouvons aller dîner |
| 7. What are you looking for? | Que cherchez-vous? |
| 8. I am looking for a good restaurant | Je cherche un bon restaurant |

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>9. Isn't there a good restaurant in front of the station?</p> <p>10. No, there isn't any there</p> <p>11. What are they looking for, the five travelers who entered the store at the corner where the old lady sells the beautiful flowers?</p> <p>12. They have found a restaurant, perhaps. Ask!</p> <p>13. Have you found a restaurant?</p> <p>14. We haven't looked for any; we have breakfasted at the lunch-counter, but we have eaten very little. The restaurants here are not good</p> | <p>Est-ce qu'il n'y a pas un bon restaurant devant la gare?</p> <p>Non, il n'y en a pas là¹</p> <p>Qu'est-ce qu'ils cherchent, les cinq voyageurs qui sont entrés dans le magasin au coin où la vieille femme vend les belles fleurs?</p> <p>Ils ont trouvé un restaurant, peut-être. Demandez!</p> <p>Avez-vous trouvé un restaurant?</p> <p>Nous n'en avons pas cherché; nous avons déjeuné au buffet, mais nous avons très peu mangé. Les restaurants ici ne sont pas bons</p> |
|--|--|

155. Conversation. 1. Whom did you seek? 2. Who arrived? 3. What language will he speak? 4. What will the traveler carry? 5. To whom do you wish to speak? 6. What is in the carriage? 7. What can you eat? 8. Whom will you meet at Chicago? 9. What will the cabby find in the restaurant? 10. What is on the benches in the station?

156. Theme. 'Whom will you meet at the station? I shall find my friends there, perhaps.' Bring the bill-of-fare, waiter; 'I shall eat very little because I shall leave soon. What did the porter leave in the car?' Ask! 'I do not speak French. He speaks English, — but very little. (With whom did you talk in front of the restaurant? What is in your valise? Where is your husband? Who is at the ticket-

¹ See § 123. Learn:

il y en a, there is (are) some

il n'y en a pas, there is (are) none

window? There is your husband! What package did you leave in the carriage? What is the cabby bringing? The waiter will bring the bill-of-fare soon, perhaps.

157. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

I shall build a house. I shall leave my packages.
I shall lose my trunk.

B. Drill on future of **demander, bâtir, entendre**: § 480, A.

C. Use *what?* first as subject, then as object, in as many sentences as possible. Other students answer the questions.

17. DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON [dis setjem]

LE MAGASIN

I

158. Adverbs of Quantity:

beaucoup [boku],	$\begin{cases} \text{much;} \\ \text{many;} \end{cases}$	beaucoup de viande , much meat
peu [pø],	$\begin{cases} \text{little;} \\ \text{few;} \end{cases}$	beaucoup d'amis , many friends
assez [ase],	enough;	peu de lait , little milk
trop [tro],	$\begin{cases} \text{too;} \\ \text{too much;} \\ \text{too many;} \end{cases}$	peu de voyageurs , few travelers
plus [ply],	more;	assez de billets , enough tickets
moins [mwē],	$\begin{cases} \text{less;} \\ \text{fewer;} \end{cases}$	trop blanc , too white
combien [kōbjē],	$\begin{cases} \text{how much;} \\ \text{how many;} \end{cases}$	trop de vin , too much wine
tant [tā],	$\begin{cases} \text{so much;} \\ \text{so many;} \end{cases}$	trop d'histoires , too many stories
		plus de colis , more packages
		moins d'encre , less ink
		moins de chapeaux , fewer hats
		combien de crème , how much cream
		combien de mots , how many words
		tant de beurre , so much butter
		tant de malles , so many trunks

159. **En** = *of it, of them* as well as *some, any* (see § 123). As in the case of *some* (see § 124), **en** must not be omitted in

French even though *of it* or *of them* is omitted in English. Note this particularly when numbers are used:

Combien en avez-vous? How many (of them) have you?

J'en ai deux, I have two (of them)

Je n'en ai pas beaucoup, I haven't much *or* many

160.

VOCABULARY

acheter¹ [aʃte], to buy

le bas [ba], stocking

le centime [sātim], centime ($\frac{1}{100}$ of a cent)

la chose [ʃo:z], thing

cinquante [sēkɑ̃:t], fifty

le coton [kɔtɔ̃], cotton

désirer [dezire], to desire

l'employé [lɑ̃plwaje] (*m.*), clerk, employeee

le franc [frɑ̃], franc (20 cents)

le prix [pri], price

que [kə], than, as

répondre [repɔ̃:dr], to reply

la robe [rɔb], dress

la soie [swa], silk

un, une [œ, yn], one

161.

DRILL

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Much money; little money | Beaucoup d'argent; peu d'argent |
| 2. Many things; too many dresses | Beaucoup de choses; trop de robes |
| 3. Too much bread; few apples | Trop de pain; peu de pommes |
| 4. Enough butter; so much wine | Assez de beurre; tant de vin |
| 5. How many pens; enough stores | Combien de plumes; assez de magasins |
| 6. Enough meat; how much milk | Assez de viande; combien de lait |
| 7. Less money; fewer apples | Moins d'argent; moins de pommes |
| 8. So many dresses; more stores | Tant de robes; plus de magasins |
| 9. Much silk; more stockings | Beaucoup de soie; plus de bas |
| 10. Too many travelers; few employees | Trop de voyageurs; peu d'employés |
| 11. A little money; fewer centimes | Un peu d'argent; moins de centimes |

¹ *Present*: j'achète, (tu achètes), il achète; nous achetons, vous achetez, ils achètent.

Future: j'achèterai, etc. (Cf. appeler, § 149, note 2.)

- | | |
|---|------------------------------------|
| 12. I have money; have you any? | J'ai de l'argent; en avez-vous? |
| 13. He talks of money; do you talk of it? | Il parle d'argent; en parlez-vous? |
| 14. We talk of it; don't talk of it! | Nous en parlons; n'en parlez pas! |
| 15. How much money do you ask? | Combien d'argent demandez-vous? |
| 16. What will you carry? | Qu'est-ce que vous porterez? |
| 17. What price will he ask? | Quel prix demandera-t-il? |
| 18. What will they answer? | Qu'est-ce qu'ils répondront? |
| 19. Whom will you hear? | Qui entendrez-vous? |
| 20. What is in the store? | Qu'est-ce qui est dans le magasin? |

162. Reading. Une femme est entrée dans beaucoup de magasins de la rue Royale [rwajal]. Tous les magasins de la rue Royale sont très beaux et il y en a tant! Il y a moins de magasins dans la rue à Paris où vous avez acheté
 5 votre belle robe de soie. La femme n'a pas tant d'argent que vous; elle en a beaucoup moins. Son mari est l'employé qui vend des billets au guichet à la gare. Il vend beaucoup de billets, mais il a très peu d'argent. Sa femme est entrée dans un des très beaux magasins de la rue. L'employé a
 10 demandé: «Que désirez-vous, madame?» Elle a répondu: «Je désire beaucoup de choses, mais j'ai très peu d'argent.» Il a demandé: «Voulez-vous acheter une robe?» Elle a répondu: «Je n'ai pas assez d'argent pour acheter une robe. Je veux acheter des bas. Est-ce que vous vendez des bas
 15 ici?» Un employé est allé chercher des bas pour la femme. Le prix est deux francs cinquante. Elle n'en a pas acheté. L'employé ne vendra pas beaucoup de bas à la femme parce qu'elle ne donnera pas tant d'argent pour les choses qu'elle désire. Cinq francs n'est pas trop pour des bas de soie,
 20 mais deux francs cinquante est certainement assez pour des bas de coton. Elle ne veut pas en acheter parce qu'elle a trop peu d'argent. Son mari n'en donnera pas à sa femme;

il ne peut pas en donner parce qu'il n'en a pas. L'employé a demandé: «Combien d'argent avez-vous?» Elle n'a pas répondu. Un employé qui demande «Combien d'argent 25 avez-vous?» n'est pas un bon employé.

163. Résumé. Femme; magasins, rue Royale; rue à Paris; argent; mari; entrée; employé; répondu; robe; bas; chercher; pas acheté; ne vendra pas; cinq francs; ne veut pas; mari; employé, combien.

164. Oral Drill. 1. Too much butter. 2. Enough bread. 3. More wine. 4. Less money. 5. Fewer potatoes. 6. So much meat. 7. How much milk? 8. Too many apples. 9. How many things? 10. Much money. 11. Little meat. 12. Few travelers. 13. A little wine. 14. How many pencils? 15. Too much silk. 16. More apples. 17. Enough bread. 18. Many pens. 19. So many things. 20. A little cotton. 21. Many things. 22. Will you talk of it? 23. Will he talk of it? 24. Have you any? 25. I have some. 26. What will you ask? 27. What will they answer? 28. To whom shall we speak? 29. What is in the carriage? 30. Who will call the coachman? 31. Where will you leave so many packages? 32. I will call a cabby perhaps. 33. Have you any silk stockings? 34. We have some. 35. How many do you desire? 36. How many dresses have you? 37. You buy many things.

II

165.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Do you sell stockings here? | Vendez-vous des bas ici? |
| 2. Yes, madam, we do (we sell some). Do you want cotton or silk ones? | Oui, madame, nous en vendons.
En voulez-vous de coton ou de soie? |
| 3. I like (the) silk stockings, but I have very little money | J'aime les bas de soie, mais j'ai très peu d'argent |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 4. The clerk will get some cotton stockings | L'employé cherchera des bas de coton |
| 5. You haven't enough clerks in your store, sir | Vous n'avez pas assez d'employés dans votre magasin, monsieur |
| 6. We haven't too many! | Nous n'en avons pas trop! |
| 7. The store at the corner of the street has more than you | Le magasin au coin de la rue en a plus que vous |
| 8. How many has it? | Combien en a-t-il? |
| 9. It has fifty | Il en a cinquante |
| 10. We have fewer, but our clerks are very good | Nous en avons moins, mais nos employés sont très bons |
| 11. What is the price of the silk stockings? | Quel est le prix des bas de soie? |
| 12. We have some at five francs and at five francs fifty (centimes). I'll get some for you | Nous en avons à cinq francs et à cinq francs cinquante. J'en chercherai pour vous |
| 13. No, thank you, I do not want any | Non, merci, je n'en veux pas |
| 14. There are some cotton stockings! | Voilà des bas de coton! |
| 15. What is the price of them? | Quel en est le prix? |
| 16. Much less than for the silk stockings | Beaucoup moins que pour les bas de soie |
| 17. I did not ask for silk stockings, I want them of cotton | Je n'ai pas demandé des bas de soie, j'en veux de coton |
| 18. But, madam, here are cotton stockings! | Mais, madame, voilà des bas de coton! |
| 19. I do not like your cotton stockings, and the silk stockings are less good for the price than the cotton stockings | Je n'aime pas vos bas de coton, et les bas de soie sont moins bons pour le prix que les bas de coton |

166. Conversation. 1. What do the clerks in the stores ask? 2. What is in the store? 3. What do the women buy? 4. What price do the clerks ask? 5. Will the women give

much money? 6. Will the clerks sell cotton stockings perhaps for less money than silk stockings? 7. How many francs will the women give for silk stockings? 8. What will their husbands give for cotton stockings? 9. How much money have they given? 10. Will they give any to their wives?

167. **Theme.** 'I haven't much money, but I wish to buy many things. 2 How much have you? 3 I have very little; I have less than you. 4 There are boys who have too much money. 5 There are some who have too little money. 6 They will buy (§160, note 1) fewer things than the boys who have much money. 7 Go into the store and ask for the clerk. 8 You will find there all the things that you are looking for. 9 Are you one of the boys who have a great deal of (=much) money? 10 You can buy all the things that you desire, but there are some which are not good. 10

168. **Exercises.** A. Use all the adverbs of quantity you can with the following:

things	dresses	potatoes	soup
silk	coffee	cream	hats

B. Fill the following blanks:

Avez-vous du —?	Est-ce que j'ai de l'—?
A-t-il de la —?	Est-ce que nous avons des —?
A-t-elle de l'—?	Est-ce qu'ils ont du —?
Avons-nous des —?	

Other students answer the questions using **en**.

C. Dialogue: One student is the clerk in a store, another comes to buy.

D. Drill on *present, past indefinite, future* of **demander, bâtir, répondre**: § 480, B.

18. DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON [di zyitjem]

LA GARE

I

169. Conjunctive Pronouns, Direct Object:

me [mə], me	nous [nu], us
(te [tə], thee)	vous [vu], you
le [lə], him, it (<i>m.</i>)	les [le], them (<i>m.</i>)
la [la], her, it (<i>f.</i>)	les [le], them (<i>f.</i>)

170. These pronouns are placed *immediately before* the verb:

Il me cherche, He is looking for me
 Le trouvons-nous? Do we find him?
 Ils les saisissent, They seize them

171. If used with the past indefinite, or other compound tenses, conjunctive pronouns come before the auxiliary (*have, has, etc.*):

Ils vous ont cherché, They looked for you
 Nous l'avons trouvé, We found him
 Je les ai saisis, I seized them

172. If the verb is negative, pronouns come between **ne** and the verb:

Vous ne la cherchez pas, You do not look for her
 Elle ne me trouve pas, She does not find me
 Il ne les saisit pas, He does not seize them

173. Chez [ʒe] = { *at the house of, at the store of, etc.*
 to the house of, to the store of, etc.

Il est chez votre ami, He is at the house of your friend, at your friend's house, at your friend's

Nous allons chez le tailleur, We are going to the tailor's shop, store, house

174.

VOCABULARY

bon marché [bõ marʃe], cheap
(*invariable*)

cher [ʃer], dear (*invariable as adverb*)

commander [kõmãde], to order

le costume [kõstym], suit

gris [gri], gray

l'habit [labi] (*m.*), coat

la laine [len], wool

mardi [mardi], Tuesday

le pantalon [pãtalõ], trousers

le pardessus [pardesy], overcoat

porter [põrte], to carry (§ 149), to wear

si¹ [si], if

le tailleur [tajœr], tailor

toujours [tuʒur], always

le verre [ve:r], glass

175.

DRILL

1. I leave them; he leaves them

Je les laisse; il les laisse

2. She likes him; he likes her

Elle l'aime; il l'aime

3. We buy it; you buy it

Nous l'achetons; vous l'achetez

4. I carry him; he carries her

Je le porte; il la porte

5. We call you; you call us

Nous vous appelons; vous nous appelez

6. We carry them; they carry us

Nous les portons; ils nous portent

7. Do you bring it? I bring it

L'apportez-vous? je l'apporte

8. He asks for us; we ask for him

Il nous demande; nous le demandons

9. Do you call me? we call her

Est-ce que vous m'appellez? nous l'appelons

10. He asks for her; she asks for him

Il la demande; elle le demande

11. Do we call her? you call me

Est-ce que nous l'appelons? vous m'appellez

12. They like him; he likes them

Ils l'aiment; il les aime

13. He asks it; I ask for him

Il le demande; je le demande

14. You bring it; he carries them

Vous l'apportez; il les porte

15. She leaves them; we buy it

Elle les laisse; nous l'achetons

16. Are you seeking her?

Est-ce que vous la cherchez?

17. We do not find her

Nous ne la trouvons pas

¹ The i of si is elided before il and ils: s'il cherche, s'ils cherchent; see Introduction, § 56, note 2.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 18. You will not find her at my
uncle's house | <i>Vous ne la trouverez pas chez
mon oncle</i> |
| 19. At whose house did they
find you? | <i>Chez qui vous ont-ils trouvé?</i> |
| 20. At Peter's house | <i>Chez Pierre</i> |

176. Reading. Mon oncle Pierre arrivera à Paris mardi. Je l'aime beaucoup, mon bon oncle, et il m'aime beaucoup aussi. Voulez-vous aller le chercher à la gare? Vous le



Il commandera un grand verre d'eau

trouverez dans la salle d'attente ou peut-être au buffet.
 5 Il portera un pardessus de laine noire — il le porte toujours — un habit de coton gris, un pantalon de coton aussi, et des *bas* de coton blanc! Il porte toujours des bas, et il n'aime pas la soie. Il ne donne pas beaucoup d'argent pour ses costumes. Il les veut bon marché. Il ne les commande
 10 pas chez les grands tailleurs qui les vendent très cher, mais chez les tailleurs dans les petites rues qui les vendent très bon marché. Vous monterez dans le tramway; il y en a un dans la rue, là, au coin — m'entendez-vous? Vous descendrez

devant la gare, vous entrerez et vous chercherez mon oncle dans la salle d'attente. Il vous cherchera aussi et si vous ne ¹⁵ le trouvez pas, il vous trouvera. Si vous ne le trouvez pas dans la salle d'attente, vous le chercherez devant le guichet où l'employé vend des billets, ou au buffet. Il mange toujours au buffet. Qu'est-ce qu'il demandera au buffet: du pain, de la viande, des pommes de terre? Non, mon ami, ²⁰ il demandera le prix du pain, le prix de la viande et le prix des pommes de terre. Si tout est bon marché, il en commandera. S'il n'aime pas les prix, il commandera un grand verre d'eau. Mais, après tout, il est très bon, mon oncle; il m'aime beaucoup, et je l'aime beaucoup aussi. 25

177. Résumé. Pierre; aime; chercher; salle d'attente; pardessus, habit, pantalon, bas; soie; costumes; grands tailleurs; tramway, coin; descendrez; chercher; guichet; buffet; pain?; eau; bon.

178. Oral Drill. 1. He seeks her. 2. You find me. 3. We sought her.¹ 4. She found us.¹ 5. We bring it. 6. You brought it. 7. Do you seek her? 8. Will you bring it? 9. Will they look for me? 10. They are not looking for you. 11. We are calling her. 12. You are not calling us. 13. Will he carry them? 14. You do not bring them. 15. He asks for it. 16. We do not ask for them. 17. Do you seek her? 18. We have found her.¹ 19. Has she found them?¹ (20) They do not seek her. 21. Have you any? 22. I have none. 23. We are leaving them. 24. Are you calling me? 25. We have spoken of it. 26. He speaks of it. 27. Go to your tailor's. 28. He has a cotton coat. 29. I don't wish any. 30. He sells cotton suits. 31. If he has money, he gives it. 32. Your overcoat is gray; I like it. 33. There is a glass of water on the table; do you wish it?

¹ See p. 71, footnote 1.

II

179.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Will your uncle arrive Tuesday? | Est-ce que votre oncle arrivera mardi? |
| 2. Yes, my friend, he will arrive at Paris Tuesday | Oui, mon ami, il arrivera à Paris mardi |
| 3. Will you look for him at the station? | Le chercherez-vous à la gare? |
| 4. No, he will get down from the train; he will not look for me; he will go out of the station and will get into a street-car | Non, il descendra du train; il ne me cherchera pas; il sortira de la gare, et il montera dans un tramway |
| 5. But he will lose his way, your uncle! He will not find you | Mais il perdra son chemin, votre oncle! Il ne vous trouvera pas |
| 6. He will find me. He will get down from the street-car at the street-corner in front of the church. He will look for the house and he will find it | Il me trouvera. Il descendra du tramway au coin de la rue devant l'église. Il cherchera la maison et il la trouvera |
| 7. Will he carry his baggage? He always has a great deal | Portera-t-il ses bagages? Il en a toujours beaucoup |
| 8. Yes, he always has enough baggage, too much baggage: a trunk, a valise, and two or three packages; but the porter will carry them to the street-car | Oui, il a toujours assez de bagages, trop de bagages: une malle, une valise et deux ou trois colis; mais le facteur les portera au tramway |
| 9. But who will carry them from the street-car to the house? | Mais qui les portera du tramway à la maison? |
| 10. There are always many boys at the street-corner. | Il y a toujours beaucoup de garçons au coin de la rue. L'oncle |

Uncle will give his valise
and one of his packages
to a boy

donnera sa valise et un de ses
colis à un garçon

11. And the boy will carry them?

Et le garçon les portera?

12. He will carry them. (The)
little boys have not much
money. If my uncle gives
enough (of it), they will
carry the baggage

Il les portera. Les petits garçons
n'ont pas beaucoup d'argent.
Si mon oncle en donne assez,
ils porteront les bagages

13. Has your uncle a great deal
of money?

Est-ce que votre oncle a beaucoup
d'argent?

14. He has enough (of it). He
has more (of it) than we.
But he loves it too much.
He will not give much
(of it) to the boys. But,
50 centimes, is that not
enough?

Il en a assez. Il en a plus que
nous. Mais il l'aime trop. Il
n'en donnera pas beaucoup aux
garçons. Mais, cinquante cen-
times, n'est-ce pas assez?

180. Conversation. 1. Have you met my uncle and do you like him? 2. Can he not find you at the ticket-window? 3. He has a gray overcoat; will he wear it or will he not wear it? 4. There are some cotton stockings; will you not wear them? 5. How much money have you, and how much of it do you give for your suits? 6. I want to get into a street-car; are there any at the corner? 7. Have you bought a ticket or has my brother bought it? 8. They have bread and meat; will he ask for any? 9. He has a good overcoat; at what tailor's did he buy it? 10. Can he not find me in front of the ticket-window?

181. Theme. We sell overcoats; do you want any? I bought one of them, but I do not like it. There are some cotton stockings; do you want to buy them? I cannot buy them; I have no money. You have no money! To whom have you given it? I gave some to my brother who asked 5
for some. If I want any. I always ask for some. You have a

beautiful suit; at what tailor's did you order it? Those trousers of gray wool are very dear, but I like them. I bought a gray suit very cheap, but I did not wear it much. Your
 10 woolen suit is handsome; did you order it at your tailor's? But we have talked enough of suits and trousers — our uncle and our aunt are looking for us. My aunt will find me in the waiting-room. My uncle will find you in the railway-car or at the lunch-counter.

182. Exercises. A. Drill on *present, past indefinite, future* of **chercher, choisir, entendre**, with the pronoun objects 'him,' 'you,' 'them' (*m.*), 'us,' 'me,' 'them' (*f.*), 'her': § 480, B.

B. Students ask and answer questions, using the object pronouns in the answers.

19. DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON [diz nœvjɛm] LE MAGASIN

I

183. Conjunctive Pronouns (cf. §§ 169–172):

<i>Direct object</i>	<i>Indirect object</i>
1. me [mə], me	me [mə], to me
2. (te [tə], thee)	(te [tə], to thee)
3. le [lə], him, it (<i>m.</i>)	lui [lyi], to him
3. la [la], her, it (<i>f.</i>)	lui [lyi], to her
1. nous [nu], us	nous [nu], to us
2. vous [vu], you	vous [vu], to you
3. les [le], them	leur [lœr], to them

NOTE 1. Direct and indirect object pronouns are alike except in the third person.

NOTE 2. In English the preposition *to* before indirect objects of *persons* is omitted after certain verbs: Give him a book = give *to* him;

Sell him = sell to him. The indirect object pronoun is always used here in French. Of course, as in English, direct object pronouns are also used with these verbs: Give him *it* = give *it* to him; Sell him *it* = sell *it* to him.

Je le donne, I give it

Je lui donne, I give him, her (=to him, to her)

Il l'a montré, He showed it

Il lui a montré, He showed (to) him (or her)

Nous le dirons, We shall say it

Nous leur dirons, We shall say to them (tell them)

Elle lui a répondu, She answered him (or her)

NOTE 3. Demander and acheter take indirect objects of persons.

Je le demande, I ask it

Je demande à mon ami, I ask my friend

Je lui demande, I ask him

Nous l'achetons, We buy it

Nous lui achetons, We buy from him or for him

184.

VOCABULARY

coûter [kute], to cost

la cravate [kravat], necktie

la dentelle [dätel], lace

le dimanche [dimā:s], Sunday

dire [dir], to say, tell

encore [ākō:r], yet

le faux-col [fo kəl], collar

la modiste [mōdist], milliner

montrer [mōtre], to show

le mouchoir [muʃwa:r], handkerchief

pauvre [po:v:r], poor

le ruban [rybā], ribbon

tout de suite [tu də syit], immediately

le velours [vēlur], velvet

le vêtement [vetmā], garment
(*pl.*), clothes

vingt [vē], twenty

185.

DRILL

1. We buy it; we bought it

Nous l'achetons; nous l'avons
acheté

2. We shall tell him; I showed
her

Nous lui dirons; je lui ai montré

3. He does not answer me; will
they choose her?

Il ne me répond pas; la choisiront-
ils?

4. They will tell you; I find
her

Ils vous diront; je la trouve

- | | |
|--|--|
| 5. Will he carry me? I asked her | Est-ce qu'il me portera? je lui ai demandé |
| 6. You will tell them; I like her | Vous leur direz; je l'aime |
| 7. She showed your brother; we like him | Elle a montré à votre frère; nous l'aimons |
| 8. I shall answer them; they do not like them | Je leur répondrai; ils ne les aiment pas |
| 9. You will tell it; I look for her | Vous le direz; je la cherche |
| 10. I shall not tell your friend; she asked him | Je ne dirai pas à votre ami; elle lui a demandé |
| 11. They answer him; he shows us | Ils lui répondent; il nous montre |
| 12. He showed the boy; will she tell them? | Il a montré au garçon; est-ce qu'elle leur dira? |
| 13. Does she ask me? I shall show them | Est-ce qu'elle me demande? je leur montrerai |
| 14. We shall answer the teachers; we answer them | Nous répondrons aux maîtres; nous leur répondons |
| 15. I am not looking for her | Je ne la cherche pas |

186. Reading. Mon mari m'a demandé dimanche: «Ma chère Anne, voulez-vous aller à l'église?» Je lui ai répondu tout de suite: «Non, Pierre, je ne peux pas aller à l'église avec vous. Le chapeau de velours gris que la modiste m'a vendu n'est pas assez beau. J'ai commandé mardi un plus beau chapeau avec des rubans bleus et de la dentelle blanche, pour porter le dimanche. La modiste m'en a vendu un qui me coûte cinquante francs, mais elle ne l'a pas encore fini.» «Et le petit chapeau de soie bleue avec de la dentelle noire et des rubans de velours rouge, que je vous ai acheté, où est-il?» m'a demandé mon mari. Je lui ai répondu: «Une pauvre femme qui a perdu son mari, et qui a cinq petits enfants, est venue ici me demander du travail. Je n'en ai pas trouvé à lui donner, mais je lui ai donné une vieille robe, et comme elle a deux petites filles, je leur ai donné des bas, et le petit chapeau aussi.»

Pierre m'a demandé tout de suite: «Ne lui avez-vous pas donné des cravates et des faux-cols et des mouchoirs de soie?» Je lui ai répondu: «Oh, non, Pierre! Mais je lui ai donné pour ses petits garçons un pantalon de laine 20 noire très vieux et un habit très vieux aussi, votre habit bleu,



Mais je lui ai donné une
vieille robe

et un pardessus de laine grise.» — «Voulez-vous me dire une chose?» m'a demandé Pierre. «Où avez- 25 vous trouvé le vieux pantalon de laine noire, l'habit bleu, le pardessus gris?» — «Dans la chambre à coucher.» — «Bon!» m'a répondu 30 Pierre, «dans quelle chambre sont mon oncle et mon cousin?» — «Dans votre petite chambre en haut, Pierre.» — «Dans ma chambre! Les 35 pauvres vous ont demandé un habit et vous leur avez donné l'habit de mon oncle; ils vous ont demandé un pantalon et vous leur avez donné 40 son pantalon, un pardessus

et vous leur avez donné le pardessus de mon cousin! Ne voulez-vous pas leur donner maintenant leurs cravates, leurs faux-cols et leurs mouchoirs aussi?»

187. Résumé. Pierre demande; Anne répond; chapeau gris; plus beau chapeau; chapeau de soie; pauvre femme, travail; vêtements pour enfants; cravates, etc.; pantalon, habit, pardessus; vêtements de l'oncle et du cousin.

188. Oral Drill. 1. They show him; he showed us. 2. I shall not ask the milliner; she asks me. 3. Will they give

you?; you will give to them. 4. Did we answer them?; they did not answer us. 5. He asked for me; I asked for him. 6. She asked him; he asked her. 7. He sold it; he sold him. 8. Will he not show his friend?; he did not show him. 9. Will you not answer them?; they answered you. 10. They will give him; he gave to them. 11. Will she tell you?; you will tell her. 12. Did you give some?; I gave some. 13. We will speak to them. 14. They will speak to him. 15. She showed him the ribbon. 16. He shows her the handkerchiefs. 17. The milliner gives her the hat. 18. The tailor gave him the collars and neckties.

II

189.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. At what price will you sell me an overcoat? | À quel prix me vendrez-vous un pardessus? |
| 2. I have many fine overcoats. I will sell you one of gray wool at 50 francs | J'ai beaucoup de beaux pardessus. Je vous en vendrai un de laine grise à cinquante francs |
| 3. I have not enough money to give you so much. I wish to buy a suit also | Je n'ai pas assez d'argent pour vous donner tant. Je veux acheter un costume aussi |
| 4. I can sell you a black cotton overcoat very cheap. There is one at 25 francs 50 centimes | Je peux vous vendre un pardessus de coton noir très bon marché. En voilà un à vingt-cinq francs cinquante centimes |
| 5. Will you show me some hats now? | Voulez-vous me montrer des chapeaux maintenant? |
| 6. There are some very fine hats of black velvet! Do you want one? | Voilà de très beaux chapeaux de velours noir! En voulez-vous un? |
| 7. What's the price of it? | Quel en est le prix? |
| 8. I will sell you the beautiful hat which you have there at 5 francs | Je vous vendrai le beau chapeau que vous avez là à cinq francs |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 9. Now you will show me some neckties and some collars, if you have any to show me | Maintenant vous me montrerez des cravates et des faux-cols, si vous en avez à me montrer |
| 10. If I have any! Don't ask me if I have any, sir! I have many! | Si j'en ai! Ne me demandez pas si j'en ai, monsieur! J'en ai beaucoup! |
| 11. Will you show me some cravats of blue or red silk? | Voulez-vous me montrer des cravates de soie bleue ou rouge? |
| 12. There they are, the red (ones) and the blue. Will you choose some, sir? | Les voilà, les rouges et les bleues! En choisirez-vous, monsieur? |
| 13. Thanks! You can give me two blue cravats | Merci! Vous pouvez me donner deux cravates bleues |

190. Conversation. 1. What did the wife ask her husband? 2. What did the husband answer his wife? 3. What hat did the wife order? 4. For whom did the poor woman ask for clothes? 5. Did Anne give any to the poor woman? 6. What clothes did she not give? 7. What did she give? 8. Where did Anne find the clothes that she gave the poor woman? 9. Where are Peter's uncle and cousin? 10. Will they wear their old clothes?

191. Theme. Tuesday I entered a store and asked a clerk to show me some gray suits. He showed me one. I asked him: "What is the price of this suit?" He answered me: "It is not dear; it is very cheap." I answered him: "I have not much money; I have very little. I shall have more money soon, perhaps, but I haven't much yet." He answered me: "You haven't enough money to (**pour**) buy your clothes here." I answered him: "I shall look for a clerk who will sell clothes to a poor school-master." He answered me: "You will not find any." I answered him: "I do not like your store. I bought an overcoat, a hat, some handkerchiefs, collars and neckties here, and I have always bought many things in your store, but I shall not ask you to

(de) sell me my clothes now. If I have not enough money
 15 to (pour) buy my clothes in your store, you will lose a little
 too. I cannot buy much because I am poor, but I can tell
 my friends to (de) buy their clothes in the store which is at
 the street-corner. There are fewer clerks there, but they
 will not ask the poor how much money they have."

192. Exercises. A. Use the direct object pronouns 'him,' 'you,' 'them' (*m.*), 'us,' 'them' (*f.*), 'her,' with the following verbs: **montrer, demander, donner** in *present, past indefinite, future*: § 480, B.

B. Use the corresponding indirect object pronouns with the same verbs.

20. VINGTIÈME LEÇON [vêtjem]

Review

I

193. 1. I shall leave them. 2. You are carrying him.
 3. We buy them. 4. You will show her. 5. I answer her.
 6. I will answer him. 7. You will ask for some. 8. Are
 you calling us? 9. We are not calling you. 10. He will say
 it. 11. Will you say it? 12. We will not buy it. 13. Do
 you like it? 14. I do not like it. 15. She will like him.
 16. He liked her. 17. She did not carry them to the tailor's.
 18. He answered her immediately. 19. She answers him
 always. 20. He ordered some Sunday. 21. They will not
 order any Tuesday. 22. I am asking for some. 23. We
 will not carry them to the milliner's. 24. You ask him.
 25. We answered them immediately. 26. How many
 things you will say to them! 27. The clerk speaks to her
 always. 28. The gray woolen coats cost little money.
 29. How much money? 30. Much money. 31. More

money than the trousers. 32. Less money than the overcoats. 33. How many collars, and how many cravats will he sell you? 34. Many collars and enough cravats. 35. Enough collars, but few cravats.

II

194. 1. We will carry them immediately. 2. I will call her Sunday or Tuesday. 3. The coachman will answer him. 4. The travelers perhaps are answering her. 5. The milliner will show her a hat. 6. She has not asked her the price yet. 7. She asks her husband always for a little money. 8. The clerk sells us more woolen suits than the tailor. 9. The traveler brings him many things. 10. What will you say to them? 11. I show her some gray ribbons and some white lace. 12. Show the travelers some cotton handkerchiefs. 13. I have shown them some blue silk cravats and some collars. 14. We call the cabby and give him two francs and fifty centimes. 15. We called the waiter and asked him for the bill-of-fare. 16. The tailor will tell him that the woolen overcoat and the gray cotton trousers are very cheap. 17. If you buy the stockings and dresses very cheaply, you will sell them dear. 18. I have not sent him the five cotton suits yet. 19. She asks him for a big glass of water. 20. I am poor because I have not enough money. 21. If you have not much money you are poor. 22. The tailors have more coats than you, but fewer overcoats. 23. They have enough of them and they do not cost them much.

21. VINGT ET UNIÈME LEÇON [vê te ynjem]

L'ÉGLISE

I

195. Present Participle (endings of the three conjugations):

I. *giving*
donn ant [dɔnã]

II. *finishing*
fin iss ant [finisã]

III. *selling*
vend ant [vãdã]

196. Present Participle of *avoir* and *être*:

having
ay ant [ejã]

being
ét ant [etã]

Past Participle of *avoir* and *être*:

eu [y], *had*

été [ete], *been*

197. Future of *avoir* and *être*:

I shall have, etc.
j'aur ai [ʒɔre],
etc., as in § 147

I shall be, etc.
je ser ai [ʒə sɛr],
etc., as in § 147

198. Prepositions, except **en**, govern the **Infinitive**. The French do not say 'for going,' 'without going,' etc.; they say 'for to go,' 'without to go,' etc. The only preposition which governs the present participle, as all do in English, is **en**, *in*.

pour aller, *for going*

sans partir, *without departing*

après avoir répondu, *after having answered*

avant de finir, *before finishing*

But en allant, *in going*; **en** répondant, etc.

199. In English the infinitive is sometimes preceded by *to* and sometimes not. We say 'I dare to go,' but 'you dare not go,' 'he is able to go,' but 'he can go.' In French

(1) the infinitive may stand alone,

(2) may be preceded by **de**,

(3) may be preceded by **à**.

As in English, it is *what goes before*, not the infinitive itself, that determines the presence or absence of a preposition: e.g. **aller** is followed directly by the infinitive, **oublier** by **de**+infinitive, **apprendre** by **à**+infinitive.

- (1) **Nous allons partir**, We are going to leave
- (2) **Il a oublié de venir**, He forgot to come
- (3) **Il apprend à lire**, He is learning to read

Cf. Il y a peu à voir, There is little to see.

This usage can be learned only by observation, and is not of great importance for the beginner.

200.

VOCABULARY

bonjour! [bɔ̃ʒu:r], good day!	le monde [mɔ̃:d], world, people
conduire [kɔ̃dyi:r], to conduct, drive	la musique [myzik], music
la dame [dam], lady	le plaisir [plɛzi:r], pleasure
déjà [deʒa], already	presque [prɛskə], almost
dit [di], <i>past participle of dire</i>	puis [pyi], then
étonner [etane], to astonish	le sermon [sermɔ̃], sermon
de bonne heure [də bɔn œr], early	tard [ta:r], late
le jour [ʒu:r], day	tous les (jours) [tu le], every (day)
mademoiselle [madmwazel], Miss	voir [vwa:r], to see; <i>past participle</i>
le matin [matɛ̃], morning	vu [vy]

201.

DRILL

1. Being; having been	Étant; ayant été
2. Having; having had	Ayant; ayant eu
3. I shall have; I have had	J'aurai; j'ai eu
4. I shall be; I have been	Je serai; j'ai été
5. We shall have; we have said	Nous aurons; nous avons dit
6. You shall be; you have been	Vous serez; vous avez été
7. In speaking; in finishing	En parlant; en finissant
8. Without being; without having	Sans être; sans avoir
ing	
9. In losing; in building	En perdant; en bâtissant
10. She will be; they will have	Elle sera; ils auront

11. To have seen; to have said	Avoir vu; avoir dit
12. Without having been; without having had	Sans avoir été; sans avoir eu
13. Before going; after having spoken	Avant d'aller; après avoir parlé
14. Without going out; for departing	Sans sortir; pour partir
15. Having gone out; having said	Étant sorti; ayant dit
16. Having answered; having come	Ayant répondu; étant venu
17. He will not have; she will not be	Il n'aura pas; elle ne sera pas
18. Has she had? has he been?	A-t-elle eu? a-t-il été?
19. Not having been; not having had	N'ayant pas été; n'ayant pas eu
20. You will not have; you will not be	Vous n'aurez pas; vous ne serez pas

202. Reading. En allant à l'église dimanche matin j'ai vu beaucoup de magasins. Mais presque tous les magasins sont fermés le dimanche et il n'y a pas beaucoup de monde sur les trottoirs. Il y a très peu à voir dans les rues le dimanche. Je suis montée dans une voiture et j'ai demandé au cocher de me conduire à l'église. La ville n'est pas très grande et je suis arrivée à l'église de bonne heure. Toutes mes amies sont venues plus tard et elles ont été étonnées de me voir déjà arrivée. Après avoir eu le plaisir d'entendre un très beau sermon, je suis sortie de l'église. En allant au parc où il y a toujours de la musique le dimanche, j'ai perdu mon mouchoir. Au coin d'une grande rue j'ai vu un petit magasin où j'ai acheté un mouchoir qui m'a coûté un franc cinquante. Qu'est-ce que ma tante me dira et qu'est-ce que je lui répondrai? Mon oncle, en me donnant le mouchoir que j'ai perdu, m'a dit: «Voilà un très beau mouchoir de soie. Ne le perdez pas parce qu'il est vieux; un de mes parents l'a donné à votre tante. C'est

de la soie française.» J'ai perdu tant de mouchoirs! J'en perds un presque tous les jours.

20

203. Résumé. Église; magasins; monde; voir; voiture; arrivée; amies; sermon; parc; magasin; tante; oncle; soie; parents; perdre.

204. Oral Drill. 1. Where have you been? 2. What have you had? 3. Having been seen. 4. Having had some ribbons. 5. Not having seen the carriage. 6. They have been seen. 7. Who has been here? 8. You have been there. 9. Who said it? 10. They said it. 11. She was astonished. 12. Have you been at church? 13. We have not been there. 14. Has he had a carriage? 15. In giving her a handkerchief. 16. In finishing the sermon. 17. Have you heard the sermon? 18. In answering her. 19. Where will you be? 20. Shall we have the pleasure? 21. I shall have seen him. 22. Not having lost my handkerchief. 23. Your handkerchiefs will be lost. 24. We shall have lost two of them. 25. Will they have flowers? 26. Will he not be seen? 27. In finishing. 28. Having been almost finished. 29. Without driving the carriage. 30. Before answering them.

II

205.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Good day, sir! | Bonjour, monsieur! |
| 2. Good day, Miss! | Bonjour, mademoiselle! |
| 3. I saw you at church | Je vous ai vu à l'église |
| 4. Yes, I went there to hear
the sermon | Oui, je suis allé là pour entendre
le sermon |
| 5. You astonish me! You did
not go to church to see
the people? | Vous m'étonnez! Vous n'êtes
pas allé à l'église pour voir le
monde? |
| 6. No, I did not see the fair
ladies. I heard a very
fine sermon and then I
went out (left) | Non, je n'ai pas vu les belles
dames. J'ai entendu un très
beau sermon et puis je suis
sorti |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 7. And then you went to the park? | Et puis vous êtes allé au parc? |
| 8. No, I don't like music and there is some there every Sunday | Non, je n'aime pas la musique et il y en a là tous les dimanches |
| 9. You will have the pleasure of hearing music at your aunt's later | Vous aurez le plaisir d'entendre de la musique chez votre tante plus tard |
| 10. No, I shall not have the pleasure of hearing any at my aunt's. Before leaving the church I said to her: "I shall not be there" | Non, je n'aurai pas le plaisir d'en entendre chez ma tante. Avant de partir de l'église je lui ai dit: «Je ne serai pas là» |
| 11. There's my carriage! If you wish to get in, I will ask the coachman to drive us to your aunt's before driving me to my mother's | Voilà ma voiture! Si vous voulez monter, je demanderai au cocher de nous conduire chez votre tante avant de me conduire chez ma mère |
| 12. Thanks! There will be too many people there, and too much music! | Merci! Il y aura trop de monde là, et trop de musique! |

206. Conversation. 1. What did you see in arriving at church? 2. Did you see any ladies in the street who have been at church? 3. Have they been in the stores? 4. Did the coachman go to church? 5. Who arrived at church early and who arrived late? 6. Did you hear the music at the park? 7. What did your aunt say because you lost your handkerchief? 8. What did you answer her? 9. Can you buy handkerchiefs on Sunday? 10. Did you lose a silk or a cotton handkerchief in going to church?

207. Theme. Sunday morning, getting into my carriage with one of my friends, I went to hear the sermon at church. Not having started very early, we arrived late and we did not hear all the sermon. On going out of the church we met 5 some friends who said to us: "Having had the pleasure of

hearing a fine sermon and having heard much good music also, we will have the pleasure now of going with you to see the city. Get into our carriage! You will be astonished! You will find the stores all closed, the people going out of the houses, walking in the street, meeting friends, talking, ¹⁰ answering, buying flowers, choosing them, giving them to the ladies, going to the park, hearing the music, losing their way and seeking it, and then arriving at the house and dining, in (**en**) a word having a great deal of (much) pleasure." We got into the carriage, and after having been ¹⁵ at the park, and having talked and walked and dined with our friends, we went to the house of my aunt.

208. Exercises. A. Use in sentences **en** with the present participle of the following verbs:

go	finish	reply
show	choose	lose

B. Finish the following, using **répondre, chercher, parler** or **voir**:

Il est monté dans sa chambre pour . . .

Il m'a vu sans . . .

Il est parti après avoir . . .

Elle est sortie avant de . . .

C. Conjugate:

I have had few friends. I have been astonished.

D. Conjugate:

I shall have some milk. I shall be seen.

E. Drill on *present, past indefinite, future* of **avoir** and **être**: § 480, B.

22. VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t dɔʒjɛm]

CHEZ LE MARCHAND DE TABAC

I

209. Conjunctive Pronouns

Direct object

- 1 **me** [mə], me
 2. (**te** [tə], thee)
 3. **le** [lə], him, it
 3. **la** [la], her, it
 1. **nous** [nu], us
 2. **vous** [vu], you
 3. **les** [le] (*m.*), them
 3. **les** [le] (*f.*), them

Indirect object

- me** [mə], to me
 (**te** [tə], to thee)
lui [lyi], to him
lui [lyi], to her
nous [nu], to us
vous [vu], to you
leur [lœ:r] (*m.*), to them
leur [lœ:r] (*f.*), to them

Disjunctive
Pronouns

- moi** [mwa], me
 (**toi** [twa], thee)
lui [lyi], him
elle [el], her
nous [nu], us
vous [vu], you
eux [ø], them
elles [el], them

210. Conjunctive pronouns are always *objects of verbs*.
 Disjunctive pronouns are used:

1. After prepositions: **avec moi, sans lui, chez eux**, etc.
2. After **c'est**, *it is*: **c'est moi, c'est lui**, etc.¹
3. Where the pronoun is used alone, i.e. neither as subject nor object of a verb:

Qui est là? Moi! Who is there? I!

Moi, je suis allé, I went

4. Where the pronoun is used as part of a compound subject:
Son père et lui sont allés, His father and he went

211. VOCABULARY

l'allumette [lalymet] (*f.*), match
aujourd'hui [ɔʒurdi], to-day
autre [otr], other

boire [bwa:r], to drink; *past participle* **bu** [by]

¹ The French say:

c'est moi, it is I
 (**c'est toi**, it is thou)
c'est lui, it is he
c'est elle, it is she

c'est nous, it is we
c'est vous, it is you
ce sont eux, it is they
ce sont elles, it is they

But according to a decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction **c'est eux, c'est elles** are not incorrect.

la boîte [bwa:t], box	le marchand [marʃɑ̃], merchant, dealer
la bouteille [bute:j], bottle	
le café [kafɛ], coffee; café	la pipe [pip], pipe
le cigare [siga:r], cigar	près (de) [prɛ], near
la cigarette [sigaret], cigarette	seul [sœl], alone, only
à côté de [a kote də], beside	souvent [suvɑ̃], often
donc [dɔ̃], therefore, accordingly, then	le tabac [taba], tobacco
fumer [fyme], to smoke	trois [trwa], three
	y ¹ [i], there

212.

DRILL

1. With him; with them (<i>m.</i>)	Avec lui; avec eux
2. Without her; without them (<i>f.</i>)	Sans elle; sans elles
3. For them (<i>m.</i>); for him	Pour eux; pour lui
4. Of her; of them (<i>f.</i>)	D'elle; d'elles
5. Beside me; beside us	À côté de moi; à côté de nous
6. Near him; near her	Près de lui; près d'elle
7. It is he; it is they (<i>m.</i>)	C'est lui; ce sont eux
8. It is she; it is they (<i>f.</i>)	C'est elle; ce sont elles
9. At his house; at their (<i>m.</i>) house	Chez lui; chez eux
10. At her house; at their (<i>f.</i>) house	Chez elle; chez elles
11. It is we; it is I	C'est nous; c'est moi
12. At my house; at our house	Chez moi; chez nous
13. Who speaks? he and I	Qui parle? lui et moi
14. Who came? she and he	Qui est venu? elle et lui
15. Who said it? I!	Qui l'a dit? moi!
16. At whose house? at theirs (<i>f.</i>)	Chez qui? chez elles
17. At your house; at his house	Chez vous; chez lui
18. He speaks with her	Il parle avec elle
19. She spoke with him	Elle a parlé avec lui
20. My brother and I; his sister and he	Mon frère et moi; sa sœur et lui

¹ **y** is placed before verbs like conjunctive object-pronouns: **nous y allons**, *we go there*.

213. Reading. Un jour Madame Lefèvre et son mari sont sortis avec leur fils et leur fille pour aller dîner dans un café. En entrant dans la rue Royale ils ont rencontré le frère de Monsieur Lefèvre. Les enfants lui ont demandé
5 de venir avec eux. Leur oncle leur a répondu: "Merci beaucoup, je n'aime pas à manger tout seul; mais venez avec moi au petit café qui est là au coin, à côté de l'église. Aujourd'hui un de mes amis y conduira sa femme, et il m'a demandé d'y venir aussi. Mais ils n'y sont pas encore
10 arrivés. Ils n'y arriveront pas de bonne heure: ils dînent chez des parents. Voulez-vous venir avec moi?" Ils sont donc allés avec lui, mais avant d'arriver au café le frère de Monsieur Lefèvre est entré chez un marchand de tabac. Il y a acheté du tabac pour lui—il fume toujours la pipe—
15 et des cigarettes pour son ami. Il a acheté aussi des cigares pour Monsieur Lefèvre. Le marchand lui a vendu trois boîtes d'allumettes; elles lui ont coûté vingt-cinq centimes la boîte. Au café ils ont trouvé une table près de la porte, devant la fenêtre, dans la grande salle, où il y a toujours
20 beaucoup de familles qui dînent. Le fils de Madame Lefèvre lui a dit: "Voilà un de mes amis! Je l'ai vu tout de suite en entrant. Je veux lui demander de venir manger avec moi." Pierre l'a appelé.

Les enfants ont beaucoup mangé, un peu trop, peut-être. Ils ont aussi bu une bouteille de lait. Pierre a demandé à son ami de venir bientôt jouer chez lui; mais le père de son ami a dit: "Non; il jouera chez nous." Et puis le pauvre petit garçon est sorti avec son père, sa mère et sa soeur sans avoir répondu à Pierre: il a dîné avec lui,
30 mais il jouera tout seul. Monsieur et Madame Lefèvre, leur fille et leur fils sont sortis tard parce que Monsieur Lefèvre a fumé un cigare après avoir bu son café.

214. Résumé. Madame Lefèvre, mari, fils, fille; oncle, demandé, répondu; marchand de tabac; au café, table; ami de Pierre, père de l'ami; enfants, mangé; oncle; jouer.

215. Oral Drill. 1. Without him; with her. 2. For me; for him. 3. With them (*m.*); without him. 4. Beside them (*f.*); near her. 5. It is I; it is he; it is she. 6. Is it we?; is it I? 7. Who spoke, he or she? 8. To whose house?; to our house. 9. At my house; at their (*m.*) house. 10. His mother and he; her father and she. 11. Who spoke — he, she, I, they (*m.*)? 12. She speaks of him. 13. He speaks for me. 14. Who came — he or she? 15. We are near him. 16. It is she who came. 17. Who will be there — he or I? 18. You are not near me. 19. We are not with them (*m.*). 20. Is it he or they (*f.*)?

II

216.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Will you (do you wish to) go to the café with me? | Voulez-vous aller au café avec moi? |
| 2. Yes, I will (wish to) go there with you | Oui, je veux y aller avec vous |
| 3. Does your uncle want to go there with you and me? | Est-ce que votre oncle veut y aller avec vous et moi? |
| 4. He? no. He has already breakfasted. | Lui? non. Il a déjà déjeuné |
| 5. That's astonishing! I saw him at the tobacconist's, and he said to me: "Come breakfast with me." He bought a box of cigars | C'est étonnant! Je l'ai vu chez le marchand de tabac, et il m'a dit: "Venez déjeuner avec moi." Il a acheté une boîte de cigares |
| 6. That's not for him. He has three brothers: my father and two others. It's for them | Ce n'est pas pour lui. Il a trois frères: mon père et deux autres. C'est pour eux |
| 7. He bought also some tobacco. Is that for them also? | Il a acheté aussi du tabac. Est-ce pour eux aussi? |
| 8. No, it's for him; he always smokes a pipe. It's they who will smoke the cigars | Non, c'est pour lui; il fume toujours la pipe. Ce sont eux qui fumeront les cigares |
| 9. Does he not smoke (smoke no) cigars? | Est-ce qu'il ne fume pas de cigares? |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 10. No, he does not smoke any | Non, il n'en fume pas. |
| 11. There's the café! My
brother and I dine here
very often | Voilà le café! Mon frère et moi
nous déjeunons ici très souvent |
| 12. Who then is that gentleman
near the window? Ah!
it's Peter. Yes, it's he | Qui est donc ce monsieur près de
la fenêtre? Ah! c'est Pierre.
Oui, c'est lui |
| 13. And the two men with him? | Et les deux messieurs avec lui? |
| 14. Those are two friends who
are breakfasting with
him. He is always with
them | Ce sont deux amis qui déjeunent
avec lui. Il est toujours avec
eux |
| 15. I want some coffee. Wait-
er! Coffee for me | Moi, je veux du café. Garçon!
du café pour moi! |
| 16. I'll order some for myself
also—no, some milk!
We'll drink, you coffee
and I a bottle of milk | J'en commanderai pour moi aussi
—non, du lait. Nous boirons,
vous du café et moi une bou-
teille de lait |

217. Conversation. 1. Where did Mr. and Mrs. Lèfevre go? 2. With whom did they go there? 3. Whom did they meet? 4. What did they ask him? 5. What did he answer them? 6. What did Mr. Lefèvre's brother buy for him? 7. What did Peter say to his mother? 8. Did Peter's friend come to put his chair beside him or beside her? 9. Did Peter's uncle leave with his brother's family or without them? 10. Will Peter's friend play at his house?

218. Theme. My father told me that he met your uncle at a café the other day. One of their friends came in all alone. He came to put his chair beside them and my father and he drank coffee, but your uncle said: "I have not dined yet," and he ordered a bottle of milk and some meat. Then he smoked his pipe. My father often smokes

a pipe at our house, but he likes to smoke cigars at the cafés. Your uncle said to him: "*I* smoke a pipe at the café; but my wife wishes that I smoke cigars if I am with her." My father replied to him: "*I* smoke a pipe if I am at my house; I cannot smoke cigars there because my wife does not like them. It is she that chooses."

219. Exercises. A. Use the disjunctive pronouns 'him,' 'us,' 'them' (*m.*), 'me,' 'you,' 'her,' 'them' (*f.*), with the following prepositions: 'for,' 'without,' 'with,' 'after.'

B. Using the same pronouns, fill the following blank: 'It is —!'

23. VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON [vêt trwazjɛm]

LES JOURS DE LA SEMAINE

I

220. *This, that* before nouns = $\begin{cases} \text{ce [sə]} (m.) \\ \text{cette [set]} (f.) \\ \text{ces [se]} (pl.), \text{ these, those.} \end{cases}$

ce livre, this or that book

cette encre, this or that ink

ces garçons, these or those boys

ces dames, these or those ladies

NOTE 1. Before a masculine noun or adjective beginning with a vowel use **cet [set]**: **cet ami**, *this (or that) friend*; **cet homme**, *this or that man* (cf. p. 25, note 3).

NOTE 2. If it is necessary to distinguish *this* and *that* before nouns, add to the noun **-ci** (*here*) for *this* and **-là** (*there*) for *that*.

ce livre-ci et cette plume-là, *this book and that pen*

ces livres-ci et ces plumes-là, *these books and those pens*

221. Used *without* a noun *this* = **ceci** [səsi], *that* = **cela** [səla].

Ceci est bon, This is good
Voulez-vous cela? Do you wish that?

222. **Les Jours de la Semaine :**

dimanche [dimã:ʃ], Sunday
lundi [lœdi], Monday
mardi [mardi], Tuesday
mercredi [mɛrkʁedi], Wednesday
jeudi [ʒœdi], Thursday
vendredi [vãdrɛdi], Friday
samedi [samdi], Saturday

223.

VOCABULARY

l'après-midi [lapʁɛ midɪ] (<i>f.</i>), afternoon	l'homme [lɔm], man
avant ¹ [avã], before	joli [ʒoli], pretty
bien [bjɛ], well; eh [e] bien! well!	le légume [legym], vegetable
derrière [dɛrjɛr], behind	(le) midi [midi], noon
écouter [ekute], to listen to	la note [nɔt], bill
enfin [ãfɛ], finally, at last	oublier [ublɛ], to forget
la fois ² [fwa], time; une —, once;	payer [peje], to pay, pay for
deux —, twice	la semaine [səmen], week
le gâteau [gato], cake	seulement [sœlmã], only
l'heure ² [lœ:r] (<i>f.</i>), hour (time)	si [si], so
	le soir [swa:r], evening

224.

DRILL

1. This boy; this girl	Ce garçon; cette fille
2. This man; these men	Cet homme; ces hommes
3. This bill and that bill	Cette note-ci et cette note-là
4. These boys and those girls	Ces garçons et ces filles
5. These men and those men	Ces hommes-ci et ces hommes-là
6. That is bought; this is sold	Cela est acheté; ceci est vendu

¹ **avant**=before (of time): *before ten o'clock*; **devant**=before (of place), *in front of; before the house*. Note that **avant** is followed by **de** before an infinitive: **avant de partir**.

² **heure**=time of day: *what time is it?*

fois=time in a series: *four times, five times*, etc.

temps=time in all other senses; also *weather*.

7. This café and that café	Ce café-ci et ce café-là
8. This is for me; that is for him	Ceci est pour moi; cela est pour lui
9. Behind these houses	Derrière ces maisons
10. Eat these vegetables!	Mangez ces légumes!
11. Sell this tobacco for him!	Vendez ce tabac pour lui!
12. Do you like this or that?	Aimez-vous ceci ou cela?
13. This man speaks of him	Cet homme parle de lui
14. Those ladies came with me three times	Ces dames sont venues avec moi trois fois
15. This lady said that once	Cette dame a dit cela une fois
16. This café has been closed twice	Ce café a été fermé deux fois
17. Do you want this cake or that cake?	Voulez-vous ce gâteau-ci ou ce gâteau-là?
18. This soup is for them (<i>f.</i>)	Ce potage est pour elles
19. This meat is not for him	Cette viande n'est pas pour lui
20. He wants that soup, I want this soup	Il veut ce potage-là, je veux ce potage-ci

225. Reading. Cette semaine je suis allé trois fois chez Henri [ãri], sans le trouver. Je suis allé chez lui lundi soir, mercredi matin et mardi à midi. Cet homme est toujours sorti! C'est étonnant, cela! Il est venu aussi trois fois chez moi cette semaine-ci, mais toujours un peu après midi. 5 Il ne m'a pas trouvé. Cela n'est pas étonnant. Je déjeune à cette heure-là. Il est venu jeudi soir et samedi matin, sans me trouver, mais ce matin il m'a enfin trouvé. Il est venu cette fois de très bonne heure. Il m'a demandé: «Où avez-vous donc été tous ces jours-ci?» — «Moi! Écou- 10 tez ceci! Vous me trouverez tous les jours dans cette chambre, mais avant midi seulement. N'oubliez pas cela! À cette heure-là je déjeune au café. Vous avez vu cette grande église au coin de la rue? Eh bien! derrière cette église, dans un de ces petits bâtiments, il y a un petit café. 15 Vous l'avez peut-être vu, près de cette autre rue-là. Vous me trouverez toujours à midi dans ce petit café-là, le mardi, le

jeudi et le samedi, mais ces jours-là seulement. Le dimanche je suis chez ma tante. J'y mange très bien: le potage est bon, la viande est bonne, les légumes sont bons, et



Il y a un petit café

quels gâteaux! — et puis, il n'y a pas de note à payer ce jour-là! Le lundi je déjeune encore chez elle; le mercredi, en ville, chez mon oncle Pierre. Et le vendredi? demandez-

vous. Ce jour-là je déjeune à midi avec mon tailleur, ce petit homme qui m'a vendu ce costume-ci, et cet habit, ²⁵ et ces faux-cols, et cette belle cravate, et ce pardessus noir, et ce joli pantalon gris. Je vous dirai pourquoi je déjeune avec lui tous les vendredis. Écoutez ceci! Je n'ai pas assez d'argent pour payer ces beaux costumes, ces belles cravates, cet habit, ce pardessus. Donc, je donne à déjeuner tous les ³⁰ vendredis à ce pauvre homme!»

226. Résumé. Je cherche Henri; Henri me cherche; je déjeune; quand; où; dimanche et lundi; la tante bonne cuisinière; l'oncle; le tailleur; qui paye, et pourquoi?

227. Oral Drill. 1. This afternoon; this morning. 2. These cakes; this vegetable. 3. These vegetables; this cake. 4. This bill and that bill. 5. These cakes and those cakes. 6. Pay this man! 7. Behind this house. 8. He likes this; I like that. 9. At last these boys came. 10. Having paid this man. 11. These bills which you paid.¹ 12. You forgot¹ them this time. 13. I have bought only these cakes. 14. This tobacconist sells only tobacco. 15. Do you want this or that? 16. This cake is for this girl. 17. These vegetables are for this boy. 18. Did she come this evening? 19. This is good; that is not good. 20. These cakes are so good!

II

228.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. How do you do, Henry! | Bonjour, Henri [āri]! |
| Always in this room! | dans cette chambre! |
| Always that old book in front of you! | Toujours ce vieux livre devant vous! |
| At what hour will you dine this afternoon? | À quelle heure dînerez-vous cette après-midi? |
| 2. It's Sunday to-day; I dine early | C'est dimanche aujourd'hui; je dîne de bonne heure |
| 3. In this café? | Dans ce café-ci? |

¹ See p. 71, footnote 1.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 4. No, in that little café at the street-corner | Non, dans ce petit café au coin de la rue |
| 5. Where then?; in this street? | Où donc?; dans cette rue-ci? |
| 6. No, in that other little street beside that big building | Non, dans cette autre petite rue à côté de ce grand bâtiment-là |
| 7. I'll dine with you, but I cannot wear this coat | Je dînerai avec vous, mais je ne peux pas porter cet habit-ci |
| 8. I like that black coat [very] much with those gray trousers | J'aime beaucoup cet habit noir avec ce pantalon gris |
| 9. I dine three times this week with friends | Je dîne trois fois cette semaine avec des amis |
| 10. With whom will you dine Tuesday? | Avec qui dînerez-vous mardi? |
| 11. Tuesday — no, Wednesday, I shall dine with that young man whom you saw at my house | Mardi — non, mercredi, je dîne avec ce jeune homme que vous avez vu chez moi |
| 12. And Thursday? | Et jeudi? |
| 13. I dine at our home that day; but Friday I dine with John | Je dîne chez nous ce jour-là; mais vendredi je dîne avec Jean |
| 14. Ah! that good John! He's your cousin, isn't he? | Ah! ce bon Jean! C'est votre cousin, n'est-ce pas? ¹ |
| 15. That man my cousin! No, he's my tailor | Cet homme-là mon cousin! Non, c'est mon tailleur |
| 16. And with whom do you dine Saturday this week? | Et avec qui dînez-vous le samedi de cette semaine? |
| 17. With my cousin, that pretty cousin who has come to Paris, but for this week only | Avec ma cousine, cette jolie cousine qui est venue à Paris, mais pour cette semaine seulement |
| 18. What day will you dine with me again? | Quel jour dînerez-vous encore avec moi? |
| 19. Tuesday of this week perhaps — no — Monday! | Le mardi de cette semaine peut-être — non — lundi! |

¹ *n'est-ce pas?* is widely used in French as a sort of question mark.

C'est lui, n'est-ce pas? It's he, isn't it?

Vous y allez, n'est-ce pas? You are going there, aren't you?

229. Conversation. 1. How many times did you go to your friend's house Tuesday and Wednesday? 2. What days did you go to his house? 3. Did he find you Thursday or Saturday when he came to your house? 4. Did he look for you at your house this morning? 5. Where can your friend find you and at what hour? 6. At what hour do you breakfast Friday? 7. Do you breakfast at home every day? 8. At whose house do you lunch Sundays and Mondays? 9. What do you eat at your aunt's house? 10. Will you dine with me at the little café behind the church?

230. Theme. We went to your house this week three times on Monday, five times on Tuesday and once or twice on Wednesday. You were not in this room Monday evening, you were not in this house Tuesday morning, and we did not find you Wednesday afternoon in that little café behind 5 those two large churches at the corner of this street between this big building and that little building. Where have you been all this week? Have you not breakfasted in this café before Thursday or in that café near the church before Friday? We dined in this café Thursday and Saturday, and 10 in that café Friday. In that café the soup and meat are very good; in this café the vegetables are good. Eat one of these cakes, and I will give you a glass of this good milk. This glass is for you—I have drunk from that glass. And now, with these cakes, this bottle, these glasses and this good 15 milk in front of you, you will tell me where you have been all this week.

231. Exercises. A. Put the words for *this (that)* and *these* before the following:

cake	house	hour	cigarette
bill	vegetable	week	evening
bottle	café	man	friend (<i>m.</i>)

B. Use **ceci** and **cela** with the following verbs:

like	choose	finish
forget	listen to	sell
pay	hear	

C. What are the days of the week?

D. Drill on present, past indefinite, future of **oublier**:
§ 480, B.

24. VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON [vê't katriem]

L'HEURE

I

232. The French do not say *I am hungry, I am thirsty*; they say *I have hunger, I have thirst*.

J'ai faim [fê], I am hungry
Il a soif [swaf], He is thirsty

233. On [ô] (= Latin *homo*, 'man') is much used in French; it corresponds to the English indefinite *one, people, we, you, they*.

On dit qu'il perd beaucoup, They say he loses a great deal
On ne dit pas cela en anglais, We don't say that in English

234. 1 un [œ]	5 cinq [sêk]	9 neuf [nœf]
2 deux [dø]	6 six [sis]	10 dix [dis]
3 trois [trwa]	7 sept [set]	11 onze [ôiz]
4 quatre [katr]	8 huit [yit]	12 douze [duiz]

NOTE. Pronunciation of **cinq, six, sept, huit, neuf, dix**:

1. Used alone:	[sêk],	[sis],	[set],	[yit],	[nœf],	[dis]
2. Before a word beginning with a consonant	[sê],	[si],	[se],	[yi],	[nø],	[di]
3. Before a word beginning with a vowel	[sêk],	[siz],	[set],	[yit],	[nœv],	[diz]

235. The Clock.

Quelle heure est-il? What time is it?

Il est une heure, It is one o'clock

Il est quatre heures, It is four o'clock

Il est huit heures dix, It is 8:10

Il est sept heures un quart, It is 7:15

Il est neuf heures et demie, It is 9:30

Il est neuf heures moins dix, It is 8:50

Il est neuf heures moins le quart, It is 8:45

Il est midi; il est minuit, It is 12 (noon); it is 12 (midnight)

Il est midi dix, It is 12:10 P.M.

Il est minuit et demi, It is 12:30 A.M.

À quelle heure allez-vous? At what time do you go?

236.

VOCABULARY

avancer [avāse], to advance, be
fast

ensemble [āsā:bl], together

mal [mal], badly

la montre [mō:tr], watch

la pendule [pādy], clock

quand [kā], when

regarder [rēgarde], to look at

retarder [rētarde], to be slow

237.

DRILL

1. What time is it? I'm hun-
gry

2. It's one o'clock; it's two
o'clock

3. It's five or six o'clock by my
watch

4. It's half past eight or nine

5. Are you thirsty? Are you
hungry?

6. At what o'clock do you
breakfast?

7. At 11 o'clock or at noon

8. At what hour do you break-
fast in the morning?

9. At a quarter before seven

Quelle heure est-il? J'ai faim

Il est une heure; il est deux heures

Il est cinq ou six heures à ma
montre

Il est huit heures et demie ou
neuf heures

Avez-vous soif? Avez-vous faim?

À quelle heure déjeunez-vous?

À onze heures ou à midi

À quelle heure déjeunez-vous le
matin?

À sept heures moins un quart

- | | |
|--|--|
| 10. And I at a quarter past
seven | Et moi à sept heures un quart |
| 11. When does one breakfast? | Quand est-ce qu'on déjeune? |
| 12. One breakfasts at nine or
ten o'clock | On déjeune à neuf ou dix heures |
| 13. When did you finish the
book? | Quand avez-vous fini le livre? |
| 14. At midnight; at 12:15 A.M. | À minuit; à minuit un quart |
| 15. I finished it at nine o'clock | Je l'ai fini à neuf heures |
| 16. We finished it at 8:10 | Nous l'avons fini à huit heures dix |
| 17. And he at ten minutes of
eight | Et lui à huit heures moins dix |
| 18. Are they hungry or thirsty? | Ont-ils faim ou soif? |
| 19. One is not hungry in the
morning | On n'a pas faim le matin |
| 20. This watch is slow and that
watch is fast | Cette montre-ci retarde et cette
montre-là avance |

238. Reading. Jean et moi nous allons dîner ensemble mardi, jeudi, et samedi entre six et sept heures du soir. Ici en ville on dîne entre cinq et sept ou huit heures du soir et on y déjeune entre sept et huit heures du matin. Jean est
 5 venu chez moi à six heures un quart. Il m'a dit: «N'avez-vous pas faim? À quelle heure allons-nous dîner?» J'ai répondu: «Il n'est pas encore six heures. Il est seulement cinq heures et demie à ma montre.» «Cette montre-là,»
 me répond-il, «ne marche pas bien. Est-ce qu'il n'y a pas
 10 de pendule dans cette maison-ci?» — «Allez voir dans cette chambre à côté, il y en a deux là.» — «Eh bien! Il est seulement six heures à cette pendule-ci, mais il est déjà sept heures dix à cette pendule-là! l'une retarde, l'autre avance, et les deux marchent mal. Il est sept heures moins
 15 un quart à ma montre.» — «Ah! s'il est déjà si tard, je partirai avec vous.»

Nous sommes donc partis ensemble, lui et moi. Arrivés au café, nous avons choisi une table sur le trottoir. Nous avons fini de dîner à huit heures un quart. On a toujours

faim le soir quand on n'a pas mangé depuis onze heures ²⁰ ou midi. Après notre dîner nous avons causé avec deux ou trois de nos amis qui dînent toujours au même café, et qui y arrivent un quart d'heure ou une demi-heure avant nous. Jean a parlé; moi, j'ai écouté. A neuf heures nous sommes partis de là pour aller au parc où il y a toujours ²⁵ de la musique entre neuf heures et demie et dix heures du soir le mardi et le jeudi. Nous sommes sortis du parc à dix heures un quart, mais il a sonné onze heures moins un quart quand je suis arrivé chez moi.

239. Résumé. Nous dînons; quand; et les autres; Jean me dit; la montre; les deux pendules; la table au café; nos amis; Jean, moi; le parc; sorti.

240. Oral Drill. 1. What time is it? Is it noon? 2. It's half past twelve. 3. No, it's a quarter of one. 4. Are you not hungry? 5. Yes, we will dine together at one. 6. Are you thirsty? 7. No, but I am hungry. 8. Where will you be this afternoon? 9. At the store at two o'clock. 10. At this store or that store? 11. At one of these stores. 12. I shall also be at church. 13. When? At half past four or five? 14. No, at six or seven. 15. When does one dine? 16. At my aunt's house? 17. One dines there at eleven o'clock. 18. No, one dines there at twelve o'clock. 19. Where did you go at nine o'clock? 20. I went to your house at 10:20. 21. That is astonishing. Is your watch fast? 22. No, it is fast. 23. I went there before half past ten. 24. Listen to this! 25. At what time do you eat in this café? 26. Look at that clock! 27. It's a quarter past one. 28. That clock is slow. 29. It's 1:20! 30. No, it's 1:30! 31. Shall we have milk? 32. Yes, and we'll have cakes also. 33. These cakes are good. 34. And this coffee? 35. This coffee is good, that coffee is not good.

II

241.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Are you not hungry? | Est-ce que vous n'avez pas faim? |
| 2. Yes, I'm hungry. What time is it? | Oui, j'ai faim. Quelle heure est-il? |
| 3. It's half past seven. One is always hungry at that hour | Il est sept heures et demie. On a toujours faim à cette heure-là |
| 4. It is less late than that. It's only ten minutes after six | Il est moins tard que cela. Il est seulement six heures dix |
| 5. Your watch is wrong | Votre montre marche mal |
| 6. I have a clock there which is not slow. It is fast | J'ai une pendule là qui ne retarde pas. Elle avance |
| 7. Well! We'll look at this clock. Three o'clock? Four? Five? | Eh bien! Nous regarderons cette pendule! Trois heures? Quatre heures? Cinq heures? |
| 8. Twenty-six minutes of eight! | Huit heures moins vingt-six minutes! |
| 9. Yes, <i>I</i> breakfasted before noon. <i>I</i> 'm hungry | Oui, j'ai déjeuné avant midi, moi. J'ai faim |
| 10. And <i>I</i> am thirsty. We'll dine at the café. One dines very well there. We've been there once already, on Monday of this week | Et moi, j'ai soif. Nous dînerons au café. On y dîne très bien. Nous y avons été déjà une fois, le lundi de cette semaine-ci |
| 11. And your brother, where is he this evening? | Et votre frère, où est-il ce soir? |
| 12. He dines at nine o'clock with one of his employees. He will arrive at the café only between eleven and twelve o'clock | Il dîne à neuf heures avec un de ses employés. Il arrivera au café seulement entre onze heures et minuit |
| 13. But what time is it now? Look at your watch. A quarter of eight already! We shall dine late this evening | Mais quelle heure est-il maintenant? Regardez votre montre. Huit heures moins un quart déjà! Nous dînerons tard ce soir |
| 14. No, my watch is five or ten minutes fast | Non, ma montre avance cinq ou dix minutes |

242. Conversation. 1. At what hour do you dine Wednesdays? 2. At what hour do people dine on Sunday? 3. What time is it by your watch? 4. Have you a clock at your house? 5. Does this clock go right? 6. Is that clock slow or is this clock fast? 7. At what time did you dine at the café? 8. If you are thirsty, what do you order? 9. How much did the milk cost which you ordered? 10. At what time did you arrive at the café and at what time did you leave?

243. Theme. John and I have often been at the café together Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays. We breakfast sometimes at half past eight and sometimes at nine, or a quarter of nine. When I arrive at John's house at a quarter past eight, he always says to me: "It is not a quarter past 5 eight already! Your watch is fast!" He looks at his watch, once, twice, three times; then he says: "This watch is fast also." We look at his clocks. He has two clocks in his room. It is twenty minutes past eight now on one clock, on the other it is half past seven. John says: "This clock is 10 always fast, that clock is not fast. It runs well. It is only half past seven by that clock. At twenty-five minutes past eight we will breakfast together." I answer him: "Listen to this, John! Our watches and this clock here are not slow. They are not fast. It is nearly half past eight now. That 15 clock which you are looking at is not running!"

244. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

I am hungry.

I shall be thirsty.

B. Count from 1 to 12.

C. 1. Tell the time by minutes from noon to 12:10.
2. Tell the time by quarters from noon to midnight. 3. Tell the time by minutes from 10:50 to 11.

D. Students ask in French such questions as: 'What time is it?' 'At what time are you going there?' 'At what time do you dine?' Other students answer them.

25. VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON [vēt sēkjēm]

Review

I

245. 1. He has had. 2. She has been. 3. We shall have. 4. You will be. 5. In buying, selling and building. 6. Having bought, sold and built. 7. Buy, sell and build! 8. Having said, being seen. 9. For having had. 10. Without having been. 11. Will you be? 12. We shall have. 13. After having had. 14. Without coming. 15. Having departed. 16. Having come. 17. Have you had? 18. Has one been? 19. Will they be? 20. Will they have? 21. It is he. 22. Is it I? 23. It is they (*m.*). 24. It is for them (*f.*). 25. At whose house? 26. At his house. 27. At her house. 28. At my house. 29. His sister and he. 30. Her brother and I. 31. She and he. 32. Who? he? 33. Who? I? 34. It is they (*m.*). 35. It is they (*f.*). 36. Who smokes? he or she? 37. One speaks to them. 38. We speak with them. 39. Who came, he or I? 40. Pay this bill. 41. What time is it? 42. It's noon. 43. It's midnight. 44. It's seven o'clock. 45. It's half past eight. 46. It's a quarter past nine. 47. It's eleven twenty. 48. It's five twenty-five. 49. This watch is slow. 50. Look at that clock. 51. Are you not hungry? 52. I am thirsty. 53. We are not hungry. 54. He is not thirsty. 55. He has had some soup. 56. Have you had any vegetables? 57. We drank together. 58. I saw him. 59. He has not been seen. 60. People saw him. 61. Who drank? 62. Have you had any vegetables? 63. Has the cake been sold? 64. This afternoon. 65. These watches. 66. We listened to those ladies. 67. Early this evening. 68. Look at that man. 69. Don't forget this bill! 70. Pay those bills! 71. Listen to this! 72. We listened to that. 73. He has been behind those men.

74. These clocks are fast, and those clocks are slow. 75. He has been here three times.

II

246. 1. Who will be hungry, you or he? 2. We shall be thirsty, he and I. 3. We have been together seven hours to-day. 4. You came there before noon and you left finally at midnight. 5. This clock is slow, and that clock is fast. 6. My coat arrived only at nine o'clock this morning. 7. It is so pretty, that watch! 8. Listen to this! If you are hungry at eight or at half past eight this evening, go with me to the café. 9. The ladies will be there only at nine o'clock this time. 10. Will he drink another glass of milk or has he already drunk enough? 11. One is not hungry at midnight, if one has dined well and drunk two or three glasses of milk at ten o'clock. 12. Have they smoked cigars and cigarettes or a pipe this evening? 13. Your watch runs badly; it is fast; it is not seven o'clock yet. 14. If the coachman drives me there, I shall be at church early this morning. 15. Where will the lady be this afternoon? 16. I said to her that I often lose my handkerchiefs in coming out of church. 17. He finally went with me to the tobacconist's to buy this box of matches for us this morning. 18. We heard this music in the park with much pleasure this afternoon. 19. Not having seen him near the church, I went to his house. 20. Not being alone this evening, I cannot speak with them (*m.*). 21. This meat is good, but this cake and these vegetables are not so good. 22. We saw many people listening to the music near the church every day. 23. Isn't it astonishing? This man paid this bill. 24. Look at that! He is behind those ladies! 25. Not having been at my school, he does not speak this language well.

26. VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON [vêť sizjem]

LES MÉTIERS

I

247. A. The French have no form corresponding to *John's*, *the maid's*; they say *of John*, *of the maid* (§ 89):

C'est la maison de Jean, It is John's house

C'est la chambre de la bonne, It is the maid's room

B. When we say *the book is John's* (belongs to John); *it is the man's* (belongs to the man); *it is mine* (belongs to me), etc., the French say *the book is to John*, *it is to me*, etc.

Le livre est à moi, The book is mine (belongs to me)

Ces livres sont à cet homme-là, These books belong to that man

C. The French say *to whom* for *whose*?

À qui est ceci? À moi, Whose is this? Mine

248. *Some* before a noun = *of the* (see § 123). If the verb is negative, *the* is omitted (see p. 50, Note 1):

Il a des parents, He has relatives

Il n'a pas de parents, He has no relatives

249. Present Indicative of *faire* [feir], *to make*, *do*:

je fais [fe], I make

(tu fais [fe], thou makest)

il fait [fe], he makes

nous faisons [fəz], we make

vous faites [fet], you make

ils font [fɔ̃], they make

250.

VOCABULARY

le boucher [buʃe], butcher

le boulanger [bulɑ̃ʒe], baker

la course [kurs], errand

l'épicier [lepisiɛ], grocer

hier [je:r], yesterday

le menuisier [mənɥizje], cabinet
maker, carpenter

le métier [metje], trade

obliger [ɔbliʒe], to oblige

l'ouvrier [luvrie], workman

ouvrir [uvri:r], to open

penser [pɑ̃se], to think

poser [poze], to place

pourquoi [purkwa], why

prier [prie], to beg
 la question [kestjɔ̃], question
 savoir [savwaʁ], to know
 le sucre [sykr], sugar

le thé [te], tea
 travailler [travaje], to work
 voici¹ [vwasi], here is, here are

251.

DRILL

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. This is John's; that is Mary's | Ceci est à Jean; cela est à Marie |
| 2. That is mine; this is ours | Cela est à moi; ceci est à nous |
| 3. That is his; this is hers | Cela est à lui; ceci est à elle |
| 4. There are no bakers | Il n'y a pas de boulangers |
| 5. Whose is this tea? | À qui est ce thé? |
| 6. They have no sugar | Ils n'ont pas de sucre |
| 7. There is no grocer here | Il n'y a pas d'épicier ici |
| 8. Whose is this coat? | À qui est cet habit? |
| 9. It is John's; it is mine | Il est à Jean; il est à moi |
| 10. Some sugar and no tea | Du sucre et pas de thé |
| 11. The workmen make chairs | Les ouvriers font des chaises |
| 12. We don't make hats | Nous ne faisons pas de chapeaux |
| 13. You make lace | Vous faites de la dentelle |
| 14. These cabinet makers make tables | Ces menuisiers font des tables |
| 15. Do you make any? | En faites-vous? |
| 16. We have no bread | Nous n'avons pas de pain |
| 17. These bakers make bread | Ces boulangers font du pain |
| 18. It's their trade, isn't it? | C'est leur métier, n'est-ce pas? |
| 19. This butcher sells meat | Ce boucher vend de la viande |
| 20. We did not sell any | Nous n'en avons pas vendu |

252. Reading. Madame Bertin [bertɛ̃] est allée chez son amie Madame Perrin [perɛ̃]. Elle lui a dit: «J'ai acheté un chapeau de velours chez votre modiste hier.»

Madame Perrin a demandé à Madame Bertin de lui montrer le chapeau.

5

¹ **voici** = **vois!** (*see!*) + **ici** (*here*).

voilà = **vois!** (*see!*) + **là** (*there*).

These words may take a pronoun object, which precedes: **me voici!** *here I am!*; **les voilà!** *there they are!*

«Le voici! Il m'a coûté très cher. Je ne peux pas vous dire combien, parce que j'ai oublié d'en demander le prix à la modiste. La dentelle est plus chère que la soie, qui est très bon marché. J'ai prié la modiste de mettre de la dentelle sur mon chapeau. La dentelle est peut-être moins
10 belle que la soie; qu'en pensez-vous?»



Avez-vous des ouvriers qui travaillent bien?

Madame Perrin n'a pas répondu à la question de son amie. Elle a dit: «Il sera bientôt quatre heures! Mon mari a commandé un pardessus chez son tailleur, et il m'a prié d'aller
15 le chercher cette après-midi. Mais je n'aurai pas le temps d'aller chez le tailleur, parce que j'ai beaucoup de courses à faire.»

Elle est partie. Elle a dit à son cocher de la conduire chez l'épicier. Elle y a acheté du café, du thé, du sucre et
20 de la crème. Elle y a acheté du vin aussi. En France on peut acheter du vin chez l'épicier.

Après avoir commandé tout cela chez l'épicier, elle est allée chez le menuisier. Elle lui a demandé: «Avez-vous des ouvriers qui travaillent bien?» «Nous n'en avons pas qui

ne travaillent pas bien, » lui a-t-il répondu. Elle lui a commandé une chaise pour la chambre de la bonne. Puis elle est sortie de chez le menuisier. De là elle est allée chez le boulanger où elle a acheté du pain et chez le boucher où elle a acheté de la viande.

253. Résumé. Les amies; le chapeau; le prix; la dentelle et la soie; le pardessus; le cocher; l'épicier; le menuisier; la chaise; le boulanger et le boucher.

254. Oral Drill. 1. This is his; that is mine. 2. That is John's; this is Peter's. 3. This coat is Henry's. 4. Whose is this hat? 5. That hat is Mary's. 6. This grocer has no sugar. 7. Whose is that lace? 8. That lace belongs to me. 9. It belongs to her. 10. It does not belong to this lady. 11. This workman is making a table. 12. These workmen make tables. 13. This grocer's wife sells sugar. 14. She sells no tea. 15. She has no coffee. 16. There are no butchers here. 17. There will be no wine on my table. 18. We shall have no ribbons. 19. She will have no silk. 20. Whose chair is this? 21. This chair is not mine. 22. We shall have some coffee, but we shall have no milk. 23. He will have some tea, but he will have no sugar. 24. Do you make bread? 25. We make no bread. 26. What do you do? 27. I have no trade. 28. Is your friend (a) carpenter or (a) grocer? 29. He is (a) baker. 30. Do not put my watch on that table. 31. Why don't you answer these questions? 32. Are these workmen making chairs? 33. We make tables. 34. You make no chairs.

II

255.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Whose is this book? | À qui est ce livre? |
| 2. It's my father's book; no,
it's mine | C'est le livre de mon père; non,
il est à moi |
| 3. What is there in this book? | Qu'est-ce qu'il y a dans ce livre? |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 4. There is the story of Pauline and her friend | Il y a l'histoire de Pauline et de son amie |
| 5. Who is her friend? | Qui est son amie? |
| 6. Her friend is Henriette | Son amie est Henriette |
| 7. What do Pauline and Henriette do? | Que font Pauline et Henriette? |
| 8. Pauline sings and Henriette makes lace | Pauline chante et Henriette fait de la dentelle |
| 9. Why don't you make some? | Pourquoi n'en faites-vous pas? |
| 10. I don't make any, because I don't like to make any | Je n'en fais pas, parce que je n'aime pas à en faire |
| 11. Does Pauline sing well? | Est-ce que Pauline chante bien? |
| 12. No, she sings very badly | Non, elle chante très mal |
| 13. What is on that chair? | Qu'est-ce qui est sur cette chaise? |
| 14. It's a watch | C'est une montre |
| 15. Whose is this watch? | À qui est cette montre? |
| 16. This watch is Henriette's | Cette montre est à Henriette |
| 17. Why has she placed her watch on the chair? | Pourquoi a-t-elle posé sa montre sur la chaise? |
| 18. Because she wants to know the time | Parce qu'elle veut savoir l'heure |
| 19. Why does she want to know that? | Pourquoi veut-elle savoir cela? |
| 20. Because at four o'clock she can sing, and her friend Pauline will be obliged to make lace | Parce qu'à quatre heures elle peut chanter, et son amie Pauline sera obligée de faire de la dentelle |
| 21. It is not their trade | Ce n'est pas leur métier |

256. Conversation. 1. Where did you buy your hat? 2. Will you show me the hat that you bought? 3. How much did it cost you? 4. Is it cheap or dear? 5. At what o'clock will you come to my house? 6. Have you asked your husband to go and get your hat at the milliner's? 7. When you have no sugar, to whose shop do you go to get some? 8. Have you no errands to do this afternoon? 9. Whose is the overcoat that you are looking at, is it yours or is it your brother's? 10. Can one drink tea if one has no sugar?

257. Theme. The French lady bought a beautiful hat at the milliner's. All her friends said to her: "Where is your hat? Oh! the lovely hat! How much did it cost you? Is it cheap or dear? Did you ask the milliner to put on this pretty lace? Look at this beautiful velvet! Our milliner 3 has no velvet so beautiful. Did you wear this hat at church Sunday? Did you hear Pauline, the lady who came from Paris? She sang before the sermon. She sings very well." The French lady listens to all this, but she does not answer her friends' questions. She gives them tea, but she gives 10 them no sugar; she brings them bread, but she brings no butter. What do her friends do? They look at her and they are astonished. They look at the little watch which is there on that chair. Whose watch is it? It does not belong to them, to you, to me. It belongs to the French 15 lady. Her friend, a baker, or butcher, or carpenter, or grocer, gave this pretty watch to her yesterday. When she looks at this watch, there is no sugar, there is no butter, there are no friends for her, there is only her friend!

258. Exercises. A. Answer the questions:

À qui est cela?

À qui est cette maison?

À qui est ce livre?

À qui sont ces chapeaux?

B. Fill the following blanks:

Avez-vous du —?

Est-ce que cet homme a

Avez-vous eu de la —?

de l'—?

Est-ce que votre ami a eu des —?

Answer the questions in the negative.

C. Conjugate:

I do this.

I do not do that.

D. Drill on present indicative of **faire**: § 480, A.

27. VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON [vêť sêťjem]

LE TEMPS — LES SAISONS

I

259. Imperfect Indicative. The imperfect is formed from the *present participle* by dropping the ending *-ant* and adding the endings:

-ais [ɛ]	Cf. the future ending <i>-ai</i> [e].
-ais [ɛ]	
-ait [ɛ]	
-ions [jɔ̃]	
-iez [je]	
-aient [ɛ]	

260. I. donner	II. finir	III. vendre
donn ant	finiss ant	vend ant
je donn ais	je finiss ais	je vend ais
(tu donn ais)	(tu finiss ais)	(tu vend ais)
il donn ait	il finiss ait	il vend ait
nous donn ions	nous finiss ions	nous vend ions
vous donn iez	vous finiss iez	vous vend iez
ils donn aient	ils finiss aient	ils vend aient

Note that the first, second, third singular and the third plural are pronounced alike. Remember the *i* in the endings of the first and second plural; also the *-iss-* in the second conjugation.

261. Infinitive	Present Participle	Imperfect
être, to be	étant [etā]	j'étais [ʒete], etc.
avoir, to have	ayant [eyā]	j'avais ¹ [ʒave], etc.
faire, to make, do	faisant [fəzā]	je faisais [ʒə fəze], etc.
pleuvoir [plœvwa:r], to rain	pleuvant [plœvā]	il pleuvait [il plœve]

¹ Note that the imperfect of *avoir* is irregular (*ayant* ought to give *j'ayais*). Remember, however, that the *endings* are always the same and that the stem *never* changes after the first person singular; so when you know the first person singular you know all the rest of the tense, *even in the case of the irregular verbs*,

262. Use of the Imperfect. The *past indefinite* is the narrative tense, the most frequently used past tense.

The *imperfect* is the descriptive tense, corresponding roughly to the English past in *-ing*, *I was giving*. It is used:

- (1) of an action conceived as continuing in past time, especially when another action takes place during the continuance of the first: *I was walking* (imperfect) *in the garden when I saw* (past indefinite) *him*;
- (2) of customary or repeated action: *I used to give*, *I* (repeatedly, always, usually, etc.) *gave*.

263. Les Saisons:

le printemps [prêtā], spring; **au printemps**, in spring
 l'été [lete] (*m.*), summer; **en été**, in summer
 l'automne [lotān] (*m.*), autumn; **en automne**, in autumn
 l'hiver [live:r] (*m.*), winter; **en hiver**, in winter

264. Note the use of **faire** in expressions relating to the weather:

il fait chaud [ʃo], it's hot
 il faisait froid [frwa], it was cold
 il faisait du vent [vā], it was windy
 il fait beau, il fait beau temps [tā], it's fine (weather)
 il fait mauvais, il fait mauvais temps, the weather is bad
 Quel temps fait-il? How is the weather?

265.

VOCABULARY

admirer [admire], to admire
 l'année [lane] (*f.*), year
 briller [brije], to shine
 le ciel [sjel], sky
 l'éclair [lekle:r] (*m.*), lightning
 la glace [glas], ice
 longtemps [lōtā], a long time
 mauvais [move], bad
 le mois [mwa], month
 la neige [ne:ʒ], snow

le nuage [nya:ʒ], cloud
 ouvert [uve:r], open (*past participle of ouvrir*)
 pendant [pādā], during
 pendant que [pādā kə], while
 la pluie [plyi], rain
 la saison [sezā], season
 le soleil [sole:j], sun
 tomber [tōbe], to fall
 le tonnerre [tōne:r], thunder

266.

DRILL

1. I used to be; you used to be	J'étais; vous étiez
2. He used to have; we used to have	Il avait; nous avions
3. She used to finish; they used to finish	Elle finissait; ils finissaient
4. I was doing; we were doing	Je faisais; nous faisions
5. He was making; you were making	Il faisait; vous faisiez
6. It was hot; it was cold	Il faisait chaud; il faisait froid
7. It was fine weather in summer	Il faisait beau en été
8. It was bad weather in spring	Il faisait mauvais au printemps
9. The sun shines; it was shining	Le soleil brille; il brillait
10. It is windy; it was windy	Il fait du vent; il faisait du vent
11. He used to hear the thunder	Il entendait le tonnerre
12. We used to like the spring	Nous aimions le printemps
13. The flowers were growing	Les fleurs poussaient
14. The flower grows; it was growing	La fleur pousse; elle poussait
15. It is fine weather; it was fine	Il fait beau; il faisait beau
16. Was it bad weather in winter?	Est-ce qu'il faisait mauvais en hiver?
17. Was it hot or cold in autumn?	Faisait-il chaud ou froid en automne?
18. The season was beautiful	La saison était belle
19. It was not raining; it was blowing	Il ne pleuvait pas; il faisait du vent

267. Reading. Voulez-vous aller avec moi dans mon jardin? Nous sommes au printemps: le soleil brille, le ciel est sans nuages, les belles fleurs poussent.

Non, merci, je suis entré dans votre jardin hier. Il ne
 5 faisait pas très chaud, il faisait froid et le soleil ne brillait pas. Il faisait très mauvais temps. Je n'ai pas vu pousser vos belles tulipes; mais n'ayant pas mon pardessus, et étant dans un jardin ouvert à tous les vents pendant qu'il pleu-

vait, — je n'aime pas la pluie — je suis sorti de votre jardin et je n'y entrerai pas aujourd'hui.

10

Moi, je n'ai pas écouté mon ami, parce que j'aime tant mon beau jardin. Pendant qu'il parlait, je suis parti. Je suis entré dans la maison et j'ai laissé la porte ouverte. Il faisait beau. Pendant longtemps j'ai admiré le ciel bleu. Mais bientôt j'ai entendu le tonnerre et j'ai vu des éclairs. Il 15 faisait du vent. N'aimant pas les éclairs, j'ai fermé ma porte.

Ah! il faisait plus beau pendant l'été. C'est toujours la plus belle saison de l'année, s'il ne fait pas trop chaud. Pendant des mois et des mois on laisse les portes et les fenêtres ouvertes; on joue sur l'herbe verte. On n'est pas obligé de 20 travailler, parce que l'école est fermée. Il n'y a pas de glace et il n'y a pas de neige.

Quand j'étais petit j'aimais beaucoup l'automne. J'allais toujours chez ma vieille tante, qui me donnait beaucoup de bonnes choses à manger. J'aimais beaucoup l'hiver aussi, 25 s'il ne faisait pas trop froid. J'aimais à jouer dans la neige et sur la glace. Souvent, pendant que la pluie tombait, je cherchais mon bon ami, et lui, sa sœur, ma sœur et moi nous allions écouter le tonnerre et admirer les éclairs. Quelle bonne saison de l'année!

30

268. Résumé. Au jardin; hier; les tulipes; le pardessus; le vent et la pluie; le temps beau, puis mauvais; l'été à la campagne; chez la tante; l'hiver.

269. Oral Drill. 1. You used to be. 2. We used to have. 3. They used to finish. 4. We were making. 5. He was doing. 6. They are doing. 7. Do this! 8. We don't do that. 9. They used to have. 10. She used to do. 11. Is it hot? 12. It is not cold. 13. Was it not hot? 14. It was not cold. 15. The weather was fine this summer. 16. It was cold this winter. 17. Was the sun not shining? 18. It was windy. 19. Do you like the spring? 20. I used to like it. 21. I did not like the autumn. 22. The season was

not fine. 23. The flowers were not growing. 24. It was bad weather. 25. The sun was shining. 26. Do you hear the thunder? 27. I used to hear the thunder. 28. What do you do during the spring? 29. We were in the country during the summer. 30. After having chosen some flowers, we came. 31. We worked in the garden while the sun was shining. 32. During the winter there is snow and ice. 33. It used to rain in spring. 34. Where were you? 35. I was in the garden. 36. The gardens were open. 37. He used to admire this man. 38. The snow was falling. 39. What were they doing? 40. You were making bread.

II

270.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. What did you use to do during the spring when you were small? | Que faisiez-vous pendant le printemps quand vous étiez petits? |
| 2. We used to call our friends and go to play in the garden, if it did not rain | Nous appelions nos amis et nous allions jouer dans le jardin, s'il ne pleuvait pas |
| 3. What do you do during the summer? | Que faites-vous pendant l'été? |
| 4. After having finished our lessons, we work in the gardens near our house | Après avoir fini nos leçons, nous travaillons dans les jardins près de notre maison |
| 5. Is it cold in summer? | Est-ce qu'il fait froid en été? |
| 6. It is very hot when the sun shines and when the sky is blue, but it is cold when it rains | Il fait très chaud quand le soleil brille et quand le ciel est bleu, mais il fait froid quand il pleut |
| 7. Was it windy yesterday when you left? | Est-ce qu'il faisait du vent hier quand vous êtes parti? |
| 8. It was very fine yesterday for a long time, but later it was less fine because there were clouds | Il faisait très beau hier pendant longtemps, mais plus tard il faisait moins beau parce qu'il y avait des nuages |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 9. What season is it now? | Quelle saison est-ce maintenant? |
| 10. It's autumn. The windows and doors are open often during this season. It is not bad weather | C'est l'automne. Les fenêtres et les portes sont ouvertes souvent pendant cette saison. Il ne fait pas mauvais temps |
| 11. What season was it when you used to go to your old aunt? | Quelle saison était-ce quand vous alliez chez votre vieille tante? |
| 12. It was winter. There was snow and ice, thunder and lightning. We wore woolen clothes. It was very cold every day. We did not like winter very much | C'était l'hiver. Il y avait de la neige et de la glace, du tonnerre et des éclairs. Nous portions des vêtements de laine. Il faisait très froid tous les jours. Nous n'aimions pas beaucoup l'hiver |

271. Conversation. 1. How many seasons are there? 2. Was it hot yesterday, or did it rain? 3. Where were you yesterday? 4. Was the sun shining while you were in the garden? 5. Did you use to leave the doors open when you went out of the house? 6. Did you use to close the door of your garden when you heard the thunder? 7. Was it fine weather during a long time this winter? 8. What did you do during the summer? 9. What did your brothers and sisters do during the autumn? 10. Did you go into the garden during the spring, and what did you do there?

272. Theme. When the school was closed during the summer we were not obliged to work. It was fine weather and the sun shone every day. I used to go to my aunt's house. I used to play in her garden where the beautiful flowers grew. When it rained and when it was windy, I played in the house. My sisters were with me. They did not like to hear the thunder and to see the lightning. In autumn the weather was less fine, it rained often and the sky was not so blue as in summer. We came back to school after this, and during the winter and spring we worked

much. In the afternoon at four o'clock we played a little during an hour or two, when there was not too much snow and ice. But often it was very cold. My sisters did not like the winter much.

273. Exercises. A. Drill on imperfect of **choisir, rencontrer, entendre, saisir, appeler, finir**: § 480, A.

B. Say 'How is the weather?' 'How was the weather?' Answer in as many ways as possible.

28. VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON [vê tytjem]

À LA CAMPAGNE

I

274. Comparison of Adjectives.

Positive: grand, great

Comparative:

(*m. s.*) plus grand, greater

(*f. s.*) plus grande, greater

(*m. pl.*) plus grands, greater

(*f. pl.*) plus grandes, greater

moins grand, less great

moins grande, less great

moins grands, less great

moins grandes, less great

Superlative:

(*m. s.*) le plus grand,¹ greatest

(*f. s.*) la plus grande, greatest

(*m. pl.*) les plus grands, greatest

(*f. pl.*) les plus grandes, greatest

le moins grand, least great

la moins grande, least great

les moins grands, least great

les moins grandes, least great

275. Comparison of Adverbs.

Positive: souvent, often

Comparative: plus souvent, oftener, more often

moins souvent, less often

Superlative: le plus souvent, oftenest, most often

le moins souvent, least often

¹ Note that when the comparative is preceded by an article, it has the same form as the superlative: *the greater = the greatest*.

276.

Exceptions

Adjective: **bon**, good **meilleur**¹ [mejœ:r], better **le meilleur**, best
Adverb: **bien**, well **mieux**¹ [mjø], better **le mieux**, best

277. **aussi grand que** = *as great as*
 aussi souvent que = *as often as*

278.	13	treize [trɛ:z]	17	dix-sept [dis sɛt]
	14	quatorze [katɔ:rz]	18	dix-huit [di zyit]
	15	quinze [kɛ̃:z]	19	dix-neuf [diz nœf]
	16	seize [sɛ:z]	20	vingt [vɛ̃]

279.

VOCABULARY

l'animal [lanimal] (<i>m.</i>), (<i>pl. animaux</i> [animɔ]), animal	moins [mwɛ̃], less, (least)
à travers [a trɑ:vɛ:r], across	l'oiseau [lwazo] (<i>m.</i>), (<i>pl. oiseaux</i>), bird
la campagne [kɑ:pɑ̃], country	le paysan [peizɑ̃], peasant
le champ [ʃɑ̃], field	plus [ply], more, (most)
le cheval [ʃəval], (<i>pl. chevaux</i> [ʃəvo]), horse	possible [pɔsibl], possible
le collègue [kolɛ:ʒ], school	la poussière [pusjɛ:r], dust
le commencement [kɔmɑ̃smɑ̃], beginning	revenir [rəvɛni:r], to come back
la ferme [fɛrm], farm	salir [sali:r], to soil
la fin [fɛ̃], end	les vacances [vakɑ̃:s] (<i>f.</i>), vacation
	la vache [vaʃ], cow
	le village [vila:ʒ], village

280.

DRILL

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. A smaller horse; the smallest horse | Un plus petit cheval; le plus petit cheval |
| 2. A smaller cow; the smallest cow | Une plus petite vache; la plus petite vache |
| 3. A better girl; the best girl | Une meilleure fille; la meilleure fille |
| 4. As good as I; better than I | Aussi bon que moi; meilleur que moi |
| 5. He speaks well; you speak better | Il parle bien; vous parlez mieux |

¹ **meilleur** = *more good*; **mieux** = *in a better manner*.

- | | |
|------------------------------------|--|
| 6. We go oftener; you go oftenest | Nous allons plus souvent; vous allez le plus souvent |
| 7. You go as often as he | Vous allez aussi souvent qu'il |
| 8. We go less often than you | Nous allons moins souvent que vous |
| 9. She is larger than he | Elle est plus grande que lui |
| 10. He is not as large as she | Il n'est pas aussi grand qu'elle |
| 11. You do more than they | Vous faites plus qu'eux |
| 12. They do less than I | Ils font moins que moi |
| 13. I give more of it than he | J'en donne plus que lui |
| 14. We sell less of it than they | Nous en vendons moins qu'eux |
| 15. He has a more beautiful farm | Il a une plus belle ferme |
| 16. The peasant is as good as they | Le paysan est aussi bon qu'eux |
| 17. This horse is blacker | Ce cheval est plus noir |
| 18. Those horses are the blackest | Ces chevaux-là sont les plus noirs |
| 19. This cow is the best | Cette vache est la meilleure |
| 20. Those fields are the largest | Ces champs sont les plus grands |

281. Reading. Quand j'étais au collège j'allais toujours pendant mes vacances d'été chez mon oncle qui avait une ferme près d'un petit village. Ce n'était pas une grande ferme, mais elle était très belle. À la fin de huit ou neuf mois de travail dans mes classes, j'aimais à partir pour les champs ouverts à tous les vents, parce qu'en été il fait plus chaud dans la ville qu'à la campagne. Il y avait beaucoup d'animaux chez mon oncle, et j'allais avec lui aussi souvent que possible voir les chevaux et les vaches. J'aimais mieux les chevaux que les vaches. Le meilleur cheval était un petit noir, un des plus beaux animaux du monde. J'allais souvent sur cet animal à travers les champs. Les paysans l'admiraient beaucoup, et tout le monde demandait à mon oncle: «Voulez-vous vendre ce petit cheval noir?» Mon oncle leur répondait qu'il ne cherchait pas à vendre un cheval qui donnait tant de plaisir aux petits garçons et aux petites filles.



Les paysans l'admiraient beaucoup

Un jour il faisait très mauvais temps; il pleuvait et il faisait très froid. J'étais sur mon petit cheval noir. Je n'avais pas de pardessus. Mais j'étais près de la maison de mon oncle; mon cheval avait faim, et il m'a porté à la ferme en si peu de temps que la pluie et la poussière n'ont pas sali mes vêtements. Je suis descendu de mon bon petit cheval. Je suis entré dans la maison où j'ai trouvé un bon dîner sur la table. J'avais si faim que j'ai mangé beaucoup trop.

25 On fait cela le plus souvent à la campagne, où le beau ciel bleu, le bon vent, le soleil qui brille, les oiseaux qui chantent, vous font manger plus que dans les villes.

Au commencement de l'hiver nous sommes revenus au collège. Il n'y avait pas de poussière à la campagne. Il y

30 en a beaucoup ici. Tout le monde aime mieux la campagne que la ville. Pour moi le plus grand plaisir, c'est de jouer avec les fils des paysans dans la ferme de mon oncle.

282. Résumé. Chez l'oncle; la ferme; les chevaux et les vaches; le meilleur cheval; vendre; le mauvais temps; le dîner; la campagne et la ville.

283. Oral Drill. 1. A bigger farm. 2. The largest farm. 3. The smallest cows. 4. A better farm. 5. This farm is the best. 6. As small as he. 7. Oftener than that. 8. As often as you. 9. He used to do it well. 10. You used to do it better. 11. We did it oftener. 12. You did it oftenest. 13. We went as often as they (*m.*). 14. They did it less often than we. 15. We are not so good as he. 16. We do less than they (*m.*). 17. This man has the most beautiful wife. 18. His daughter is more beautiful. 19. This girl is less beautiful. 20. She is the smallest. 21. This horse is the best. 22. That cow is the whitest. 23. This cow is redder. 24. That field is larger than this field. 25. Which field is largest? 26. They do it well. 27. You do it better. 28. She is better than he. 29. I am the best man. 30. You are not as good as he. 31. This bird sings better than that

bird. 32. The end was better than the beginning. 33. The peasants all came back across the fields. 34. They were soiling their clothes playing in the dust. 35. This school is as good as that school.

II

284.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Whose horse is this? | À qui est ce cheval? |
| 2. He is mine | Il est à moi |
| 3. There is no animal in the world more beautiful than he | Il n'y a pas d'animal au monde plus beau que lui |
| 4. Thanks! Everybody finds him very pretty | Merci! Tout le monde le trouve très joli |
| 5. That does not surprise me | Cela ne m'étonne pas |
| 6. Whose farm is that? | À qui est cette ferme? |
| 7. It belongs to my friend's uncle. Do you want to go with me across the fields? | Elle est à l'oncle de mon ami. Voulez-vous aller avec moi à travers les champs? |
| 8. What beautiful animals! I like horses better than cows | Quels beaux animaux! J'aime mieux les chevaux ¹ que les vaches |
| 9. Everybody likes them better | Tout le monde les aime mieux |
| 10. What beautiful weather! Do you hear the birds (which are) singing? | Quel beau temps! Entendez-vous les oiseaux qui chantent? |
| 11. It's raining. I don't want to soil my clothes. We'll go into the house; we'll find my aunt there perhaps, who will give us (something) to eat | Il pleut. Je ne veux pas salir mes vêtements. Nous entrerons dans la maison; nous y trouverons peut-être ma tante qui nous donnera à manger |
| 12. Don't forget to ask her to give us some milk; I am thirsty | N'oubliez pas de lui demander de nous donner du lait; j'ai soif |

¹ Horses as a class, not *some* horses; therefore, les not des.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 13. It's the best farm in the world, and there is the best milk in the world! | C'est la meilleure ferme du monde, et voilà le meilleur lait du monde! |
| 14. I want to drink a glass of milk also. Will you give us some bread and butter? We are hungry! | Je veux boire un verre de lait aussi. Voulez-vous nous donner du pain et du beurre? Nous avons faim |
| 15. Here is some milk, some bread and some butter! | Voici du lait, du pain et du beurre! |
| 16. Thanks! You are as good as my mother! We are going to come back later this evening | Merci! Vous êtes aussi bonne que ma mère! Nous allons revenir plus tard ce soir |

285. Conversation. 1. Did you use to go to school in the city or in the country? 2. Where were you during your summer vacation? 3. Is it warmer in the city than in the country in summer? 4. Is it as cold in winter? 5. Do your friends go to the country as often as I? 6. Do you like horses (cf. § 284, 8) better than other animals? 7. Why do you like horses the best? 8. When you went to school, which pleasure did you find the greatest? 9. Is the village where you go in summer prettier than the city? 10. Is your father's farm as large as the farm which belongs to the peasant whom you saw yesterday?

286. Theme. While I was going to the farm in the country after ten months of work at school, I met my cousin. He was going to the city. I said to him: "Do you like the city better than the country?" He answered that he went
 5 to the city as often as possible because there were no schools, no churches and no stores in the country. "When the peasants do not work, what do they do? They walk through the fields, they look at the cows and horses of the other peasants. They admire the black horse because he is blacker
 10 than the gray horse; they like the white horse better than the gray horse because he is larger; they find the red cow

handsomer than the white cow, but they find the black cow the best and the largest of all. They ask: Whose farm is this? Is it as large as our farm? Is this white house as pretty as our house? Is it larger or better? After having 15 said this, they walk across the fields to their house. They enter, they eat, they ask if it is hot or cold, if it is bad weather or if the sun shines. After that they work. Yes, my friend, I like the city better."

287. Exercises. A. Fill the following blanks with the positive, comparative and superlative of: 'great,' 'small,' 'white,' 'old,' 'good,' 'beautiful,' first in an ascending comparison (greater, greatest), then in a descending comparison (less great, least great):

1. He is —.

3. They (*m.*) are —.

2. She is —.

4. They (*f.*) are —.

B. Fill the following blanks with the positive, comparative and superlative of: 'well,' 'often,' 'badly,' first ascending, then descending:

1. He works —. 2. They speak —. 3. We choose —.

C. Fill the blanks in A, using *as . . . as*, followed by a disjunctive pronoun: *Il est aussi grand que moi*, etc.

D. (1) Count from 1 to 20; (2) count from 1 to 20 omitting the even numbers; (3) count from 1 to 20 omitting the odd numbers.

E. Drill on *present*, *past indefinite*, *future*, *present participle*, *imperfect* of *vendre*, *choisir*, *arriver*: § 480, C.

29. VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON [vê't nævjem]

LA FAMILLE

I

288. Quel âge avez-vous? *How old are you?*
 J'ai dix ans, *I am ten years old*

289. Il y a, *there is, there are* = ago

Il y a deux ans, *Two years ago*

290.

21 vingt et un [vê te œ]	72 soixante-douze [swasũ:t du:z]
22 vingt-deux [vê't dø]	80 quatre-vingts [katrə vê]
30 trente [trũ:t]	81 quatre-vingt-un [katrə vê œ]
31 trente et un [trũ:t e œ]	82 quatre-vingt-deux [katrə vê dø]
32 trente-deux [trũ:t dø]	90 quatre-vingt-dix [katrə vê dis]
40 quarante [karũ:t]	91 quatre-vingt-onze [katrə vê õ:z]
50 cinquante [sêkũ:t]	100 cent [sã]
60 soixante [swasũ:t]	101 cent un [sã œ]
70 soixante-dix [swasũ:t dis]	200 deux cents [dø sã]
71 soixante et onze [swasũ:t e õ:z]	201 deux cent un [dø sã œ]
	1000 mille [mil] ¹
	2000 deux mille [dø mil]
	1,000,000 un million [mil]õ
	1,000,000,000 un milliard [mil]a:r

NOTE. Peculiarities in the pronunciation and spelling of numerals should be learned gradually.

291. Savoir [savwair], *to know*; sachant [saʃũ], *knowing*;
 su [sy], *known*.

Present indicative:

je sais [se or sɛ], I know	nous savons [savõ], we know
(tu sais [se or sɛ], thou knowest)	vous savez [save], you know
il sait [se or sɛ], he knows	ils savent [sa:v], they know

Imperfect: je savais, etc., I used to know, etc.

Past indefinite: j'ai su, etc.

Future: je saurai [sɔre], etc., I shall know, etc.

¹ Mille is written mil in dates: mil neuf cent vingt, 1920.

292.

VOCABULARY

l'âge [lɑːʒ] (<i>m.</i>), age	le médecin [medsɛ̃], doctor
l'avocat [lavɔka], lawyer	même [mɛːm], same
demeurer [dəmœre], to live	au moins [o mwɛ̃], at least
épouser [epuze], to marry	mort [mɔr], dead; il est—, he died
fiancé [fjāse], fiancé, betrothed	né [ne], born; il est—, he was born
le grand-père [grɑ̃ pɛr], grand-father	le neveu [nɛvø], nephew
la grand'mère [grɑ̃ mɛr], grand-mother	la nièce [njɛs], niece
jeune [ʒœn], young	pourtant [purtɑ̃], however, yet
marié [marje], married	tous les deux [tu le dø], both
	vrai [vrɛ], true

293.

DRILL

1. How old are you?	Quel âge avez-vous?
2. I am 27 years old	J'ai vingt-sept ans
3. How old is your sister?	Quel âge a votre sœur?
4. She is 34 years old	Elle a trente-quatre ans
5. When was he born?	Quand est-il né?
6. I don't know	Je ne sais pas
7. Is he older than I?	Est-il plus vieux que moi?
8. You are younger than he	Vous êtes plus jeune que lui
9. Did he die an hour ago?	Est-ce qu'il est mort il y a une heure?
10. He died two hours ago	Il est mort il y a deux heures
11. Is his sister as young as he?	Est-ce que sa sœur est aussi jeune que lui?
12. She is younger than he	Elle est plus jeune que lui
13. How old is she?	Quel âge a-t-elle?
14. She does not know	Elle ne sait pas
15. I used to know; we know	Je savais; nous savons
16. We used to know; they (<i>f.</i>) know	Nous savions; elles savent
17. You don't know; you used to know	Vous ne savez pas; vous saviez
18. We shall know; we have known	Nous saurons; nous avons su
19. Have they known? will he know?	Ont-ils su? saura-t-il?
20. He knew it ten years ago	Il l'a su il y a dix ans

- 294. Reading.** Ma mère est plus jeune que mon père; mon frère est plus jeune que ma sœur. Mon père a quarante-deux ans. — Quel âge a votre mère? — Elle a trente-huit ans, elle n'est pas aussi jeune que sa sœur, ma tante, qui a
5 seulement trente-trois ans. — Mon oncle, le mari de ma tante, que vous avez vu hier au parc, a cinquante-huit ans. Il était déjà vieux quand il a épousé ma tante. — Quel âge a votre cousine? — Elle a seulement dix-huit ans, mais elle est déjà fiancée. — À qui? — Au neveu du
10 médecin. — À lui! Il est trop vieux pour elle! — Non, il a seulement vingt-huit ans; il avait vingt-quatre ans quand son grand-père est mort il y a quatre ans. — Est-ce vrai? Je ne le savais pas. Je pensais qu'il
15 avait au moins trente et un ans. — Vous saviez qu'il demeurerait chez son grand-père à Chicago, n'est-ce pas? — Non, je ne savais pas cela; on m'a dit que son grand-père et sa grand'mère étaient morts tous les deux.
20 — Le neveu de l'avocat à qui vous avez parlé chez mon oncle était son ami de collège, son meilleur ami. Ils sont allés à Paris ensemble pour y faire leurs études. — J'ai vu la nièce de l'avocat, ou peut-être était-ce sa femme, chez mon cousin le médecin il y a trois jours.
25 — C'est sa nièce; elle est beaucoup trop jeune pour être sa femme. — Pourtant, elle m'a parlé de son mari. — Elle est mariée; elle a épousé un jeune homme qui est revenu de Paris avec mon cousin il y a deux ans. — C'est vrai; votre cousin m'en a parlé hier. Où demeurent-ils? — Ils de-
30 meuraient à Chicago il y a un an, mais ils aiment mieux New-York. Ils y sont allés avec leur fils et leur fille qui sont très jeunes. Cela leur coûtera très cher, et puis ils seront obligés de revenir avant la fin de l'hiver ou le commencement du printemps.



Elle a seulement
dix-huit ans

295. Exercise. Ask and answer the questions:

1. How old are you? 2. How old is his mother? 3. — your father? 4. — her aunt? 5. — our uncle? 6. — my friend? 7. — your grandfather? 8. — his grandmother?

296. Oral Drill. 1. How old is he? 2. He is 32 years old. 3. When was she born? 4. I don't know. 5. I was born 20 years ago. 6. How old are you? 7. I am 21 years old. 8. When did he die? 9. He died ten years ago. 10. He was younger than I. 11. When was he born? 12. He was born 35 years ago. 13. Do you know it? 14. I used to know it. 15. Has he known it? 16. He has known it. 17. When will you know it? 18. I shall know it to-day. 19. I know it is true. 20. How old is she? 21. Who? 22. The girl whom your nephew married.¹ 23. I don't know how old she is. 24. She is 21 years old at least. 25. Did she marry a doctor or a lawyer? 26. Her husband is a lawyer. 27. Did you know she was married? 28. I have known it. 29. We have not known it. 30. Is your grandmother dead? 31. You know very well that she is dead. 32. She died the same day as her niece. 33. I did not know it. 34. Both died the same day. 35. How old were they? 36. The one was 73 and the other 31 years old. 37. Where does the doctor live? 38. He lives at the house of his nephew. 39. Didn't you know that? 40. I knew that very well.

II

297.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. How old are you? | Quel âge avez-vous? |
| 2. I am eighteen years old | J'ai dix-huit ans |
| 3. You are very young | Vous êtes très jeune |
| 4. I am not as young as you, and yet you are already married! | Je ne suis pas aussi jeune que vous, et pourtant vous êtes déjà marié! |
| 5. You are much younger than I | Vous êtes beaucoup plus jeune que moi |

¹ See p. 71, footnote 1.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 6. Do you know how old I am? | Savez-vous l'âge que j'ai? |
| 7. No, I do not know (it) | Non, je ne le sais pas |
| 8. Well, I shall be twenty-one soon. I am much older than you | Eh bien, j'aurai bientôt vingt et un ans. Je suis beaucoup plus vieux que vous |
| 9. My sister is eighteen | Ma sœur a dix-huit ans |
| 10. She is already engaged at the age of eighteen! | Elle est déjà fiancée à l'âge de dix-huit ans! |
| 11. Have you seen her fiancé? | Avez-vous vu son fiancé? |
| 12. He lives at his grandfather's, doesn't he? | Il demeure chez son grand-père, n'est-ce pas? |
| 13. He lives at his grandmother's. His grandfather is dead | Il demeure chez sa grand'mère; son grand-père est mort |
| 14. I didn't know it. When did he die? | Je ne le savais pas. Quand est-ce qu'il est mort? |
| 15. At least two years ago, at the age of eighty-three | Il y a au moins deux ans, à l'âge de quatre-vingt-trois ans |
| 16. My cousin saw his nephew at Chicago. He married the daughter of a poor lawyer | Mon cousin a vu son neveu à Chicago. Il a épousé la fille d'un avocat pauvre |
| 17. I know well who he is. He lives near my aunt, in the same street. She was born the same year as he | Je sais bien qui il est. Il demeure près de ma tante, dans la même rue. Elle est née la même année que lui |
| 18. You surprise me! I didn't know it. Is she as old as that? | Vous m'étonnez! Je ne le savais pas. Est-ce qu'elle est aussi vieille que cela? |
| 19. But, they are only thirty-five years old; you didn't know it? | Mais, ils ont seulement trente-cinq ans; vous ne le saviez-pas? |
| 20. No, that can't be true; he cannot be as young as that. It can't be the same man | Non, cela ne peut pas être vrai; il ne peut pas être aussi jeune que cela. Ce ne peut pas être le même homme |
| 21. It's his other nephew, perhaps, who married the lawyer's daughter | C'est son autre neveu, peut-être, qui a épousé la fille de l'avocat |

298. Conversation. 1. How old are your two brothers and your sister? 2. How old are your father and mother? 3. Who is the youngest of your brothers? 4. When was he born? 5. How old was the grandfather, who lived at your house when he died? 6. Do you know how old I am? 7. Did your uncle know how old your aunt was when he married her? 8. Do you know if she was as young as he, or was she younger? 9. Will you know before long where the doctor lives? 10. When will the lawyer know if these men lived in the same house, or does he know it already?

299. Theme. I used to live in the same house as your cousin thirty or forty years ago. We lived there together; did you not know it? He was not so young as I; he was twenty-two; I was eighteen. You know I am younger than you. He had two sisters: the one was nineteen years old, 5 the other was thirty. If you asked her: "How old are you?" she always answered: "I was twenty-four this summer," or "I shall be twenty-five this winter." But I know now that she was thirty. The smaller sister, who was nineteen, was a very pretty girl. She knew how old her sister was, but I 10 did not know it. I thought she was forty! I begged the pretty sister to walk across the fields with me one day, but she answered that she liked better to be in the house than in the fields when it was raining. The other sister said: "The sun will shine before long; you know that as well 15 as I. Why don't you ask me if I want to walk across the fields with you?"

300. Exercises. A. Count from 1 to 100.

B. Drill on present indicative of *savoir*: § 480, A.

C. Drill on *savoir*: § 480, C.

D. Students ask questions beginning with 'when.' Other students answer them using 'ago.'

30. TRENTIÈME LEÇON [trätjem].

Review

I

301. A. 1. What are you doing? 2. What are they doing? 3. Don't you know that? 4. Don't do that! 5. Whose is this hat? 6. It is mine. 7. It is his. 8. It is theirs. 9. It is hers. 10. Has the baker any bread? 11. He has no bread. 12. Had the grocer any sugar? 13. He had no sugar. 14. Do the carpenters make chairs? 15. They don't make chairs. 16. They don't make any. 17. Do you do errands? 18. We do errands. 19. They do no errands. 20. Did you use to do errands? 21. We did none. 22. You did some. 23. What was he making? 24. Was it hot? 25. It was cold. 26. Was it windy? 27. Do you like the spring? 28. I used to like it. 29. Was it bad weather? 30. It was fine. 31. Was it raining? 32. The sun was shining. 33. Did you see any clouds? 34. We saw no snow. 35. There was thunder and lightning (*plural*). 36. During the summer. 37. After the winter. 38. During the season. 39. Before the autumn. 40. Through the fields. 41. A smaller animal. 42. A larger cow. 43. The biggest horse. 44. The best bird. 45. The red bird. 46. This bird is as large as that bird. 47. It is larger. 48. It is the largest. 49. She was smaller than he. 50. She was as small as I. 51. This field is smaller than that farm. 52. The one is as large as the other. 53. There was much dust. 54. There were no peasants. 55. They used to speak oftener. 56. She knew it as well as he. 57. He lives in the smallest village. 58. He was not as young as I. 59. How old was he? 60. Was she young?

II

302. *B.* 1. Have you no errands to do? 2. I was doing some. 3. Was it raining or was it fine weather? 4. What were you doing while we were finishing our work? 5. During the summer vacation I used to play in the fields. 6. Was it hot, or was it cold, or did it blow during the winter? 7. He died in the little village where he was born. 8. Was he the butcher or the baker? 9. I think he was the doctor or the lawyer, or perhaps the carpenter, but I don't know his trade. 10. Was that Henry's horse? 11. That horse is mine, not his. 12. Why did you use to place that watch on the chair? 13. Because I used to look at it when I did not know what time it was. 14. At what time did you return to school yesterday? 15. If, in making tea, you have no sugar, what do you do? 16. We go across the field to the grocer's in the little village, and we buy some sugar there. 17. Were your clothes soiled by the rain? 18. No, it was not raining in the country. 19. It is fine weather there as often as in the city, or oftener, I think. 20. Do you know if she is twenty years old? 21. I used to think she was more than (*de*)¹ twenty, but she has told me that she will be nineteen this autumn. 22. She is not so young as that! 23. Did you use to answer my questions as well as he? 24. We used to answer your questions at school less badly than the other pupils. 25. Was his niece married, and did she live in the same village as he? 26. She was living there at her grandfather's house when her fiancé, the young lawyer, married the old peasant's daughter. 27. Thirty or forty years ago, I think. 28. I don't know; I prefer (like better) to talk of other things. 29. They are both dead? 30. Yes, ten years ago, at least. 31. The beginning was better than the end.

¹ *de* is used instead of *que* before numerals.

31. TRENTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON [trā:t e ynjem]

LA POSTE

I

303. The Conditional (which tells what *would* be the case under certain conditions) never offers the slightest difficulty even in irregular verbs: drop the *-ai* of the future and add the endings of the imperfect.

I would or should give, etc.
(*Fut.* je donner ai [dɔnɔre]¹)

je donner ais [dɔnɔre]¹
(tu donner ais [dɔnɔre])
il donner ait [dɔnɔre]
nous donner ions [dɔnɔrjɔ]
vous donner iez [dɔnɔrje]
ils donner aient [dɔnɔre]

(je finirai) je finirais, etc.
(je vendrai) je vendrais, etc.

I would or should know, etc.
(*Fut.* je saur ai)

je saur ais
(tu saur ais)
il saur ait
nous saur ions
vous saur iez
ils saur aient

(j'aurai) j'aurais, etc.
(je serai) je serais, etc.

304. Aller*² [ale], *to go*; allant [alɑ̃], *going*; allé [ale], *gone*.

Present indicative: je vais [vɛ]
tu vas [va]
il va [va]

nous allons [alɔ]
vous allez [ale]
ils vont [vɔ]

Imperfect: (from allant) j'allais, etc.

Past indefinite: je suis allé, etc.

Future: j'irai [-e], etc.

Conditional: j'irais [-e], etc.

305. Conditions follow the normal English forms:

If he speaks, I shall speak, S'il parle (*present*), je parlerai (*future*)

If he spoke, I should speak, S'il parlait (*imperfect*), je parlerais (*conditional*)

¹ Note the pronunciation of the endings

² Cf. § 135, note 2.

306.

VOCABULARY

l'adresse [ladres] (f.), the address	le facteur [faktœr], porter, letter-carrier
la boîte [bwat]. box	à gauche [a goʃ], to the left
la boîte aux lettres, the letter-box	heureux [œrø] (f. heureuse [œrø:z]), happy
la carte postale [kart postal], post-card	la lettre [letr], letter
la carte postale illustrée [ilys-tre], picture post-card	le mandat [māda], money-order
le colis postal [køli postal], postal package	la moitié [mwatje], half
à droite [a drwat], to the right	ouvrir [uvri:r], to open
écrire [ekri:r], to write	la poste [pøst], post-office
envoyer [āvwaje], to send; <i>future</i> ,	quelque [kelkə], some
j'enverrai [zāvere], etc.	quelquefois [kelkəfwā], sometimes
	le temps [tā], time
	le timbre [tē:br], stamp

307.

DRILL

1. I am going; I will go	Je vais; j'irai
2. They go; they would go	Ils vont; ils iraient
3. I shall write; I would write	J'écirai; j'écirais
4. We will send; they would send	Nous enverrons; ils enverraient
5. She goes; he would go	Elle va; il irait
6. Would you buy? you will buy	Achèteriez-vous? vous achèterez
7. We would not put; he will not put	Nous ne mettrions pas; il ne mettra pas
8. He will open; she would finish	Il ouvrira; elle finirait
9. He would send a letter	Il enverrait une lettre
10. He will not write letters	Il n'écirira pas de lettres
11. I would not answer him	Je ne lui répondrais pas
12. I will not answer her	Je ne lui répondrai pas
13. Would he have answered?	Aurait-il répondu?
14. They will have answered	Ils auront répondu
15. She will be happy	Elle sera heureuse
16. He would not be happy	Il ne serait pas heureux
17. I will write if he goes there	J'écirai s'il y va

18. He would write if I went

19. If we paid, would you pay?

20. You would be happy, if you
chose them

Il écrirait si j'y allais

Si nous payions, payeriez-vous?

Vous seriez heureux, si vous les
choisissiez

308. Reading. En hiver, quand il fait si froid qu'on ne peut pas sortir, j'aimerais à écrire des lettres du matin au soir, si j'en avais le temps. Si seulement ma
5 sœur, en allant à la campagne, m'avait donné son adresse, je lui écrirais tous les jours deux ou trois lettres au moins. Je lui en
10 écrirais une tout de suite après avoir déjeuné; puis je sortirais, j'irais à la poste, j'irais au premier guichet dans la grande
15 salle, j'achèterais un timbre à quinze centimes, je chercherais la boîte aux lettres, et dans cinq minutes ma lettre partirait. Ma sœur l'aurait dans trois ou quatre heures, elle y
répondrait le même jour, et avant le soir le facteur m'apporterait une lettre de Marie. Ce serait beau! Elle me dirait
20 si la saison est belle à la campagne, si les fleurs poussent, s'il fait froid ou chaud, s'il pleut ou s'il fait beau temps. Et moi, le même soir je lui répondrais, et Pierre lui écrirait une carte postale illustrée, et Henriette lui enverrait un
25 beau livre. Marie nous enverrait aussi des colis postaux — toujours des fleurs. Elle choisirait les plus beaux œillets et les plus belles roses de son jardin, elle les mettrait dans une boîte, et elle écrirait notre adresse sur la boîte. Puis elle irait à la gare, chercherait le guichet à gauche, achèterait des
30 timbres, les payerait, et donnerait son colis postal à l'em-



J'aimerais à écrire des lettres

ployé. Le même jour nous l'aurions, nous l'ouvririons, nous admirerions les belles fleurs, nous demanderions au facteur s'il n'y a pas aussi une lettre ou une carte postale, quelque chose enfin, et il dirait quelquefois oui et quelquefois non. On chercherait dans la boîte, on y trouverait une carte 35 postale illustrée, ou un beau livre ou quelque autre chose. Et tout le monde demanderait: «Que dit Marie?» Et nous serions si heureux — si nous savions son adresse!

309. Résumé. Hiver, lettres; ma sœur, son adresse; à la poste; on répond; facteur; ma sœur dirait; moi, Pierre et Henriette; colis-postal; œillets et roses; ma sœur à la gare; le colis arrive; on cherche; on demande; heureux.

310. Oral Drill. 1. He goes; he would go. 2. They go; we will go. 3. Will you write?; would you write? 4. I do not go; I would not go. 5. They will put; they would put. 6. He would have finished. 7. They will be finished. 8. Would they send?; they will send. 9. He will open; I should choose. 10. Will you sell?; would you sell? 11. At last I will answer him. 12. He would not answer her. 13. Will she be happy at last? 14. Would she not be happy? 15. Will his letter be finished? 16. Would he write her sometimes? 17. Would you sell half of the stamps? 18. Will they send a postal-parcel sometimes? 19. Would you have had the time? 20. She would write her (son) address on the postal-card if she had the time. 21. Would you go to the stamp-window or to the letter-box? 22. The letter-carrier, if he had a money-order, would go to the room on the left. 23. Would she send something, a money-order or a picture-postal? 24. You will go to the window at the right. 25. I would go, if I had time.

II

311.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. I am going to the post-office.
Do you want to go there
with me? | Je vais à la poste. Voulez-vous y
aller avec moi? |
| 2. I would go with pleasure, if
I had (the) time (for it) | J'irais avec plaisir, si j'en avais le
temps |
| 3. It is not late | Il n'est pas tard |
| 4. What are you going to do
at the post-office? | Qu'est-ce que vous allez faire à
la poste? |
| 5. I shall buy some stamps:
12 stamps at 15 centimes,
and 16 stamps at 25 | J'achèterai des timbres: douze
timbres à quinze centimes, et
seize timbres à vingt-cinq |
| 6. I would buy 10 francs'
worth at the same time,
if I had some money | J'en achèterais pour dix francs en
même temps, si j'avais de l'ar-
gent |
| 7. I would give you 10 francs,
if I had enough money;
but I have only 13 or 14
francs. I will give you
half, if you wish | Je vous donnerais dix francs, si
j'avais assez d'argent; mais j'ai
seulement treize ou quatorze
francs. Je vous en donnerai la
moitié, si vous voulez |
| 8. Thank you! Where does
one buy the stamps? | Merci! Où est-ce qu'on achète
les timbres? |
| 9. At the window in the large
room at the right | Au guichet dans la grande salle à
droite |
| 10. I would also write some
postal-cards, if there were
any here | J'écirais aussi quelques cartes
postales, s'il y en avait ici |
| 11. Picture-postals? Ask for
some in the store next
door | Des cartes illustrées? Deman-
dez-en dans le magasin à côté |
| 12. Where is the letter-box? | Où est la boîte aux lettres? |
| 13. Near the windows at the
left | Près des guichets à gauche |
| 14. I would write to my sister,
if I knew her address. I | J'écirais à ma sœur si je savais
son ¹ adresse. Je lui aurais en- |

¹ See § 134, Note.

would have sent her a
postal-parcel also

voyé un colis postal aussi

15. Oh yes! we would some-
times send her money-
orders with our letters

Ah oui! nous lui enverrions
quelquefois des mandats avec
nos lettres

16. And she would answer us
and would tell us how
much pleasure that gives
her

Et elle nous répondrait et nous
dirait combien cela lui fait
plaisir

312. Conversation. 1. How many letters would you write to your friends, if you had time? 2. If you left for Paris, to whom would you give your address? 3. If one had written a letter, where would one go to put it in the letter-box? 4. Where would one buy stamps? 5. How much would one pay for the stamps? 6. If you gave a postal-parcel to the employee, what would that cost? 7. If my sister left for Paris, would you sometimes send her some picture-postals? 8. Who would bring the letters to your house? 9. Whom will you ask for stamps, and where? 10. If the postman had brought you anything, would you give him some money?

313. Theme. We should like to write letters all the time, if our friends answered us immediately. We would write a letter every day; we would go to the post-office, we would ask for some fifteen-centime stamps. After having paid for our stamps, or our postal-cards, we would put the letters or 5 cards in the box and in three minutes they would leave for Chicago. Then we would go to the store beside the post-office and would buy some pretty picture-postals or some good book which we would send to our friends. They would be so happy when the postman would bring the cards or the 10 book. They would say to him "Thank you." Then they would immediately open our letters, or look in our box, because they would be so happy if we had sent them something

which they would like. And they would ask the postman,
 15 if some day he did not bring them something: "Have you not a letter or a postal-package or something for us?"

314. Exercises. A. Conjugate: 'If I go, I shall know';
 'If I knew, I should go.'

B. Drill on conditional of **savoir, aller**: § 480, A.

C. Drill on **aller**: § 480, C.

32. TRENTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON [trãt døzjem]

L'HÔTEL

I

315. Je ne cherche pas, *I do not seek.*

In place of **pas**: for *nothing* put **rien** [rjẽ]
 for *nobody* put **personne** [pɛʁsɔ̃]
 for *never* put **jamais** [ʒamɛ]
 for *no more* put **plus** [ply]
 for *only* put **que** [ke]

Do not omit ne.

Je ne cherche rien, I seek nothing (= I do not seek anything)

Je n'enverrai personne, I shall send nobody (= I shall not send anybody)

Il ne va jamais, He never goes (= He does not ever go)

Il ne cherche plus, He seeks no more (= He does not seek any more)

Je ne sais que cela,¹ I know only that (= I don't know (any more) than that)

¹ Position with *past indefinite* or with complementary infinitive:

Same as **pas (je n'ai pas cherché)**:

rien: Je n'ai **rien** cherché

jamais: Je n'ai **jamais** cherché

plus: Je n'ai **plus** cherché

Same as in English:

personne: Je n'ai cherché **personne**

que: Je ne l'ai trouvé **qu'**après avoir
 cherché

Je ne peux **rien** comprendre

Je ne peux **jamais** comprendre

Je ne peux **plus** comprendre

Je ne peux chercher **personne**

Je ne peux chercher **que** mes amis

316. If these negative words begin the sentence, don't forget **ne**:

Personne n'est venu, Nobody came
Rien n'est arrivé, Nothing arrived

317. If the verb is omitted, **ne** is omitted also:

Qui est là? Personne, Who is there? Nobody
Irez-vous? Jamais!, Will you go? Never!
Qu'avez-vous? Rien!, What have you? Nothing

318. *Some (any)* before a noun = *of the*.

1. If the verb is negative, *the* is omitted (§ 248):

Il n'a pas de chevaux, He has no horses
Il n'a plus de chevaux, He has no more horses

2. If an adjective *precedes* the noun, *the* is omitted:

Il a de bons chevaux, He has good horses
But **Il a des chevaux blancs**, He has white horses

NOTE. According to a decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction, this exception may be ignored: **des bons chevaux** is not incorrect.

319. *In* and *to* = 1. with cities, **à**: **à Paris**.

2. with feminine countries, **en**: **en France**.

3. with masculine countries, **au**: **aux États-Unis**.

Je suis à Paris (en France, aux États-Unis), I am in Paris (in France, in the United States)

Je vais à Paris (en France, aux États-Unis), I am going to Paris (to France, to the United States)

320. **Pouvoir** [puvwair], *to be able*; **pouvant** [puvã]; **pu** [py].

Present:

je peux [pø], I can

(**tu peux** [pø], thou canst)

il peut [pø], he can

nous pouvons [puvõ], we can

vous pouvez [puve], you can

ils peuvent [pœ:v], they can

Imperfect: je pouvais, etc.

Past indefinite: j'ai pu, etc.

Future: je pourrai [-e], etc.

Conditional: je pourrais [-e], etc.

321. If the student will make careful note of the following he will be greatly aided in learning irregular verbs: In the *present indicative* and the *present subjunctive* the first, second, third singular and the third plural have the same stem (**peu-**), the first and second plural have the stem of the *present participle* (**pouv-**). The consonant which follows the stem of the third plural (**peu-**) is that which precedes the ending (**-ant**) of the present participle (**-v**):

je **peux** gives the stem of the third plural: ils **peu-**;

pouvant gives the consonant: ils **peuv-**;

-ent (*unpronounced*) is the regular ending: ils **peuvent**.

From now on irregular forms of the irregular verbs will be italicized; the student ought to know all other forms without learning them. In **pouvoir** he should have to learn only **pu**, **je peux** and **je pourrai**.

322. Prendre [prāidr], *to take*; **prenant** [prənā]; **pris** [pri].

Present: je prends [prā]
(tu prends [prā])
il prend [prā]

nous prenons [prənō]
vous prenez [prəne]
ils prennent [pren]

Imperfect: je prenais, etc.

Past indefinite: j'ai pris, etc.

Future: je prendrai [-e], etc.

Conditional: je prendrais [-e], etc.

323. Like **prendre** conjugate:

apprendre [aprāidr], *to learn*

comprendre [kōprāidr], *to understand*

324

VOCABULARY

l'Amérique [lamerik] (<i>f.</i>), America	l'hôtel [lotel] (<i>m.</i>), hotel
assis [asi], seated	le lit [li], bed
attendre [atā:dr], to wait, wait for	le numéro [nymero], number
brosser [brōse], to brush	Parisien [parizjē] (<i>f.</i> Parisienne [parizjen]), Parisian
cirer [sire], to black (shoes)	poli [pōli], polite
comme [kōm], how, as, like	le pourboire [purbwar], tip
dernier [dernje] (<i>f.</i> dernière [der-nje:r], last	premier [prēmje] (<i>f.</i> première [promje:r]), first
deuxième [døzjem], second	le rez-de-chaussée ¹ [re də ʒose], the ground-floor
Les États-Unis [le zeta zyni] (<i>m.</i>), United States	le soulier [sulje], shoe
l'étranger [letrāʒe] (<i>m.</i>) foreigner or foreign country	

325.

DRILL

1. Take; we have taken	Prenez; nous avons pris
2. He understood; we understood	Il a compris; nous avons compris
3. Do you learn? have you learned?	Apprenez-vous? avez-vous appris?
4. Have you been able? will he be able?	Avez-vous pu? pourra-t-il?
5. You used to be able; he is able	Vous pouviez; il peut
6. Would you be able? I was able	Pourriez-vous? je pouvais
7. He never understands; he never will be able to understand	Il ne comprend jamais; il ne pourra jamais comprendre
8. We understood nothing; nobody learned	Nous n'avons rien compris; personne n'a appris
9. We understand nobody; nobody has learned	Nous ne comprenons personne; personne n'a appris
10. Nobody used to understand us	Personne ne nous comprenait

¹ The *ground-floor* = *rez-de-chaussée*; *second floor* = *le premier*; *third floor* = *le deuxième*.

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| 11. We used to understand no-body | Nous ne comprenions personne |
| 12. I understood only two words | Je n'ai compris que deux mots |
| 13. He would not be able to learn anything | Il ne pourrait rien apprendre |
| 14. Don't take any shoes! | Ne prenez pas de souliers! |
| 15. I have taken some fine clothing | J'ai pris de beaux vêtements |
| 16. Have you been able to understand? | Avez-vous pu comprendre? |
| 17. I have never understood | Je n'ai jamais compris |
| 18. Would you be able to do it? | Pourriez-vous le faire? |
| 19. He will no longer be able to go | Il ne pourra plus aller |
| 20. We no longer took any lessons | Nous ne prenions plus de leçons |

326. Reading. Je ne suis arrivé qu'aujourd'hui à Paris. Je n'y suis encore jamais venu. Je suis né à Chicago, aux États-Unis, et je ne suis sorti de cette ville qu'une ou deux fois. Je n'ai pas pu trouver mes amis à la gare. Personne n'y est venu. Qu'est-ce que je vais faire maintenant? Sortir seul? Je pourrais perdre mon chemin. Attendre? Personne n'arrivera. Ah! voilà! Je vais appeler un cocher. Non — il y a un grand hôtel tout près. J'irai là. Je ne parlerai que le français. Je ne parlerai plus un mot d'anglais en France.

10 Aux États-Unis on ne parle que très peu le français. Ici je pourrai le parler tout le temps. On me prendra pour un Français. On m'a tout de suite pris pour un Français, quand je suis arrivé en France. Le garçon à l'hôtel me prenait pour un Parisien. Il m'a dit qu'il n'avait jamais entendu

15 un meilleur français et que c'était étonnant comme il me comprenait. Il a tout compris! Je lui ai donné un bon cigare parce qu'il me prenait pour un Parisien. Il m'a dit qu'on ne me prendrait jamais pour un Américain, si je ne fumais pas de si bons cigares, et si je ne portais pas de si

beaux vêtements. Je lui ai donné un deuxième cigare —
comme je n'avais pas d'argent sur moi je n'ai pas pu lui
donner le pourboire qu'il attendait. 20

Plus tard la femme de chambre qui faisait mon lit m'a dit
aussi que personne ne parlait le français comme moi. Je
pense que c'est vrai. En brossant mon pardessus elle m'a dit: 25
«Vous avez de bons tailleurs en Amérique qui font de très
beaux vêtements. Je n'en ai jamais vu de plus beaux.
Est-ce en Amérique que vous avez appris le français? Vous
comprenez si bien! Nous n'apprenons pas si bien l'anglais à
Paris.» Je lui ai donné un petit pourboire parce qu'elle 30
était si polie. En m'apportant mes souliers cirés, elle m'a
dit: «Vous avez là de très bons souliers, monsieur. On ne
fait pas d'aussi bons souliers à Paris qu'aux États-Unis.
Où les Américains ont-ils appris à faire des souliers si beaux?
Nous ne faisons rien de si bon ici.» Autre pourboire! Si 35
elle avait pu dire encore de si belles choses sur les Américains
elle m'aurait pris mon dernier centime.

327. Résumé. Paris, Chicago; à la gare; sortir, attendre;
cocher, hôtel; Américain ou Parisien; garçon, cigares; femme
de chambre; vêtements, souliers; pourboires.

328. Oral Drill. 1. You are taking; we took nothing.
2. They have been able; they will be able. 3. Do you no
longer understand?; nobody understands. 4. Did you take;
I was taking. 5. We took; they take. 6. They never used
to understand; they understand nobody. 7. They are able;
they have been able. 8. He would no longer be able; he
used to be able. 9. We never understand; I understand
nothing. 10. Nobody understood; I used to understand
nobody. 11. Have you learned it? 12. I was learning
nothing. 13. We are learning nothing. 14. He will no
longer be able to wait. 15. Would you be able to wait?
16. I have learned nothing. 17. Have you been able to
brush my clothes? 18. I was not able to black your shoes.

19. Have you never had rooms on the (au) ground-floor?
 20. The chambermaid has not been able to make the bed.
 21. Nobody would desire a room on the second floor, if the waiters could find a good room on the ground-floor. 22. These foreigners are not able to find the hotel. 23. They used to live at Chicago, in the United States. 24. The polite waiter blacks their shoes. 25. If he brushes their clothes, they give him a tip. 26. The Parisian lives on the second floor, number 37. 27. He is seated near the door.

II

329.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. At last I am in Paris! Who will be able to tell me where I shall find a good hotel? | Enfin, je suis à Paris! Qui pourra me dire où je trouverai un bon hôtel? |
| 2. Do you want a carriage, sir? | Monsieur désire une voiture? |
| 3. Yes. Take these packages and put this trunk in the carriage. I have no other baggage | Oui. Prenez ces colis et mettez cette malle dans la voiture. Je n'ai pas d'autres bagages |
| 4. You are a stranger, perhaps, sir? | Monsieur est étranger peut-être? |
| 5. Yes, I have never been in Paris. Is there a hotel near the depot, where they talk English? I no longer talk the French language very well | Oui, je n'ai jamais été à Paris. Est-ce qu'il y a un hôtel près de la gare, où on parle anglais? Je ne parle plus très bien la langue française |
| 6. You might stop at the English Hotel, sir. There are never any Frenchmen there. You will be able to talk English with everybody. Nobody talks French there | Monsieur pourrait descendre à l'hôtel des Anglais. Il n'y a jamais de Français là. Vous pourrez parler anglais avec tout le monde. Personne n'y parle français |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 7. Nobody? | Personne? |
| 8. No, sir, never. They talk only English there | Non, monsieur, jamais. On n'y parle que l'anglais |
| 9. Good! As I talk only a very poor French, I will go to that hotel | Bon! Comme je ne parle qu'un très mauvais français, j'irai à cet hôtel |
| 10. There's the hotel, sir! | Voilà l'hôtel, monsieur! |
| 11. There's your tip! Waiter, take my packages! I have only those two. Have you a nice room on the ground-floor? | Voilà votre pourboire! Garçon, prenez mes colis! Je n'ai que ces deux-là. Avez-vous une belle chambre au rez-de-chaussée? |
| 12. There are no more | Il n'y en a plus |
| 13. On the second floor? | Au premier? |
| 14. Nothing. Everything is taken. But there is nobody in number 30, on the third floor | Rien. Tout est pris. Mais il n'y a personne dans le numéro trente au deuxième |
| 15. I'll take it. I'll go up at once | Je le prendrai. Je monterai tout de suite |
| 16. You desire nothing, sir? | Monsieur ne désire rien? |
| 17. No — nothing | Non — rien |
| 18. There are your packages. I was not able to carry your trunk | Voilà vos colis. Je n'ai pas pu porter votre malle |
| 19. Where is the waiter that I saw seated in front of the door? | Où est le garçon que j'ai vu assis devant la porte? |
| 20. He is not there any longer. There is nobody downstairs | Il n'y est plus. Il n'y a personne en bas |
| 21. All right! Brush that overcoat and black my shoes! | Bon! Brossez ce pardessus et cirez mes souliers! |

330. Conversation. 1. Have you been at Paris only once or twice? 2. Were your friends able to find you at the station? 3. Will you never be able to find your way, if you go out alone? 4. Have you been able to find nobody at

the hotel? 5. If you speak French in the United States, do the Americans take you for a Parisian? 6. Did people take you for a Frenchman immediately when you arrived in France? 7. Did the waiters at the hotels understand you? 8. Did nobody understand that you were (an) American? 9. Why have you not been able to give tips to the waiters? 10. What did the chambermaid say to you?

331. Theme. I have learned the French language at Paris. There are beautiful things to see at Paris. I have not been in France very long. I live in the United States. After Sunday, I shall no longer be in Paris; I shall go to the
5 country for two or three days, and then I shall leave for Chicago. There are good hotels in America. In Chicago I will go to a big hotel where they have only French waiters. I will speak only French with them. The French waiters never speak English to travelers who know French, even if
10 they speak it only very little. In France, I never talked English; I talked only French at Paris. In the United States, I will never talk English at the hotel. After having learned French so well, I shall talk only French. I will say nothing in English. Here at Paris the waiters all under-
15 stand me. Nobody takes me for an American. I talk French to everybody; I talk English to nobody. It is astonishing how all the waiters and chambermaids have always understood me. They never take me for an American. They always ask me where I learned French, because they
20 have never heard a foreigner talk so well. Nothing is difficult for me. Nobody talks better than I.

332. Exercises. A. Use 'nothing,' 'nobody,' 'never,' 'no more,' 'only,' with the present and past indefinite of **chercher, trouver, choisir**.

B. Fill the following blanks: 'He has no —,' 'He has small —,' 'He has white —,' 'He has no more —,' using the appropriate words among the following:

flower	cow	time	tea	nephew
horse	letter	watch	shoe	niece

C. Drill on present indicative and conditional of **pouvoir** and **prendre**: § 480, A.

D. Drill on **pouvoir** and **prendre**: § 480, C.

33. TRENTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON [trã:t trwazjem]

LE MAGASIN

I

333. **Imperative**=indicative with pronoun omitted (§ 53):

vous donnez, you give; **donnez!** give!
nous donnons, we give; **donnons!** let us give!
nous finissons, we finish; **finissons!** let us finish!

334. With the *positive* imperative, pronoun-objects *follow* in violation of the rule stated in § 170.

Cherchez-le! Look for him! (*Note the hyphen*)
Donnez-lui! Give (to) him or her!
Trouvons-les! Let us find them!

NOTE. With the positive imperative **moi** is used instead of **me**.

Cherchez-moi! Look for me!

335. With the *negative* imperative the regular rules are followed:

Ne le cherchez pas! Do not look for him!
Ne me cherchez pas! Do not look for me!

336. To form *adverbs* from adjectives:

1. If the masculine ends in a *vowel*, add **-ment** [mã] to it:

poli, polite; **poliment**, politely; **vrai**, true; **vraiment**, truly

2. If the masculine ends in a *consonant*, add **-ment** to the feminine:

certain (<i>f. certaine</i>), certain	
certainement , certainly	
naturel (<i>f. naturelle</i>), natural	
naturellement , naturally	
heureux (<i>f. heureuse</i>), happy	
heureusement , happily	

337. **Venir*** [vəniʁ], *to come*; **venant** [vənɑ̃], **venu** [vəny].

Present:	je viens [vjɛ̃]	nous venons [vənɔ̃]
	tu viens [vjɛ̃]	vous venez [vəne]
	il vient [vjɛ̃]	ils viennent [vjɛ̃b]

Imperfect: *je venais*, etc.

Past indefinite: *je suis venu*, etc. (See § 135.)

Future: *je viendrai* [vjɛ̃dʁe], etc.

Conditional: *je viendrais* [vjɛ̃dʁe], etc.

NOTE. Compounds of **venir** (e.g. **revenir*** [rəvəniʁ], *to come back*, *return*) and **tenir** [təniʁ] and its compounds are conjugated like **venir**.

338.

VOCABULARY

l'achat [laʃa] (<i>m.</i>), purchase	à la mode [a la mɔd], fashion- able
certain [sɛʁtɛ̃] (<i>f. certaine</i> [sɛʁtɛn]), certain	naturel [natyʁɛl] (<i>f. naturelle</i>), natural
clair [klɛʁ], light (<i>of colors</i>)	la paille [pa:j], straw
le client [kliɑ̃], customer	la paire [pɛʁ], pair
la couleur [kulœʁ], color	le paquet [pakɛ], package
envelopper [ɑ̃vɛlɔpɛ], to wrap up	passer [pase], to pass
essayer [ɛsɛje], to try	s'il vous plaît [sil vu plɛ], if you please
foncé [fɔ̃se], dark (<i>of colors</i>)	la qualité [kalite], quality
le gant [gɑ̃], glove	tenir [təniʁ], to hold
jaune [ʒon], yellow	il vaut [vo], it is worth
le mètre [mɛʁtʁ], meter, yard	

339.

DRILL

- | | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. Look! let us look! | Regardez! regardons! |
| 2. Let us choose! choose! | Choisissons! choisissez! |
| 3. Don't come! let us come! | Ne venez pas! venons! |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 4. In coming; in finishing | En venant; en finissant |
| 5. She has chosen; she has come | Elle a choisi; elle est venue |
| 6. They will return; they would hold | Ils reviendront; ils tiendraient |
| 7. Show me that! don't show them that! | Montrez-moi cela! ne leur montrez pas cela! |
| 8. Make your purchases! don't make them! | Faites vos achats! ne les faites pas! |
| 9. Let us make them! let us not make them! | Faisons-les! ne les faisons pas! |
| 10. Show me some gloves! don't show them! | Montrez-moi des gants! ne les montrez pas! |
| 11. He will hold that easily | Il tiendra cela facilement |
| 12. Wrap them! don't wrap them! | Enveloppez-les! ne les enveloppez pas! |
| 13. Hold this dress! don't hold it! | Tenez cette robe! ne la tenez pas! |
| 14. In holding; having held | En tenant; ayant tenu |
| 15. He would hold certainly | Il tiendrait certainement |
| 16. He will come, truly | Il viendra, vraiment |
| 17. Give me my package! don't forget it! | Donnez-moi mon paquet! ne l'oubliez pas! |
| 18. Let's buy this ribbon! let's not buy it! | Achetons ce ruban! ne l'achetons pas! |
| 19. In holding them; we have held it | En les tenant; nous l'avons tenu |
| 20. Let us hold him! let's not hold them! | Tenons-le! ne les tenons pas! |

340. Reading. Une lettre venant de Paris! De qui vient-elle? De mon fiancé! Il vient passer quelques semaines ici — chez nous, naturellement. Un mois — quatre semaines seulement! C'est peu! Il viendra par le train de midi et demi. Je vais tout de suite en ville faire des achats: quelques rubans, des gants jaunes ou gris, un chapeau de paille, une robe blanche. Venez, mes sœurs! Allons au magasin faire nos achats! Notre cousin vient ici aujourd'hui!

- Il viendra à midi! Allons chez la modiste! Regardons les
10 chapeaux de paille! Achetons nous quelque chose de joli —
des chapeaux à la mode! Choisissons-les avec de belles
fleurs et des rubans blancs! Et ne les prenons pas s'ils ne
sont pas à la mode! Voici
une voiture! Prenons-la!
15 Mais où est le cocher? Appelez-le! Ah! le voici! Mon-
tons! Enfin, voilà le magasin!
Descendons! Entrons! Ache-
tons nos gants et nos ru-
20 bans ici! Regardez donc
ces beaux rubans! Montrez-
nous ces rubans, s'il vous
plaît! Apportez-en de jaunes
et de blancs! N'en apportez
25 pas de rouges! En avez-vous
de plus foncés? Ne les ap-
portez pas, s'ils ne sont pas
plus foncés que les rubans que
je tiens ici! Cherchez-moi
30 une meilleure qualité! Et ne
me montrez plus de ces ru-
bans bon marché! Montrez-
moi les plus beaux! Il vaut
combien le mètre, ce ruban blanc? Quatre francs! c'est cher.
35 Donnez-moi trois mètres de ce ruban-ci, et ne me donnez
qu'un demi-mètre de ce ruban-là. Montrez-nous mainte-
nant des robes blanches! Cette robe-ci est très jolie. Pre-
nons-la, n'est-ce pas, mes sœurs? Elle est venue de Paris,
peut-être? Oui, vraiment? Ces autres sont très jolies, aussi.
40 Prenons-en pour toutes les trois, n'est-ce pas? Elles sont
très à la mode, naturellement? Les robes qui viennent de
Paris (le) sont toujours, certainement. Enveloppez-les!
Vous les enverrez tout de suite. Autrement, ne les envoyez



Cette robe-ci est très jolie

pas! Si elles ne sont pas venues à onze heures, je n'en veux pas. Ce matin, avant onze heures — ne l'oubliez pas! 45 Oubliez-le — et vous perdrez certainement un bon client!

341. Résumé. Visite du fiancé; train; faire des achats; chapeaux à la mode; voiture; cocher; magasin; rubans, couleurs; qualité, prix; robes, de Paris; enveloppez, envoyez; oublier, client perdu.

342. Oral Drill. 1. Pass!; let us choose! 2. Don't come!; return! 3. In returning, in choosing. 4. We have finished; he has come. 5. You will not come; he would hold. 6. Would they come?; will they hold? 7. Do it!; don't do it! 8. In holding them; having held him. 9. I was holding him; I will hold her. 10. Certainly they will hold. 11. Naturally he holds them. 12. Will he come, truly? 13. Forget it!; don't forget it! 14. Let us not forget it!; let's forget it! 15. Will you return? I shall not return. 16. Wrap this package!; don't wrap it! 17. Give them some gloves! 18. Don't give him the straw hat! 19. Show her this dress! 20. Don't send her these dresses! 21. Choose this dark color!; don't choose it! 22. We choose the light color; let us choose it! 23. Show her some hats, if you please! 24. How much is this silk worth? 25. It is worth only two francs a (the) yard; buy it! 26. Those yellow gloves are not fashionable; don't buy them! 27. This dark yellow is certainly pretty. 28. I like this dress; wrap it up! 29. Send it to my address, please! 30. Choose this quality! 31. Don't show me those gloves; they are certainly too light.

II

343.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. I am going to make some purchases. Come with me! | Je vais faire des achats. Venez avec moi! |
| 2. Naturally I would come with pleasure, if I could return early | Naturellement je viendrais avec plaisir, si je pouvais revenir de bonne heure |
| 3. You will be able to easily. There is a cabby coming! Let's get in! | Vous le pourrez facilement. Voilà un cocher qui vient! Montons! |
| 4. Here's the store! Come! Let's go in! | Voici le magasin! Venez! Entrons! |
| 5. Show us some gloves, please! | Montrez-nous des gants, s'il vous plaît! |
| 6. Of what color do you wish them? | De quelle couleur les désirez-vous? |
| 7. Show us some yellow ones and some gray ones! | Montrez-nous des jaunes et des gris! |
| 8. Try on this pair! | Essayez cette paire-ci! |
| 9. Yes, let's put them on! No — let's not put them on! Show me another pair, please, but do not show me so dark a color! | Oui, mettons-les! Non — ne les mettons pas! Montrez-moi une autre paire, s'il vous plaît, mais ne me montrez pas une couleur si foncée! |
| 10. The pair that I hold here is very pretty. These gloves come from Paris | La paire que je tiens ici est très jolie. Ces gants viennent de Paris |
| 11. But gloves coming from Paris will be very dear, won't they? | Mais des gants venant de Paris seront très chers, n'est-ce pas? |
| 12. Naturally they are a little dearer. But I know that this pair is worth more than the others | Naturellement ils sont un peu plus chers. Mais je sais que cette paire vaut plus que les autres |
| 13. Give me that pair! | Donnez-moi cette paire-là! |
| 14. You will not easily find any | Vous n'en trouverez pas facile- |

cheaper. This color is
really fine

ment à meilleur marché.
Cette couleur est vraiment
belle

15. That's true. Only don't
give me that first pair!
Give me the others!
Wrap them up and send
them to my address!
To-day, don't forget it!

C'est vrai. Seulement, ne me
donnez pas cette première paire!
Donnez-moi les autres! En-
veloppez-les et envoyez-les à
mon adresse! Aujourd'hui, ne
l'oubliez pas!

16. Certainly, madam! I will
send your packages im-
mediately

Certainement, madame! J'en-
verrai vos paquets tout de
suite

17. Now let us look at the straw
hats! Let us choose one
of the prettiest!

Maintenant, regardons les cha-
peaux de paille! Choisissons
un des plus jolis!

18. Here is one of very good
quality and very fashion-
able! Put it on!

En voici un de très bonne qualité
et très à la mode! Mettez-le!

19. Good! Let us take it!

Bon! Prenons-le!

344. Conversation. 1. By what train did your cousin come? 2. You are going to the store; what will you buy? 3. What did you buy at the milliner's? 4. Do you always take a carriage when you go to make purchases? 5. At what time will your cousins come to your house? 6. That is very pretty ribbon; how much is it worth a yard? 7. Have I shown you my beautiful white dresses which came from Paris? 8. Have you taken the yellow gloves or the white ones? 9. Are those hats which your sisters chose fashionable? 10. Will you send me before ten o'clock the packages which you have wrapped up?

345. Theme. At last I have returned home (to my house). Let's enter the living-room! Where is the maid? Will she never come? I thought certainly that she would come immediately. Five years ago, when I returned from Paris, she always used to come to bring me my letters. She used 5

to hold my horse while I was getting down. But truly, she is not so young as she was (it). Marie! come here! Bring me my letters! Thank you! Ah! a letter coming from Paris! My cousin is coming to pass some weeks with us.
 10 She will come certainly to-day; by the four o'clock train (train of four o'clock), naturally. My sister, come here! Let's go to the store! Let's make some purchases, a straw hat for me and a pair of gloves of a dark color for me. Let's buy some beautiful flowers for my cousin! Choose them for
 15 me! But if you find fashionable dresses in the store, don't look at them; if you find pretty hats, don't buy them! Let's make our purchases and come back! Wait! What time is it? Three o'clock already! We cannot arrive there easily before half past three. Let's get into the carriage!

346. Exercises. A. Fill the following blanks: '— it!' 'Do not — it!' 'Let us — it!' 'Let us not — them!' using the verbs:

send finish learn build wait for

B. 'Give —!' 'Let us give —!' Fill the blanks with the following pronouns, when possible both direct and indirect:

him them (f.) her you
 me us them (m.)

C. Form adverbs from the following adjectives:

great open happy certain
 polite true natural

D. Drill on present indicative of **venir**, **tenir**, **revenir**:
 § 480, A.

E. Drill on **venir** and **tenir**: § 480, D.

34. TRENTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON [trā:t katriem]

I

347. Les Mois de l'Année :

janvier [ʒāvje], <i>January</i>	juillet [ʒyije], <i>July</i>
février [fevrie], <i>February</i>	août [u], <i>August</i>
mars [mars], <i>March</i>	septembre [septā:br], <i>September</i>
avril [avril], <i>April</i>	octobre [ɔktabr], <i>October</i>
mai [me], <i>May</i>	novembre [nɔvā:br], <i>November</i>
juin [ʒyē], <i>June</i>	décembre [desā:br], <i>December</i>

NOTE 1. le premier janvier (mars, etc.), *January 1*But le deux (etc.) janvier, *January 2, etc.*¹

NOTE 2. The French in speaking of the months often prefix le mois de to the name:

au mois d'avril (= en avril), in April

J'y vais au mois de mai, I am going there in May

348. Combien de temps = *how long*.Depuis combien de temps est-il ici ? } How long has he been here?
Depuis quand est-il ici ? }

Il est ici depuis longtemps, He has been here a long time

349. Faire [fɛr], *to do, make*; *faisant* [fəzā], *fait* [fɛ].

<i>Present:</i>	je fais [fɛ]	nous faisons [fəzā]
	(tu fais [fɛ])	vous faites [fɛt]
	il fait [fɛ]	ils font [fɔ]

Imperfect: je faisais [fəzɛ], etc.*Past indefinite:* j'ai fait [fɛ], etc.*Future:* je ferai [fɛrɛ], etc.*Conditional:* je ferais [fɛrɛ], etc.350. Dire [dir], *to say*; *disant* [dizā], *dit* [di].

<i>Present:</i>	je dis [di]	nous disons [dizā]
	(tu dis [di])	vous dites [dit]
	il dit [di]	ils disent [diz]

¹ For the use of *mil* in dates, see p. 160, footnote 1.

Imperfect: je disais, etc.

Past indefinite: j'ai dit, etc.

Future: je dirai [-e], etc.

Conditional: je dirais [-e], etc.

351.

VOCABULARY

absolu [apsɔly], absolute	le jour de l'an [ʒur də lā], New Year's Day
amuser [amyze], to amuse	joyeux [ʒwajø] (f. joyeuse [ʒwajø:z]), joyous, merry
l'anniversaire [lanivɛrsɛ:r] (m.), birthday	jusqu'à [ʒyska], up to, until
le cadeau [kado], present	le Noël [nœl], Christmas
commencer [kɔmɑ̃se], to begin	le Pâques [pa:k], Easter
demain [dɔmɛ̃], to-morrow	le temps [tɑ̃], time, weather
depuis [dəpyi], since, from	la visite [vizit], visit
la fête [fɛ:t], holiday	

352.

DRILL

1. I was doing; he will do	Je faisais; il fera
2. They are doing; they would do	Ils font; ils feraient
3. She was saying; they say	Elle disait; ils disent
4. Say it! don't do it!	Dites-le! ne le faites pas!
5. Do it! don't say it!	Faites-le! ne le dites pas!
6. One used to say; one says	On disait; on dit
7. Let us say it! let us not do it!	Disons-le! ne le faisons pas!
8. We say it; we do not do it	Nous le disons; nous ne le faisons pas
9. Are you doing it? you say it	Le faites-vous? vous le dites
10. Have you done it? I have said it	L'avez-vous fait? je l'ai dit
11. They used to do it; we used to say it	Ils le faisaient; nous le disions
12. I will do it; I said it	Je le ferai; je l'ai dit
13. What were you doing? what was he saying?	Qu'est-ce que vous faisiez? que disait-il?

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| 14. Since January; until July | Depuis janvier; jusqu'à juillet |
| 15. How long, tell! since when? | Combien de temps, dites! depuis combien de temps? |
| 16. Since yesterday; until to-morrow | Depuis hier; jusqu'à demain |
| 17. What do you do in summer? | Qu'est-ce que vous faites en été? |
| 18. What will you do this winter? | Qu'est-ce que vous ferez cet hiver? |
| 19. I would do it before fall | Je le ferais avant l'automne |
| 20. Tell me, when will spring come? | Dites-moi quand viendra le printemps? |

353. Reading. *Jean:* Voilà le cinq août arrivé! L'école est ouverte depuis le trente juillet. Les élèves reviennent tous les jours. En voilà un! Bonjour, Pierre! Depuis quand êtes-vous ici?

— *Pierre:* Je suis en ville depuis le trente et un juillet. 5

— *Jean:* Que faites-vous ici?

— *Pierre:* Je ne fais rien encore. Je ferai un peu d'anglais cette année-ci. Je parlerai poliment aux maîtres, j'apprendrai mes leçons, je jouerai — et j'attendrai les vacances de Noël qui heureusement commencent le vingt décembre cette 10 année-ci.

— *Jean:* Je ferai absolument la même chose. Où avez-vous passé vos vacances d'été?

Pierre: Je suis allé chez mes parents à la campagne le trente et un mai — non, le premier juin. 15

— *Jean:* Qu'est-ce que vous faites d'amusant à la campagne au printemps et en été, depuis le mois de mai jusqu'au mois d'août?

— *Pierre:* Nous ne faisons absolument rien d'amusant — toujours du travail! Mais dites-moi donc, qu'est-ce que 20 vous faisiez? Où avez-vous été à Noël? Qu'est-ce qu'on fait en ville pendant les vacances d'hiver, depuis Noël jusqu'au jour de l'an, et après, pendant tout l'hiver?



Je suis allé à la campagne

— *Jean*: Comme il fait très froid en janvier — et en février, et en mars aussi quelquefois — nous faisons peu de visites. ²⁵ Nos amis arrivent chez nous à Noël et disent «Joyeux Noël» et nous leur disons la même chose.

— *Pierre*: Et le jour de l'an, que faites-vous?

— *Jean*: Le jour de l'an nous faisons des visites depuis le matin jusqu'au soir. 30

— *Pierre*: Et que dites-vous à vos amis?

— *Jean*: Nous leur disons «Bonne Année» et ils nous disent «Bonne Année.»

— *Pierre*: Est-ce qu'ils vous font des cadeaux?

— *Jean*: Oui, et nous leur faisons des cadeaux aussi. On ³⁵ m'a fait cadeau d'un Shakespeare!

— *Pierre*: Hm! Mes parents me font de ces cadeaux-là aussi! Ils m'ont fait revenir chez nous pour les fêtes de Pâques. Mais ils m'ont fait travailler tout le temps: samedi, dimanche, et le jour de mon anniversaire! 40

354. Résumé. L'école; Pierre; maîtres, leçons, vacances de Noël; vacances d'été, parents, campagne, travail; Noël en ville; jour de l'an; cadeaux; Shakespeare; fêtes de Pâques, travail, anniversaire.

355. Oral Drill. 1. What are you doing? 2. What will they do? 3. He would do it. 4. She will do nothing. 5. Let us do it! 6. Do not say that! 7. What were we saying? 8. They say nothing. 9. Nobody has done it. 10. They do nothing. 11. Don't tell that to anybody! 12. I would never do that. 13. One says it. 14. Does one do that? 15. People used to do that. 16. We say that. 17. We used to do it. 18. People used to do it. 19. What will you do? 20. We have done nothing. 21. We no longer do it. 22. Nobody will do it. 23. I have never done it. 24. When will you do it? 25. Don't do it! 26. Let us do that! 27. We have done it. 28. I would not do it. 29. What were you saying? 30. I was not saying anything. 31. Nobody said

that. 32. You will do that certainly. 33. Since when have you lived here? 34. I have lived here since February. 35. How long will you live here? 36. I shall live here till April or May. 37. From Christmas till New Year's Day. 38. What will you do New Year's Day? 39. I shall make many visits. 40. What were you doing at Christmas? 41. We made presents to our friends. 42. What will you do in spring? 43. I will do nothing till summer vacation. 44. What do you do in autumn and winter? 45. I do nothing.

II

356.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. My dear friend (f.), since when have you been in town, and for how long? | Ma chère amie, depuis quand êtes-vous en ville, et pour combien de temps? |
| 2. I have been here since the 16th of April, and I shall only leave on the 31st of July. And since when have you been here? | Je suis ici depuis le seize avril, et je ne partirai que le trente et un juillet. Et depuis quand êtes-vous ici? |
| 3. I have been here since January, since New Year's Day. I love the city in winter and spring | Je suis ici depuis janvier, depuis le jour de l'an. J'aime la ville en hiver et au printemps |
| 4. But you will pass the summer in the country, won't you? | Mais vous passerez l'été à la campagne, n'est-ce pas? |
| 5. Yes, from the month of June until the month of August or September | Oui, depuis le mois de juin jusqu'au mois d'août ou de septembre |
| 6. But, tell me, what are you doing now? | Mais, dites-moi, que faites-vous maintenant? |
| 7. My husband and I make visits at our friends', and our friends make some at our home | Mon mari et moi nous faisons des visites chez nos amis, et nos amis en font chez nous |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 8. And that amuses you a great deal? | Et cela vous amuse beaucoup? |
| 9. No, it is always the same thing, naturally, from the first of the month till the last, and from morning till night | Non, c'est toujours la même chose, naturellement, depuis le premier du mois jusqu'au dernier, et depuis le matin jusqu'au soir |
| 10. What do you say to them, and what do they say to you? | Qu'est-ce que vous leur dites, et qu'est-ce qu'ils vous disent? |
| 11. We say "Good-day" to them on coming to their house, and they say "Good evening" to us in departing from our house | Nous leur disons «Bonjour» en venant chez eux, et eux ils nous disent «Bonsoir» en partant (§ 392) de chez nous |
| 12. Tell me, you will make us a visit before starting for the country, won't you? Make us a visit to-morrow! | Dites-moi, vous nous ferez une visite avant de partir pour la campagne, n'est-ce pas? Faites-nous une visite demain! |
| 13. I would do it with pleasure, if I could find time for it, but all my time is taken since last Sunday till Friday. But I will make you a visit Saturday evening | Je le ferais avec plaisir, si je pouvais en trouver le temps, mais tout mon temps est pris depuis dimanche dernier jusqu'à vendredi. Mais je vous ferai une visite samedi soir |
| 14. Thank you, do so! Don't forget it! | Merci, faites-le! Ne l'oubliez pas! |

357. Conversation. 1. Since when have you been at school? 2. How long will you be in town? 3. When will the Christmas vacation come this year? 4. Will you go to the country this summer? 5. How long will you be at your relatives' home? 6. What are you doing, what have you done, and what will you do at school? 7. Tell me, what were the pupils doing yesterday? 8. What were you saying to your friends New Year's Day? 9. Did Peter tell John that he would come to his house at Easter? 10. Do your relatives

say Merry Christmas and Happy New Year to you during the holidays of December and January?

358. Theme. The pupils are coming back to (the) school after the summer vacation. My friend John has come back already. He returns early, the thirty-first of August or the first of September. I have been here 5 since yesterday. The master always asks us if we will do more work this year. We always say that we would do more work, if we had more time. "Yes," says the professor, "you say that you will do that, but very often you do nothing at (the) school. I know that you do nothing; you 10 wait for the Christmas vacation! When Christmas comes, you say 'Merry Christmas and Happy New Year' to me and you go home. What do you do during the vacation? Nothing! At Easter? Nothing! Tell me: are you doing something to-day? Did you do anything (something) 15 yesterday? Will you do anything to-morrow? No! my pupils do nothing, they have done nothing, they will do nothing. You pass all your time without doing anything (*rien*). Tell me: what have you done to-day? You say nothing. I understand: you have done nothing, and you are 20 doing nothing!"

359. Exercises. A. Form adverbs from the following adjectives:

absolute

last

joyous

B. What are the months of the year?

C. Give the dates from January 1 to January 31.

D. Students ask and answer the question 'How long have you been here?'

E. Drill on present indicative of **faire** and **dire**: § 480, A.

F. Drill on **faire** and **dire**: § 480, D.

35. TRENTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON [trãrt sêkjem]

Review

I

360. 1. He will go. 2. He goes. 3. Were you going?
4. Would you go? 5. They go. 6. She would be. 7. You shall have it. 8. We should not be. 9. We should send them.
10. Would you write it? 11. Will you have the time?
12. Who would choose it? 13. Will she be happy?
14. Would he open it? 15. I should not answer. 16. Would he go? 17. I will send them. 18. Will he write, if I go?
19. If we went, would they write? 20. Take them! 21. I have taken it. 22. Do they learn? 23. They were learning.
24. Have you been able? 25. Nobody used to be able.
26. They are able. 27. Having been able. 28. Being taken.
29. We never take. 30. I no longer understand.
31. I used to understand nothing. 32. Nobody has taken it.
33. He used to take only that. 34. Will you be able to do it?
35. We learn only this. 36. She understood nobody. 37. He was seated.
38. She will be seated. 39. We have good beds. 40. Are you waiting for some strangers?
41. There are no Americans here. 42. Make your purchases!
43. We are making them. 44. Let us make them! 45. Do not hold it!
46. Will they come, truly? 47. Wrap that! 48. Do not wrap it!
49. Will you come? 50. Let us finish! 51. Let us buy them!
52. Let us not hold them! 53. Have you held it? 54. Let's hold them!
55. He is in France. 56. They make them in Paris. 57. Show me the road!
58. Do it! 59. Don't say it! 60. In doing it. 61. Having done it.
62. They say it. 63. Do you say it? 64. Let us say it! 65. Since June.
66. Till July. 67. Tell me where? 68. Since when? 69. He used to learn it.
70. She used to do it. 71. That is done. 72. What do you

say to that? 73. Until to-morrow. 74. Since yesterday. 75. I will go this winter. 76. She came this spring. 77. She comes in summer. 78. She goes this autumn.

II

361. 1. Would you go to the post-office? 2. I would send my letter, if I had some stamps. 3. She would write a card and send it to my address. 4. I would put them in the mail-box. 5. You send (the) half of the money-orders from this window. 6. She will send him some picture-cards to-morrow. 7. Will you answer me sometimes? 8. They will send us some postal-parcels. 9. The letter-carrier would never bring the money-order. 10. The foreigners used to understand me easily. 11. The chambermaid was making the bed on (à) the ground-floor. 12. As I was saying to you, I am going to the United States. 13. Brush my coat and black my shoes! 14. We never do that in America. 15. The waiter took the tip. 16. We don't understand which number you desire. 17. Where was he seated? 18. He used to answer me very politely. 19. He used to do nothing. 20. We no longer do that. 21. Who did it? Nobody. 22. What was he doing? Nothing. 23. Naturally, I would no longer do that. 24. He was telling me that there were only two rooms on the second floor. 25. Since when have you been here? 26. I have been here since yesterday. 27. Will you be here until to-morrow? 28. I shall not make any purchases. 29. Truly, this color is too dark, and that color is too light. 30. Come back! Tell me how long you will be there! 31. Send them to my house, but don't wrap them! 32. They used to make straw hats. 33. The customers never take those dark gloves. 34. How much is a yard worth? 35. Send me these packages, if you please. 36. That has never been fashionable. 37. Where did you pass your summer vacation? 38. It (ce) will be my birthday to-morrow. 39. The last holiday will come at Easter.

40. Nobody makes me beautiful presents. 41. I shall make no visits this month. 42. Merry Christmas and Happy New Year!

36. TRENTE-SIXIÈME LEÇON [trãit sizjem]

LE THÉÂTRE

I

362. Agreement of Past Participles :

1. If the verb is conjugated with **avoir**, the participle agrees with the direct object *when the object precedes* (order: object; verb; participle: page 71, footnote 1):

Quelle *leçon* avez-vous *apprise*? What lesson have you learned?

(Other wise no agreement (order: verb; participle; object):

J'ai *appris* la *leçon*, I have learned the lesson

2. If the verb is conjugated with **être** (§ 135), the participle agrees with the *subject* (§ 135, note 1):

Elle est venue, She has come

Elles sont aimées, They are loved

363. The French do not say *I am hungry, I am thirsty, I am right*, etc.; they say *I have hunger, I have thirst, I have reason*, etc. (see § 232):

J'ai **chaud** [ʃo], I am hot

Il a **froid** [frwa], He is cold

Vous avez **raison** [rezõ], You are right

Nous avons **tort** [tõ:r], We are wrong

Ils ont **peur** [pø:r], They are afraid (they have fear)

Elle a **besoin de** [bøzwẽ dø] cela, She needs that (she has need of that)

364. When *what = that which*, use:

Subject, ce qui [sø ki]: Je sais *ce qui* est ici, I know what is here

Object, ce que [sø kə]: Je sais *ce que* vous avez, I know what you have

365. Lire [li:r], *to read*; **lisant** [lizã], **lu** [ly].

<i>Present:</i>	je lis [li]	nous lisons [lizõ]
	(tu lis [li])	vous lisez [lize]
	il lit [li]	ils lisent [li:z]

Imperfect: **je lisais**, etc.

Past indefinite: **j'ai lu**, etc.

Future: **je lirai** [-e], etc.

Conditional: **je lirais** [-e], etc.

366. Écrire [ekri:r], *to write*; **écrivant** [ekrivã], **écrit** [ekri].

<i>Present:</i>	j'écris [ekri]	nous écrivons [ekrivõ]
	(tu écris [ekri])	vous écrivez [ekrive]
	il écrit [ekri]	ils écrivent [ekri:v]

Imperfect: **j'écrivais**, etc.

Past indefinite: **j'ai écrit**, etc.

Future: **j'écirai** [-e], etc.

Conditional: **j'écirais** [-e], etc.

367. VOCABULARY

attraper [atrape], <i>to catch</i>	lent [lã], <i>slow</i>
l'automobile [lotomobil] (<i>f.</i>), <i>auto-</i> <i>mobile</i>	la nuit [nyi], <i>night</i>
bête [bet], <i>stupid</i>	la pièce [pjes], <i>play</i>
le chauffeur [ʃofœ:r], <i>chauffeur</i>	le pied [pje]; <i>foot</i> ; à—, <i>on foot</i>
le cinéma [sinema], <i>moving-pic-</i> <i>ture show</i>	le rhume [rym], <i>cold (malady)</i>
clair [kle:r], <i>clear</i>	la scène [sen], <i>stage</i>
la comédie [kõmedi], <i>comedy</i>	le taxi [taksi], <i>taxicab</i>
drôle [dro:l], <i>funny</i>	le théâtre [teãtr], <i>theater</i>
	la tragédie [trãzedi], <i>tragedy</i>
	vite [vit], <i>quickly, fast</i>

368. DRILL

1. Am I wrong? You are right!	Est-ce que j'ai tort? Vous avez raison
2. Who is afraid? We are cold	Qui a peur? Nous avons froid
3. Are you reading? We are writing	Lisez-vous? Nous écrivons
4. Was she reading? She was writing	Lisait-elle? Elle écrivait

- | | |
|--|---|
| 5. Would you read? I would write | Est-ce que vous liriez? J'écrirais |
| 6. Let us read! Do not write! | Lisons! N'écrivez pas! |
| 7. Do you know what I have written? | Savez-vous ce que j'ai écrit? |
| 8. I need the books that I have read | J'ai besoin des livres que j'ai lus |
| 9. What ladies have you seen? | Quelles dames avez-vous vues? |
| 10. We saw two old ladies | Nous avons vu deux vieilles dames |
| 11. We read what is amusing | Nous lisons ce qui est amusant |
| 12. I know what I wish | Je sais ce que je veux |
| 13. What you say is stupid | Ce que vous dites est bête |
| 14. Did you write the letter that I have read? | Avez-vous écrit la lettre que j'ai lue? |
| 15. Are you afraid of this man? | Avez-vous peur de cet homme? |
| 16. I have read the play; it is well written | J'ai lu la pièce; elle est bien écrite |
| 17. Write to me! don't write to her! | Écrivez-moi! ne lui écrivez pas! |
| 18. He will read the books you have read | Il lira les livres que vous avez lus |
| 19. That's what he desired | Voilà ce qu'il désirait |
| 20. You are wrong and I am right | Vous avez tort et j'ai raison |

369. Reading. Je vais très souvent au cinéma et au théâtre, et je pense que j'ai raison. Ce qui serait bête, ce serait de demeurer dans une grande ville sans y aller aussi souvent que possible. On aurait tort, vraiment. Je prends toujours de bonnes places pour ma femme et moi. En haut 5 nous aurions chaud, ce que je n'aime pas; en bas nous aurions froid près des fenêtres, ce que ma femme n'aime pas. Et nous avons peur aussi d'attraper un rhume. Nous sommes donc obligés de prendre les meilleures places près de la scène. Cela coûte cher, mais j'ai assez d'argent. Il est vrai que 10 nous ne prenons jamais de taxi pour aller au théâtre; nous

y allons à pied. On n'a qu'à partir de bonne heure ou à marcher un peu vite pour arriver à temps. On a tort d'arriver quand la pièce est commencée, comme beaucoup le
15 font. On ne commence qu'à huit heures un quart; on ne finit le plus souvent qu'à onze heures et demie, ou à minuit. On donne quelquefois des tragédies, ce qui n'est pas très amusant, quelquefois des comédies. Voilà ce que j'aime! Je n'aime pas les pièces de Shakespeare. Je les ai vues
20 toutes au théâtre, et je les ai lues un peu il y a quarante ans. C'est un peu vieux, tout cela. On dit qu'il les a écrites il y a très longtemps. On écrivait comme cela au temps de Shakespeare, mais nous n'écrivons plus comme lui aujourd'hui. On écrit clairement maintenant. Ces vieilles
25 pièces ne sont pas bien écrites; quand je les ai lues je les ai trouvées très difficiles à comprendre. Je ne les ai jamais finies. Et puis, vous savez, ce sont des tragédies, ce qui ne me fait pas plaisir. Je ne les ai plus lues depuis. J'ai tort peut-être, mais je ne les ai jamais aimées, les tragédies. Un
30 beau jeune homme épouse une belle jeune fille, et on ne les trouvera jamais heureux à la fin de la pièce! Vous les avez lues aussi, je pense, ces vieilles pièces. Nous les lisions à l'école—parce que Shakespeare les a écrites.—Je ne les ai jamais lues depuis. Nous en écrivons de beaucoup meilleures
35 aujourd'hui. Ce que je trouve très drôle, c'est que ma femme lisait encore ces pièces cet hiver. Elle les a trouvées assez amusantes — seulement, après les avoir finies, elle avait toujours peur de sortir la nuit. Nous ne voulons donc voir que des pièces vraiment amusantes. Une petite comédie
40 bien écrite, voilà ce que je demande après avoir travaillé du matin jusqu'au soir!

370. Résumé. Aller au théâtre; raison ou tort; places; chaud, froid, rhume; cher; taxi; arriver à temps, arriver tard; commencer et finir; tragédies, comédies; lu Shakespeare, vieux; pièces bien écrites, claires, difficiles; tragédies, jeune

homme et jeune fille; à l'école, depuis; ma femme, elle a peur; pièces amusantes, après le travail.

371. Oral Drill. 1. Do you need this? 2. I need that. 3. Read this book. 4. I have read those plays. 5. What plays have you read? 6. I was reading your letters. 7. Are the letters well written? 8. We have not read them. 9. Will you read them? 10. I have read the letters that you wrote. 11. You were wrong. 12. No, I am always right. 13. Do you need your pens? 14. Have you found her? 15. She is lost. 16. She has lost her sister. 17. We know what they wish. 18. What is done is done. 19. Are you warm? 20. He was wrong. 21. We have written to them. 22. The plays are well played. 23. They played badly. 24. She has caught a cold. 25. Those men will be caught. 26. The automobiles will go fast. 27. I am not afraid of the taxicabs. 28. They go more slowly. 29. Are you afraid to go on foot? 30. The play that I saw was very funny. 31. She knew what she was writing. 32. She was reading a tragedy on the stage. 33. I have seen, read and written plays. 34. There are the letters that I have read or written.

II

372.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Will you come to the park with me? | Est-ce que vous viendrez au parc avec moi? |
| 2. No, I shall go to the theater this evening — or to the moving-pictures. I am always cold in the park | Non, j'irai au théâtre ce soir — ou au cinéma. J'ai toujours froid au parc |
| 3. You are right. You will be warm at the theater. But what are you reading, eh? | Vous avez raison. Vous aurez chaud au théâtre. Mais que lisez-vous donc? |
| 4. I was reading the play that they gave yesterday evening | Je lisais la pièce qu'on a donnée hier soir |

5. I have not read it. Who wrote it? *Moi je ne l'ai pas lue. Qui est-ce qui l'a écrite?*
6. It's the play that you saw Wednesday, and which you found so pretty *C'est la pièce que vous avez vue mercredi, et que vous avez trouvée si jolie*
7. You are wrong — it's another play that they played Wednesday *Vous avez tort — c'est une autre pièce qu'on a jouée mercredi*
8. Do read it! It's two of my friends who wrote it. All that they write is pretty. It's they who wrote the comedy that they played Monday. They wrote it in a single week! *Lisez-la donc! Ce sont deux de mes amis qui l'ont faite. Tout ce qu'ils écrivent est joli. Ce sont eux qui ont écrit la comédie qu'on a donnée lundi. Ils l'ont écrite en une seule semaine!*
9. They write fast, truly. Shakespeare didn't write as fast as they *Ils écrivent vite, vraiment. Shakespeare n'écrivait pas aussi vite qu'eux*
10. He! no — he wrote very slowly. And then, he wrote only tragedies. Have you read them? *Lui! non — il écrivait très lentement. Et puis, il n'a écrit que des tragédies. Est-ce que vous les avez lues?*
11. No, I never read any. I used to read some at school *Non, je n'en lis jamais. J'en lisais au collège*
12. You didn't find them very amusing, those tragedies? *Vous ne les avez pas trouvées très amusantes, ces tragédies?*
13. No, I never liked them. Why does one read those things? That's what I don't understand. What I ask for is a good, amusing comedy, like the little play that I saw Saturday. But tragedies, no! There are so many of them every *Non, je ne les ai jamais aimées. Pourquoi lit-on ces choses-là? Voilà ce que je ne comprends pas. Ce que je demande c'est une bonne comédie amusante, comme la petite pièce que j'ai vue samedi. Mais des tragédies, non! Il y en a tant tous les jours: les taxis, les auto-*

day: the taxicabs, the
autos, the chauffeurs that
go so fast!

mobiles, les chauffeurs qui vont
si vite!

14. That's true — one does not
need any tragedies

C'est vrai — on n'a pas besoin de
tragédies

373. Conversation. 1. We go every day to the moving-pictures; are we right? 2. We never go to the theater; are we wrong? 3. Do you always get (**prendre**) good seats? 4. Are you warm or cold at the theater? 5. If you have seats near the stage, are you afraid of catching a cold? 6. Have you seen the plays that Shakespeare wrote? 7. Did your friends find them easy to understand when they read them? 8. Do you read now the same books that you used to read at school? 9. Your wife has read the play that I wrote; did she finish it and did she understand it? 10. Did Shakespeare use to write slowly or fast?

374. Theme. We have never gone to the moving-pictures, and we do not often go to the theater. Upstairs one is hot; downstairs one is cold. And one easily catches a cold in the theater. I am always afraid of that. And then the comedies of to-day are badly written. We have almost 5 always found them very stupid. We have seen some good plays that we have liked and that we found well written also. When they played them well, we have seen them with pleasure. But forty years ago one wrote better. We write too fast now. We read too fast also. If you read fast, you 10 are wrong. We used to read slowly. We were right. We understood what we were reading. One needs much time to (**pour**) understand a good book. I have nearly always understood the books that I have read. I think in reading. Does one think much to-day in reading or in writing? No. 15 The men and women of to-day read and write much; what they do not do is to (**c'est de**) think. They are wrong, truly. What they do is easy: they read and write; but they

are afraid to think. Or, perhaps, they do not need to think!
 20 And also, we do not read the best books. Shakespeare has written many beautiful plays. Have you bought them? have you read them? have you understood them?

375. Exercises. A. Use past indefinites with each of the following: *quelle, to arrive, to go, quels, to go out, to come back, to learn, the men whom, the men who, the thing which, quelles, quel.*

B. Conjugate:

I am right.	I shall be afraid.
I was (<i>imperfect</i>) wrong.	I needed (past indefinite) that.

C. Conjugate:

I know what is here. I shall know what you will have.

D. Drill on *lire* and *écrire*: § 480, D.

37. TRENTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON [trä:t setjem]

LA TOILETTE

I

376. Reflexive Verbs: se laver* [sə lave], *to wash oneself.*

Present:

je me lave [la:v], I wash myself	nous nous lavons [lavɔ̃], we wash ourselves
(tu te laves [la:v], thou washest thyself)	vous vous lavez [lave], you wash yourself <i>or</i> yourselves
il se lave [la:v], he washes himself	ils se lavent [la:v], they wash themselves

Imperfect: je me lavais, etc.

<i>Past indefinite:</i> je me suis lavé	nous nous sommes lavés
(tu t'es lavé)	vous vous êtes lavé(s)
il s'est lavé	ils se sont lavés
elle s'est lavée	elles se sont lavées

NOTE 1. The auxiliary with reflexive verbs is **être**; but the past participle agrees not with the *subject* but with a *preceding direct object* as in the case of verbs conjugated with **avoir**; cf. § 362.

Future: je me laverai, etc.

377. Some verbs which are not reflexive in English are reflexive in French: **se dépêcher***, *to hurry*; **se lever***, *to get up*; **se promener***, *to take a walk*, etc.

378. As in English so in French some verbs may be reflexive or non-reflexive:

tromper, *to deceive*, but **se tromper***, *to be mistaken*
habiller, *to dress (somebody else)*, but **s'habiller***, *to dress (oneself)*

379. **Conduire** [kōdyir], *to conduct*; **conduisant** [kōdyizā],
conduit [kōdyi].

<i>Present indicative:</i> je conduis [kōdyi]	nous conduisons [kōdyizā]
(tu conduis [kōdyi])	vous conduisez [kōdyize]
il conduit [kōdyi]	ils conduisent [kōdyiz]

380. **Croire** [krwar], *to believe*; **croyant** [krwajā], **cru** [kry].

<i>Present indicative:</i> je crois [krwa]	nous croyons [krwajō]
(tu crois [krwa])	vous croyez [krwaje]
il croit [krwa]	ils croient [krwa]

(All forms of these verbs, except the present participle and the past participle, follow the rules.)

381. VOCABULARY

la blanchisseuse [blāʃisø:z],
 laundress

le bras [bra], arm

la chaussette [ʃoset], sock

la chemise [ʃəmi:z], shirt

comment [kəmā], how?¹

se dépêcher* [sə depeʃe],

hurry

fatiguer [fatige], to tire

habiller [abiʃe], to dress

¹ Cf. **comme**, *how* . . . !

Comment savez-vous cela? How do you know that?

Comme elle est belle! How beautiful she is!

lever¹ [ləvɛ], to raise
 se lever,* to get up, rise
 le linge [lɛ:ʒ], linen
 se marier* [sə marje], to get married
 se promener*¹ [sə prɔmne], to take a walk
 propre [prɔpr], clean, neat

raccommoder [rakɔmɔde], to mend
 se reposer* [sə rəpoze], to rest
 sale [sal], dirty
 le savon [savɔ̃], soap
 la serviette [sɛrvjet], towel
 sous [su], under
 tromper [trɔpe], to deceive
 se tromper*, to be mistaken

382.

DRILL

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. I tire you; I tire myself | Je vous fatigue; je me fatigue |
| 2. She deceives him; she deceives herself | Elle le trompe; elle se trompe |
| 3. We hurry; we rested | Nous nous dépêchons; nous nous sommes reposés |
| 4. They hurried; they are not resting | Ils se sont dépêchés; ils ne se reposent pas |
| 5. Hurry up! let's get married! | Dépêchez-vous! marions-nous! |
| 6. Don't tire yourself! you tired yourself | Ne vous fatiguez pas! vous vous êtes fatigué |
| 7. Get up! let's dress ourselves! | Levez-vous! habillons-nous! |
| 8. He dressed himself; he takes a walk | Il s'est habillé; il se promène |
| 9. She took a walk; I am mistaken | Elle s'est promenée; je me trompe |
| 10. I was mistaken; I led her | Je me trompais; je l'ai conduite |
| 11. He was hurrying; let's hurry! | Il se dépêchait; dépêchons-nous! |
| 12. I have believed it; don't believe it! | Je l'ai cru; ne le croyez pas! |
| 13. Believe me! we were not conducting her | Croyez-moi! nous ne la conduisions pas |
| 14. How was he conducting himself? | Comment se conduisait-il? |
| 15. Have the ladies not lost themselves? | Est-ce que les dames ne se sont pas perdues? |
| 16. How has she conducted herself? | Comment s'est-elle conduite? |

¹ Like acheter, § 160.

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 17. Have you not believed her? | Est-ce que vous ne l'avez pas crue? |
| 18. We conduct ourselves well | Nous nous conduisons bien |
| 19. Conduct yourselves well! | Conduisez-vous bien! |
| 20. You never used to believe
that | Vous ne croyiez jamais cela |

383. Reading. Je me suis levée à neuf heures ce matin — non, je me trompe — à neuf heures et demie. Je me lève de meilleure heure que cela les autres jours, mais je me suis beaucoup fatiguée hier soir en me promenant au parc. Je me suis donc reposée ce matin. Ma sœur m'a conduite à 5 travers tout ce grand parc! Nous nous sommes promenées pendant trois grandes heures! Comme nous nous sommes fatiguées! Mais comme nous nous sommes amusées aussi! Quand j'étais à l'école il y a vingt ans, je me promenais beaucoup avec ma sœur. Nous nous promenions ensemble 10 tous les jours pendant des heures. Elle choisissait toujours le chemin. Elle me conduisait à travers les champs, à droite, à gauche, ne prenant jamais une seule minute pour se reposer. Non, elle ne se reposait jamais, cette fille! Elle prenait le premier chemin venu; elle se trompait; elle s'y 15 perdait; elle revenait; elle en prenait un autre. Elle ne se fatiguait jamais! Quand je disais: Reposons-nous un peu! elle répondait: Non, dépêchons-nous! On aurait cru qu'elle me conduisait à travers la France et qu'elle se dépêchait pour arriver avant le soir! Vous croyiez hier que ma sœur 20 me conduirait chez vous? Non — mais où m'a-t-elle donc conduite, croyez-vous? Chez la blanchisseuse! Pendant tout le temps que nous nous promenions, elle avait un petit paquet sous le bras. L'auriez-vous cru? C'était du linge sale: des chemises, des faux-cols, des chaussettes, des mou- 25 choirs de son mari! Vous savez, n'est-ce pas, que ma sœur s'est mariée au mois d'août? Elle m'a donc conduite jusqu'à la porte de la blanchisseuse. Elle a frappé et une vieille femme, assise près de la fenêtre, s'est levée et s'est montrée à la porte. Elle nous a conduites à travers toute la 30

maison. Enfin nous nous sommes trouvées dans la cuisine. Ma sœur a dit à la blanchisseuse: «Pouvez-vous laver mon linge pour demain?» La vieille femme s'est dépêchée de répondre qu'elle ne travaillait jamais les jours de fête et
 35 qu'elle se reposerait jusqu'à mercredi. «Mais non!» a dit



Une vieille femme s'est montrée à la porte

ma sœur. «Vous vous êtes reposée dimanche; vous vous reposerez encore jeudi, si vous voulez, mais vous laverez mon linge mardi — et bien proprement! Voici du savon! Et n'oubliez pas de raccommoder les chaussettes, si elles en ont
 40 besoin. Maintenant, dépêchons-nous!»

384. Résumé. Se lever; se fatiguer, se reposer; sœur; parc; à l'école; se promener; choisir le chemin; le perdre; se reposer ou se dépêcher; à travers la France; chez qui; chez la blanchisseuse; paquet; linge du mari; frapper; ouvrir, conduire; cuisine; laver; fête; dimanche, jeudi; raccommoder.

385. Oral Drill. 1. We tire them. 2. You deceive us. 3. He deceives himself. 4. Let's hurry up! 5. Do not get married! 6. Rest! 7. We never rest. 8. You are mistaken.

9. Are they not taking a walk? 10. Get up and dress yourself! 11. We have dressed ourselves already. 12. He was dressing himself. 13. She has dressed herself. 14. She has dressed the little girl. 15. You have deceived yourself. 16. You have not deceived me. 17. Let us not make a mistake! 18. She was taking a walk. 19. They were hurrying. 20. Where did you lead her? 21. Are you conducting yourself well? 22. Are you fatigued? 23. Have you fatigued yourself? 24. Do not believe him! 25. I never have believed her. 26. I believe she conducts herself well. 27. He used to believe that we were conducting ourselves well. 28. Where were they conducting her? 29. We have brought some soap. 30. The laundress has washed the shirts and the towels. 31. Where are the socks? has she not mended them? 32. She was carrying a package of dirty towels under her (le) arm. 33. If I am not mistaken, this is clean linen.

II

386.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Good-day, Henry! Tell me,
what are you doing? | Bonjour, Henri! Dites-moi,
qu'est-ce que vous faites? |
| 2. Nothing — I am resting | Rien — je me repose |
| 3. You're resting? How have
you tired yourself then,
you who never tire your-
self? | Vous vous reposez? Comment
vous êtes-vous donc fatigué,
vous qui ne vous fatiguez ja-
mais? |
| 4. I walked a long time with
my friend John. That's
what has tired me. He
came to my house this
morning at five o'clock to
take a walk with me! | Je me suis promené très long-
temps avec mon ami Jean.
C'est ce qui m'a fatigué. Il est
venu chez moi ce matin à cinq
heures, pour se promener avec
moi! |
| 5. How! he gets up so early? | Comment! il se lève de si bonne
heure? |
| 6. Yes, we get up, he and I, be-
tween five and six o'clock. | Oui, nous nous levons, lui et moi,
entre cinq et six heures. J'ai |

- I believed it was the laundress with my clean linen who was knocking at my door, believing that I had not yet got up
- 7.** You were mistaken! cru que c'était la blanchisseuse avec mon linge propre qui frappait à ma porte, croyant que je ne m'étais pas encore levé
- 8.** I was mistaken. It was John Vous vous êtes trompé!
- 9.** And you took a walk with him? Je me suis trompé. C'était Jean
- 10.** Yes — he knocked a second time saying: Get up! Hurry! Et vous vous êtes promené avec lui?
- 11.** Had you not got up already? Oui — il a frappé une deuxième fois en disant: Levez-vous! Dépêchez-vous!
- 12.** No, I had not yet got up, but I got up immediately. After having washed and dressed myself, I made a package of dirty linen to carry to the laundress: shirts, towels, handkerchiefs, socks. She not only washes them well, but she mends them also Est-ce que vous ne vous étiez pas levé déjà?
- 13.** Where did you walk? Where did John lead you? Non, je ne m'étais pas encore levé, mais je me suis levé tout de suite. Après m'être lavé et habillé, j'ai fait un paquet de linge sale pour le porter chez la blanchisseuse: des chemises, des serviettes, des mouchoirs, des chaussettes. Non seulement elle les lave bien, mais elle les raccommode aussi
- 14.** Into the park. And, believe me, we got tired. John kept leading me into all the corners! Où est-ce que vous vous êtes promenés? Où Jean vous a-t-il conduit?
- Dans le parc. Et, croyez-moi, nous nous sommes fatigués. Jean me conduisait dans tous les coins!

387. Conversation. 1. Tell me, my friends, at what time did you get up to-day? 2. Did you tire yourself, taking a walk across the fields? 3. Did you rest after walking? 4. With whom did you use to walk every day when you lived in the city? 5. When you used to say: Hurry up! how

did your sister answer you? 6. What did she have under her arm while she was leading you through the city? 7. Who brought the soap and towels to the laundress's house? 8. During how many days did you rest after working (=after having worked)? 9. The laundress said she had not rested a minute since Sunday; do you believe it? 10. Why do you not hurry when you wash yourself?

388. Theme. I (*f.*) took a walk yesterday with John — no, I am mistaken, it was Peter who took a walk with me. We got up early, we dressed and we departed. I said to Peter: "Lead me; I should lose myself in this big city, if I led you." He led me then through the streets, to the left, to the right, without end. He kept hurrying, he never rested. You believe that he rested sometimes, don't you? You are mistaken. How he hurried! and how we tired ourselves! You would never have believed it. How I tired myself! I have rested from this morning till this evening, and I am still tired now. Would you have believed it? Peter led me to the door of a little house. He knocked and a young woman showed herself. She was mending some linen — some towels, I believe. You will not believe me — but she is Peter's wife! They got married this summer! I got married a month ago, but all my friends knew it. Peter has said nothing of it to his friends. That's very funny, isn't it? She is very beautiful, and a very good girl, I believe. She conducted herself very well with me, she took a walk in the garden with me, and she said to me that she believed herself the friend of all Peter's friends. We walked twenty minutes together — and then she and Peter walked an hour while I amused myself in the house.

389. Exercises. A. Drill on the past indefinite of *se dépêcher, se lever, se promener*: § 480, A.

B. Drill on *se laver, se fatiguer, se marier*: § 480, D.

C. Drill on *conduire, croire*: § 480, D.

38. TRENTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON [trãt yitjem]

LA TOILETTE

I

390. Elle s'est lavé les mains,¹ *She washed her hands*Elle s'est cassé le bras,¹ *She broke her arm*Cf. Elle s'est lavée, *She washed herself*

In the sentence *Elle s'est lavée*, *She washed herself*, *s'* (se) is the direct object; since it *precedes* the participle, the participle agrees with it (see § 376, Note 1). In the sentences *Elle s'est lavé les mains*, *Elle s'est cassé le bras*, *s'* (se) is the indirect object (*She washed the hands to herself*; *She broke the arm to herself*); the direct objects are *mains*, *bras*, and since they *follow* the participles, the participles do not agree with them, but are invariable.

391. Sentir [sãtir], *to feel*; *sentant* [sãtã], *senti* [sãti].*Present indicative: je sens* [sã]

(tu sens [sã])

il sent [sã]

nous sentons [sãtõ]

vous sentez [sãte]

ils sentent [sã:t]

(The remaining forms follow the rules.)

392. Conjugate like *sentir*: *dormir*, *to sleep* (*je dors*, etc.)*partir**, *to depart, go away* (*je pars*, etc.)*sortir**, *to go out* (*je sors*, etc.)

393. VOCABULARY

*s'arrêter** [sarɛte], *to stop**le bain* [bã], *bath**blessé* [blese], *to wound, hurt**les cheveux* [ʃɛvø] (*m.*) *hair**se coucher** [sə kuʃe], *to go to**bed*

¹ The definite article (*the*) is ordinarily used, instead of a possessive adjective (*my, his, her*, etc.), with parts of the body.

la dent [dā], tooth
 se déshabiller* [se dezabije], to undress
 la figure [figy:r], face
 la glace [glas], mirror
 le journal [ʒurnal] (*pl. journaux* [ʒurno]), newspaper

parfait [parfɛ], perfect
 peigner [pɛgne], to comb
 quelqu'un [kɛlkœ], some one
 se rappeler*¹ [sə raple], to remember
 la salle de bains [sal də bɛ], bathroom

394.

DRILL

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. He gets up; we go to bed | Il se lève; nous nous couchons |
| 2. She got up; they went to bed | Elle s'est levée; ils se sont couchés |
| 3. Let's go to bed! get up! | Couchons-nous! levez-vous! |
| 4. Don't get up! let's not get up! | Ne vous levez pas! ne nous levons pas! |
| 5. Stop! let us stop! | Arrêtez-vous! arrêtons-nous! |
| 6. We stop; he was stopping | Nous nous arrêtons; il s'arrêtait |
| 7. We dress ourselves; he undresses himself | Nous nous habillons; il se déshabille |
| 8. Wash your face! let's brush our hair! | Lavez-vous la figure! brossons-nous les cheveux! |
| 9. He wounds himself; she seated herself | Il se blesse; elle s'est assise |
| 10. She has combed herself; she brushed her hair | Elle s'est peignée; elle s'est brossé les cheveux |
| 11. Do you remember? I don't depart | Vous rappelez-vous? je ne pars pas |
| 12. Brush my hair; brush your teeth | Brossez-moi les cheveux; brossez-vous les dents |
| 13. She broke her arm; she stopped | Elle s'est cassé le bras; elle s'est arrêtée |
| 14. I say to myself; she said to herself | Je me dis; elle s'est dit |
| 15. She was going out; we were sleeping | Elle sortait; nous dormions |
| 16. She washed her face; she departs | Elle s'est lavé la figure; elle part |

¹ Like appeler, § 149.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 17. She remembered; I used to remember | Elle s'est rappelée; je me rappelais |
| 18. She wounded her hand; I don't sleep | Elle s'est blessé la main; je ne dors pas |
| 19. I feel it; he used to feel it | Je le sens; il le sentait |
| 20. Is she sleeping? we are going out | Est-ce qu'elle dort? nous sortons |

395. Reading. Je me sens très mal aujourd'hui, je ne sais pas pourquoi. Je me sentais parfaitement bien en me couchant hier soir. Je m'étais dit, en me déshabillant, qu'après avoir dormi neuf heures je me lèverais ce matin
 5 avant ma sœur, mais c'est elle pourtant qui s'est levée la première. Elle était toute joyeuse en se levant. Elle dort si bien qu'elle se lève toujours en chantant comme un oiseau. Elle se lave, elle s'habille, elle se brosse, elle sort de sa chambre, elle vient voir à ma porte si je dors encore, et tout
 10 le temps elle chante! Elle est entrée dans ma chambre ce matin, elle s'est assise à côté de mon lit, et elle m'a demandé comment je me sentais. J'ai répondu: «Je me sens très mal. J'ai mal dormi.» Elle m'a répondu: «Ne sortons donc pas aujourd'hui comme nous allions le faire! Lisons ensemble
 15 ce journal qu'on m'a apporté il y a presque une demi-heure. Ou, si vous aimez mieux, rappelons-nous le bon temps que nous avons passé ensemble à l'école. Est-ce que vous vous rappelez l'école?» «Je me suis rappelé cette école bien-aimée pas plus tard qu'hier en parlant avec ma mère,
 20 cette école où nous nous sommes si bien amusées et si mal conduites.» Nous nous sommes rappelé tout ce que nous y faisons et tout ce que nous y disions. Ma sœur se rappelait avec le plus de plaisir le jour où nous sommes sorties de là pour la dernière fois. «Ce jour-là,» disait-elle, «je
 25 m'étais levée de bonne heure, je m'étais lavé la figure et la main droite, mais pas la main gauche — je m'étais blessé cette main en jouant — je m'étais habillée, je m'étais brossé les dents, et je sortais de ma chambre, un petit livre à la

main, que je m'étais acheté en partant de chez nous. Arrivée à la porte, je me suis arrêtée. Je ne me rappelais plus si je m'étais peignée après m'être brossé les cheveux. Je me suis donc regardée dans la glace. Je me rappelle que je me suis trouvé la figure assez jolie ce matin-là, et je me suis dit, non sans un certain plaisir: «Mademoiselle, vous vous êtes si bien brossé les cheveux, et vous vous êtes si bien lavé la figure, et vous vous êtes si bien habillée que je vous trouve la plus belle fille du monde! Vous vous marierez bientôt, je crois!» «Pas aujourd'hui, au moins!» a dit quelqu'un derrière moi! C'était la maîtresse! Elle était entrée sans frapper, elle s'était assise derrière moi, et elle avait entendu toutes les jolies choses que j'avais dites! Comme je me suis sentie bête ce matin-là!»

396. Résumé. Se sentir mal ou bien; dormir, se lever; sœur, chanter; sortir, lire; se rappeler l'école; s'amuser, se conduire; dernier jour; se laver; main blessée; se brosser, dents, cheveux, se peigner; glace, jolie fille, se marier; maîtresse assise.

397. Oral Drill. 1. He is sleeping; he gets up. 2. Let us stop!; stop! 3. They are sleeping; we go to bed. 4. Comb yourself!; undress! 5. I was sleeping; she goes out. 6. We do not remember that. 7. They were departing. 8. Some one will remember that. 9. He washes himself. 10. She has seated herself. 11. She has washed her hands. 12. He has said to himself. 13. She got up. 14. She seated herself. 15. She brushed her hair. 16. Is he sleeping? 17. He was not sleeping. 18. I have not slept. 19. Let us go out! 20. She broke her arm. 21. She brushed her teeth. 22. I sleep when he goes out. 23. They were departing. 24. She has bought herself a book. 25. The girls have remembered that. 26. The women have conducted themselves badly. 27. Conduct yourselves well! 28. She stopped while I was

going out. 29. Go to bed and sleep! 30. Let's go to bed!
 31. She got up. 32. She has broken her arm. 33. They
 were saying to themselves. 34. We feel nothing. 35. No-
 body feels it. 36. She has bought herself a newspaper.

II

398.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Good-day, Mary! At what hour did you get up? | Bonjour, Marie! À quelle heure vous êtes-vous levée? |
| 2. I got up at five o'clock | Je me suis levée à cinq heures |
| 3. They rise early at your house! | On se lève de bonne heure chez vous! |
| 4. We always get up before six o'clock | Nous nous levons toujours avant six heures |
| 5. And at what time do you go to bed? | Et à quelle heure est-ce que vous vous couchez? |
| 6. We went to bed yesterday evening at ten o'clock | Nous nous sommes couchés hier soir à dix heures |
| 7. What have you done since you got up? | Qu'est-ce que vous avez fait depuis que vous vous êtes levée? |
| 8. I took a bath in the bath-room; I washed my face; I dressed; I combed myself, and I brushed my teeth | J'ai pris un bain dans la salle de bains; je me suis lavé la figure; je me suis habillée; je me suis peignée, et je me suis brossé les dents |
| 9. You brushed yourself, — I believe it — but have you really washed your face? I should never have believed it. Have you not looked at your face in the mirror? | Vous vous êtes brossée — je le crois — mais est-ce que vous vous êtes vraiment lavé la figure? Je ne l'aurais jamais cru. Est-ce que vous ne vous êtes pas regardé la figure dans la glace? |
| 10. I have not looked at my face — no — I have not looked at myself in the mirror | Je ne me suis pas regardé la figure — non — je ne me suis pas regardée dans la glace |
| 11. You have your face all red! | Vous avez la figure toute rouge! |

12. Ah, I know! I fell in coming out of my room

13. You hurt yourself?

14. I hurt my foot and I almost believed that I had broken my arm

15. How did you hurt yourself?

16. I did not remember that there was a staircase in front of my door. I fell and I only stopped downstairs. That is how I hurt my foot

Ah, je sais! Je suis tombée en sortant de ma chambre

Vous vous êtes fait mal?

Je me suis blessé le pied et je croyais presque que je m'étais cassé le bras

Comment vous êtes-vous blessée?

Je ne me suis pas rappelé qu'il y avait un escalier devant ma porte. Je suis tombée et je ne me suis arrêtée qu'en bas. Voilà comment je me suis blessé le pied

399. Conversation. 1. How do you feel now, and how did you feel when you went to bed? 2. What had the lady said to herself in going to bed? 3. When do you go to bed and when do you get up? 4. What did the sister do when she got up? 5. If you remember how you used to pass the time at school, tell it to my sister. 6. Do the girls remember what they used to say and do? 7. Has Mary washed her hands, and has her sister washed herself? 8. Have the little girls brushed their teeth? 9. When did she buy herself the newspapers? 10. Have you heard the things which we have said, or were you sleeping?

400. Theme. As Mary was not feeling very well, she said to herself: "I will go to bed at half past eight this evening, and if I sleep well I shall get up early to-morrow and take a walk in the park." She had washed her hands, she had brushed her teeth and she had gone to bed, when she remembered that she had not read the newspaper. She got up, she dressed herself and she brushed her hair. She looked at herself in the glass and said to herself: "I have not dressed myself very well, and I have not brushed my hair very well, but I am going out only to buy myself a 10

newspaper. I shall come back immediately." She departs and goes to the store. As she was going out of the store where she had bought herself the newspaper, she fell on the sidewalk. She wounded her head and she nearly broke her
 15 left arm. Poor Mary! She called a cabby, the carriage stopped in front of the store, she got in and seated herself. On arriving home, she washed her face and looked at herself in the glass. She was no longer very pretty! She brushed herself, she washed her hands and she went to bed.

401. Exercises. A. Drill on *se coucher, s'arrêter*: § 480, D.

B. Drill (on blackboard) on the past indefinite of *se laver, se laver les mains*: § 480, A.

C. Drill on *sentir, dormir, partir*: § 480, D.

39. TRENTE-NEUVIÈME LEÇON [trā:t nævjɛm]

LA CASERNE

I

402. Order of Personal Pronouns:

me	{	precede	{	le	}	precede	{	lui	}	precede y	}	precede(s) en
te												
se												
nous												
vous												

Il me le dit, He says it to me

Il le lui dit, He says it to him

Il se le dit, He says it to himself

Il nous les a donnés, He gave them to us

Il les leur a donnés, He gave them to them

Il m'en a donné, He gave me some

Il ne leur en donne pas, He does not give them any

Il n'y en a pas, There are none

EXCEPTION: After a positive imperative, the direct object pronoun always comes first—and **en** and **y** always come last.

403. Voir [vwair], *to see*; **voyant** [vwajã], **vu** [vy].

Present indicative: **je vois** [vwa] **nous voyons** [vwajõ]
 (tu vois [vwa]) **vous voyez** [vwaje]
 il voit [vwa] **ils voient** [vwa]

Future: **je verrai** [vere], etc.

(The remaining forms follow the rules.)

404. Vouloir [vulwair], *to wish*; **voulant** [vulã], **voulu** [vuly].

Present indicative: **je veux** [vø] **nous voulons** [vulõ]
 (tu veux [vø]) **vous voulez** [vule]
 il veut [vø] **ils veulent** [vœl]

Future: **je voudrai** [vudre], etc.

(The remaining forms follow the rules.)

405. VOCABULARY

l'arme [arm] (<i>f.</i>), arm, weapon	la guerre [gɛr], war
l'armée [arme] (<i>f.</i>), army	le lieutenant [ljætnã], lieutenant
la bataille [bata:j], battle	la mort [mɔ:r], death
se battre* [sə batr], to fight	la paix [pɛ], peace
le capitaine [kapiten], captain	rendre [rũ:dr], to give back
la caserne [kazɛrn], barracks	le soldat [solda], soldier
le drapeau [drapo] (<i>pl. drapeaux</i>), flag	tuer [tye], to kill
l'épée [lepe] (<i>f.</i>), sword	il vaut mieux [vo mjø], it is better
le fusil [fyzi], gun	vouloir dire [vulwair di:r], to mean
gagner [gaje], to win	
le général [ʒeneral] (<i>pl. généraux</i>), general	

406. DRILL

- | | |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. He will wish; she was wishing | Il voudra; elle voulait |
| 2. She sees; they were seeing | Elle voit; ils voyaient |
| 3. We have wished; we shall see | Nous avons voulu; nous verrons |

4. Show me them! they wish	Montrez-les-moi! ils veulent
5. I give him them; do you wish?	Je les lui donne; voulez-vous?
6. They say it to him; do you see?	Ils le lui disent; voyez-vous?
7. I say it to them; let us see!	Je le leur dis; voyons!
8. He will give it back to us; I shall see him	Il nous le rendra; je le verrai
9. Say it to him! he has wished	Dites-le-lui! il a voulu
10. He gave me them; she used to wish	Il me les a donnés; elle voulait
11. There are some; they would wish	Il y en a; ils voudraient
12. What did that mean?	Qu'est-ce que cela voulait dire?
13. She speaks to him of it	Elle lui en parle
14. Let us give it back to her!	Rendons-le-lui!
15. We do not wish to give him them	Nous ne voulons pas les lui donner
16. What does he mean?	Qu'est-ce qu'il veut dire?
17. Do not give them back to them!	Ne les leur rendez pas!
18. We used to say it to her	Nous le lui disions
19. This means nothing	Cela ne veut rien dire
20. She has not wished to say it to him	Elle n'a pas voulu le lui dire

407. Reading. Mon frère est soldat. Il demeure à la caserne, où vous voyez ce drapeau. Moi, je voudrais être soldat aussi. Je le lui dis toujours quand je le vois et il me répond toujours: «Nous verrons.» Il n'a jamais voulu
 5 apprendre un métier. Je me rappelle bien qu'il n'avait que huit ans quand il disait déjà qu'il voulait être capitaine. Moi — je n'avais que quatre ans — je voulais être général, au moins. Mon frère avait un fusil. C'est mon oncle qui le lui avait donné. Moi, j'avais une épée. C'est ma tante
 10 qui me l'avait donnée. Mais avec son fusil, mon frère ne pouvait tuer personne. Voilà pourquoi on le lui avait

donné! Et moi, je n'aurais pu blesser personne avec mon épée. Voilà pourquoi on me l'avait donnée! On nous les a donnés, ce fusil et cette épée, à Noël, pendant une visite que nous faisons chez notre oncle. Quand nous sommes re- 15 venus chez nous, le fusil au bras, l'épée à la main, ma mère en nous voyant, a demandé tout de suite: «Qu'est-ce que cela



Mon frère est soldat

veut dire? Qui donc vous a donné ces choses-là?» Nous lui avons répondu que notre oncle et notre tante nous les avaient données, et que cela voulait dire que nous allions 20 être soldats. «Mais ils vont se battre, ils vont se tuer avec ces armes-là!» a dit ma mère. «Je ne comprends pas mon frère qui les leur a données! Je le lui dirai quand je le verrai! Je le trouve joliment (=very) bête!» «Attendez!» a dit mon père. «Voyons ce fusil! Montrez-le-moi!» «Le voilà!» 25

a répondu mon frère en le lui donnant. Mon père l'a regardé un peu, puis il le lui a rendu en disant: «Avec cette arme-là vous ne pourrez tuer personne. C'est un vieux fusil cassé qui ne vaut plus rien. Votre oncle vous l'a donné
30 parce qu'il n'en voulait plus. Maintenant nous verrons si l'épée vaut mieux que le fusil. Voyons-la! Donnez-la-moi! — La voici! — C'est tout? — Comment tout? — Mais ce n'est que la moitié d'une épée! Il y a longtemps qu'elle est cassée, cette épée-là! Ne voyez-vous pas? Je vous
35 la rendrai avec plaisir. Avec ces armes-là vous ne donnerez la mort à personne, mes enfants!»

Pourtant, pendant des mois on nous voyait faire la guerre dans la cour derrière la maison. Les autres garçons n'étaient que soldats; mon frère et moi, nous étions lieutenants, capitaines, généraux. Nous commandions toujours
40 l'armée. Nous avons bâti une caserne dans la cour, nous nous battions tous les jours sous le drapeau rouge, blanc et bleu, nous gagnions cinquante batailles, et puis, la guerre bien finie, nous faisions la paix. Et maintenant, comme vous
45 voyez, mon frère est vraiment soldat.

408. Résumé. Être soldat, métier; huit ans, quatre ans; fusil, épée; tuer, blesser; Noël; mère; qui a donné; se tuer; bête; montrer; vieux fusil; épée cassée; cour, caserne; armée; drapeau; la paix.

409. Oral Drill. 1. They see. 2. They wish. 3. We wish. 4. Don't you see? 5. He wished. 6. What do you wish? 7. I wish to give him them. 8. We see them. 9. They have not wished it. 10. Let us see! 11. He says it to us. 12. We do not see him. 13. We wish it. 14. Say it to me! 15. Will you see any? 16. Is there any? 17. Do you wish it? 18. What do they see? 19. Has he given them to her? 20. What does that mean? 21. Give me a flag! 22. Do not give me it! 23. Give me it! 24. Say it to her! 25. Do they wish to say it to them? 26. I wished

to know what he meant. 27. Will you see the captain? 28. I wished to see the lieutenant. 29. Do the generals wish to be with the army? 30. The soldier would wish it. 31. Do you see the swords? 32. I wished to give them to him. 33. Have you wished to see the guns? 34. Will you see the soldiers coming from the barracks? 35. When the war will be finished, the generals will wish to make (the) peace. 36. If he fought, they would wish to kill him. 37. He is not afraid of death. 38. What does this word mean?

II

410.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Do you sometimes see my brothers? | Est-ce que vous voyez quelquefois mes frères? |
| 2. I see them quite often pass in (a) taxicab before my window | Je les vois assez souvent passer en taxi devant ma fenêtre |
| 3. Have you never gone to see them? You asked me for their address, and I gave it to you. You remember it, don't you? | Est-ce que vous n'êtes jamais allés les voir? Vous m'avez demandé leur adresse, et je vous l'ai donnée. Vous vous le rappelez, n'est-ce pas? |
| 4. I remember it perfectly, but your brothers are never at home. What are they doing in town? | Je me le rappelle parfaitement, mais vos frères ne sont jamais chez eux. Qu'est-ce qu'ils font en ville? |
| 5. They are carrying on their studies. The one wishes to be a doctor, the other would like to be a lawyer. Only, as he has never wanted to work hitherto, I do not see how he will begin to work now. He would like to be a lawyer, but he doesn't wish to work | Ils font leurs études. L'un veut être médecin, l'autre voudrait être avocat. Seulement, comme il n'a jamais voulu travailler jusqu'ici, je ne vois pas comment il se mettra à travailler maintenant. Il voudrait être avocat, mais il ne veut pas travailler |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 6. We shall see! The boys who do not wish to work can arrive at nothing in this world | Nous verrons! Les garçons qui ne veulent pas travailler ne peuvent arriver à rien dans ce monde |
| 7. Yes, there is only work! I have said so to them a hundred times, but my brothers don't want to listen to me | Oui, il n'y a que le travail! Je le leur ai dit cent fois, mais mes frères ne veulent pas m'écouter |
| 8. And you, what would you wish to be? | Et vous, qu'est-ce que vous voudriez être? |
| 9. I should wish to be a soldier | Je voudrais être soldat |
| 10. I also should have wished it, but my parents did not wish it | Moi aussi, je l'aurais voulu, mais mes parents ne le voulaient pas |
| 11. I have always wished it. When I saw the soldiers come out of the barracks, with their guns on their arms, the general on his fine horse, the captains and lieutenants, sword in hand, when I heard the music and saw the flags, I always wanted to be a captain | Moi je l'ai toujours voulu. Quand je voyais les soldats sortir de la caserne, le fusil au bras, le général sur son beau cheval, les capitaines et les lieutenants, l'épée à la main, quand j'écoutais la musique et voyais les drapeaux, je voulais toujours être capitaine, moi |
| 12. Yes, that would be fine! To fight, to make war, to win battles, and then, peace (being) made, to come back to live here in the country! That is what I should wish! | Oui, ce serait beau! Se battre, faire la guerre, gagner des batailles, et puis, la paix faite, revenir demeurer ici à la campagne! Voilà ce que je voudrais! |

- 411. Conversation.** 1. Where do the soldiers live?
 2. Who gave the sword and the gun to the two brothers?
 3. Could one hurt anybody or kill anybody with these weapons? 4. Where were the boys when they gave these

weapons to them? 5. Did the brothers give their sword and their gun to their father? 6. Did he give them back to them? 7. What did he say, in giving them back to them? 8. Where did one see the boys every day? 9. Where did they fight? 10. Did they win battles and did they make peace?

412. Theme. Do you see those boys who carry red, white and blue flags in the garden in front of the house? You do not know what they are doing? I will tell it to you. The two boys that one sees at the left are generals, the boys behind them at the right wish also to be generals, or captains 5 or lieutenants, but to-day they are only soldiers. When one of the generals sees a soldier with sword in hand he says: "Give it to me!" and the soldier gives it to him. When they see one of the soldiers with his gun on his arm, they ask him for it and the soldier gives it to them. The general 10 says: "I will give them back to you when the battle shall begin." If their weapons are old or broken, the general says to the captain: "What does that mean? This soldier has a broken sword; give it back to him! Those soldiers have old guns; give them back to them! These soldiers need 15 good guns and good swords. Do you wish to fight with those weapons? Do you not wish to win the battle? You will be able to kill nobody with those weapons. There are some in the barracks which are not so old and broken. Go to the captains at the barracks and ask them for them. Say: 'You 20 have good guns; give them to us. You have good swords; give some to us.' If they do not wish to give you them, tell them that if they do not give you them immediately the generals will come and they will no longer be captains in our army! Now, march!" 25

413. Exercises. A. Fill the following blanks each with all the possible conjunctive pronouns:

Il — le donne.

Il nous — donne.

Il — lui donne.

Il me — donne.

Il — en donne.

Il la — donne.

Il — leur donne.

Il vous — donne.

B. Replace the above verbs, *where possible*, first by **a donné**, secondly by **a donnés**.

C. Fill the following blanks each with two pronouns:

Il — donne.

Il — a donné.

Il — a donnés.

Il ne — a pas donné.

Il ne — a pas donnés.

D. Drill on present indicative of **voir, vouloir**: § 480, A.

E. Drill on **voir, vouloir**: § 480, D.

40. QUARANTIÈME LEÇON [karātjem]

Review

I

414. 1. They wish to be loved. 2. He is right. 3. We need that. 4. They used to wish what we wished. 5. You are wrong. 6. We read what you write. 7. He used to read what she wrote. 8. Read more slowly! 9. He has read too fast. 10. What plays have they written? 11. She got up. 12. She went to bed. 13. She washed her hands. 14. We dressed ourselves. 15. She broke her left arm. 16. I am not mistaken. 17. He deceived her. 18. Hurry! 19. He led her. 20. She fought with him. 21. I remember it. 22. She remembered them. 23. Believe me! 24. I have never believed it. 25. She conducted herself. 26. We used to believe that. 27. He feels it. 28. We feel nothing. 29. She sleeps. 30. We were going out. 31. They do not sleep. 32. Let us not go out. 33. Are you departing?

34. She combed herself. 35. We stopped. 36. She bought herself a newspaper. 37. She brushed her hair. 38. She wounded her hand. 39. He remembered her. 40. Stop! 41. Let us take a walk! 42. He gives me it. 43. We give it back to him. 44. Tell me it! 45. They wish to give me them. 46. Give them back to her! 47. They sold them to us. 48. We would have sold them to them. 49. Brush your teeth! 50. Have you looked at yourselves in the glass? 51. The generals have no horses. 52. They have given them to them. 53. There are none of them. 54. Let us fight! 55. We have fought. 56. We wish to win the battle. 57. What do you see? 58. I see nothing. 59. We shall see. 60. He will wish to make (the) war. 61. We have wished to make peace.

II

415. 1. Which newspapers have you read? 2. How many letters has the captain written? 3. Has the lieutenant's wife come? 4. Are the generals right or wrong? 5. Has she washed herself? 6. Had she brushed her teeth? 7. Where are you leading the soldier? 8. How has she conducted herself? 9. We believe what they believe. 10. I believe that you are mistaken. 11. We have believed that she was mistaken. 12. The laundress got up early and washed the dirty linen. 13. The handkerchiefs are not clean. 14. These socks and shirts belong to me. 15. She tired herself. 16. She got married. 17. If she does not hurry, she will never be dressed. 18. She went to bed late and she got up early. 19. How do you wish to go to the theater, in a taxicab or on foot? 20. She has hurt her foot. 21. She has caught a cold. 22. They wish to see that stupid moving-picture show. 23. Get out of the automobile quickly! 24. This play begins badly. 25. Are you hot or cold? 26. Are you reading the play that I have written? 27. I have read it already. 28. Do not hurry; go slowly! 29. Stop in front of the stage! 30. She washed her face. 31. She

brushed her hair. 32. She has not washed herself yet. 33. Are the soldiers wounded? 34. Have they built the barracks? 35. Some one remembered it. 36. Let us see those weapons. 37. These swords are more broken than those old guns. 38. Would you wish to be a captain? 39. Do you see the flags? 40. Give them back to him! 41. They are not afraid of death. 42. When the war is (=will be) finished, we shall have (the) peace. 43. They are fighting, but they do not wish to be killed. 44. We shall not see the laundress. 45. The girl broke her arm and wounded her foot.

41. QUARANTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON [karã:t e ynjem]

CHEZ LE MÉDECIN

I

416. Present Subjunctive:

Endings added to the stem of the present participle:

- e (silent)
- es (silent)
- e (silent)
- ions [-jõ]
- iez [-je]
- ent (silent)¹

I. donn ant

I may give, etc.

je donn e [dõn]

(tu donn es [dõn])

il donn e [dõn]

nous donn ions [dõnjõ]

vous donn iez [dõnje]

ils donn ent [dõn]

II. finiss ant

I may finish, etc.

je finiss e [finis]

(tu finiss es [finis])

il finiss e [finis]

nous finiss ions [finisjõ]

vous finiss iez [finisje]

ils finiss ent [finis]

¹ Compare these endings with the endings of the present indicative of the first conjugation. Compare the present indicative and the present subjunctive of *donner*.

III. **vend ant***I may sell, etc.***je vend e** [vā:d]

(tu vend es [vā:d])

il vend e [vā:d]**nous vend ions** [vādjō]**vous vend iez** [vādje]**ils vend ent** [vā:d]

417. Present Subjunctive of Irregular Verbs: In the following verbs the student need learn only one form, the first person singular, if he remembers what was said in § 321: that the first and second plural have the stem of the present participle. Note that, as in the case of the regular verbs, the first, second, third singular, and the third plural are pronounced alike.

avoir, ayant:	<i>j' aie</i> [ʒɛ] (tu aies [ɛ]) <i>il ait</i> [ɛ]	nous ayons [ɛjō] vous ayez [ɛje] ils aient [ɛ]
aller, allant:	<i>j' aille</i> [ʒa:j] (tu ailles [a:j]) <i>il aille</i> [a:j]	nous allions [aljō] vous alliez [alje] ils aillent [a:j]
prendre, prenant:	<i>je prenne</i> [prɛn] (apprendre) (tu prennes [prɛn]) (comprendre) <i>il prenne</i> [prɛn]	nous prenions [prɛnjō] vous preniez [prɛnje] ils prennent [prɛn]
venir, venant:	<i>je vienne</i> [vjɛn] (tenir) (tu viennes [vjɛn]) <i>il vienne</i> [vjɛn]	nous venions [vɛnjō] vous veniez [vɛnje] ils viennent [vjɛn]
vouloir, voulant:	<i>je veuille</i> [vœ:j] (tu veuilles [vœ:j]) <i>il veuille</i> [vœ:j]	nous voulions [vuljō] vous vouliez [vulje] ils veulent [vœ:j]
voir, voyant:	<i>je voie</i> [vwa] (tu voies [vwa]) <i>il voie</i> [vwa]	nous voyions [vwaijō] vous voyiez [vwaije] ils voient [vwa]
croire, croyant:	<i>je croie</i> [krwa] (tu croies [krwa]) <i>il croie</i> [krwa]	nous croyions [krwaijō] vous croyiez [krwaije] ils croient [krwa]

418. Uses of the Subjunctive :

1. In the third person corresponding to English *Let him* —! *Let them* —!

Qu'il finisse! Let him finish!

Qu'ils finissent! Let them finish!

2. After the conjunctions:

afin que [afɛ̃ kə], } *in order that*
pour que [puir kə], }

quoique [kwak], } *although*
bien que [bjɛ̃ kə], }

avant que [avɑ̃ kə], *before*

à moins que [a mwɛ̃ kə], *unless*

Il nous a dit cela afin que (pour que) nous le sachions, He has told us that *in order that* we should know it

Quoique (Bien que) vous sachiez tout, je ne vous aime pas, *Although* you know everything, I don't like you

Je ferai cela avant que vous y alliez, I shall do that *before* you go there

Vous ne pourrez pas vous lever de bonne heure, à moins que vous (ne¹) vous couchiez tout de suite, You will not be able to get up early *unless* you go to bed right away

419. Comment allez-vous? *How are you?*

Je vais bien, I am well

Je vais mieux, I am better

J'ai mal à la tête, I have a head ache

Les dents lui font mal, }

Il a mal aux dents, } He has a tooth ache = His teeth hurt him

420.

VOCABULARY

la bouche [buʃ], mouth

faible [fɛbl], weak

fort [fɔr], strong

le mal [mal] (*pl. maux* [mo]),

ache

malade [malad], sick

la maladie [maladi], sickness

le pays [pei], country

la santé [sɑ̃te], health

la tête [tɛt], head

¹ Regularly this redundant *ne* is required after *à moins que* and verbs of fearing (§ 429), but according to a decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction it may be omitted.

421.

DRILL

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Let him sell them! let them finish it! | Qu'il les vende! qu'ils le finissent! |
| 2. Let him have it! let them go there! | Qu'il l'ait! qu'ils y aillent! |
| 3. Let him take it! let them hold! | Qu'il le prenne! qu'ils tiennent! |
| 4. Let him wish it! let them believe it! | Qu'il le veuille! qu'ils le croient! |
| 5. Before you see it; that we may have it | Avant que vous le voyiez; pour que nous l'ayons |
| 6. Although I come; unless she learns | Quoique je vienne; à moins qu'elle (n')apprenne |
| 7. That we may believe it; before I wish | Afin que nous le croyions; avant que je veuille |
| 8. Unless you build; although we go | À moins que vous (ne) bâtissiez; bien que nous allions |
| 9. Let them rest! although he hurries | Qu'ils se reposent! quoiqu'il se dépêche |
| 10. That you may get up; unless you go to bed | Pour que vous vous leviez; à moins que vous (ne) vous couchiez |
| 11. Let them get married! unless we remember | Qu'ils se marient! à moins que nous (ne) nous rappelions |
| 12. Although he deceives; unless I am mistaken | Quoiqu'il trompe; à moins que je (ne) me trompe |
| 13. That we may take a walk; although you see him | Afin que nous nous promenions; bien que vous le voyiez |
| 14. Let them choose it! let him choose them! | Qu'ils le choisissent! qu'il les choisisse! |
| 15. Although you are better; so that you may rest | Quoique vous alliez mieux; pour que vous vous reposiez |
| 16. Unless you take a walk; although you believe it | À moins que vous (ne) vous promeniez; quoique vous le croyiez |
| 17. Let him tire himself! before he undresses | Qu'il se fatigue! avant qu'il se déshabille |

- | | |
|---|---|
| 18. Unless he has a tooth ache;
let them get up! | À moins qu'il (n')ait mal aux
dents; qu'ils se lèvent! |
| 19. Although we are mistaken;
that he may go there | Bien que nous nous trompions;
qu'il y aille |
| 20. How are they? she has a
head ache | Comment vont-ils? elle a mal à
la tête |
| 21. His teeth hurt him; let him
understand! | Les dents lui font mal; qu'il com-
prenne! |

422. Reading. Quoique je n'aie pas la santé bien bonne, je n'ai jamais été vraiment malade. J'ai eu mal à la tête de temps en temps, il est vrai, — mais qui est-ce qui n'a jamais eu de ces maux-là? Non, j'ai toutes mes dents, je n'en ai pas perdu une seule. Elles ne me font jamais mal. Le médecin ne le croit pas! Qu'il regarde! Voilà, j'ai ouvert la bouche pour qu'il les voie. Vous voyez que je les ai toutes. Bien que je n'aie que dix-neuf ans, je ne suis pas faible. Oui, je suis très fatigué. C'est parce que je me suis tant dépêché pour arriver ici avant que vous partiez. J'ai été malade pendant l'été, mais je vais mieux maintenant. Je vais parfaitement bien. Je n'ai pas de maladies. Que le médecin cherche! Il n'en trouvera pas. Je me promenais hier à la campagne et j'ai attrapé un rhume, mais cela sera vite parti, à moins qu'on(ne)m'envoie dans un pays où il fera trop froid. Ma mère ne veut pas que j'aille dans un pays où il y aura beaucoup de maladies. Mais quand je serai soldat, j'irai là où on m'enverra, qu'elle le veuille ou non! Je sais qu'on ne dit pas au soldat: «Choisissez!» Le capitaine dit au lieutenant: «Bien que ce soldat ait mal à la tête, qu'il aille où vont les autres! Mal à la tête? Qu'est-ce que cela veut dire? Cela veut dire qu'il a peur! Qu'il vienne me voir ce soir!» Vous croyez, peut-être, que j'aurai peur comme cela. À moins qu'on (ne) me prenne comme soldat, je partirai d'ici et je ne reviendrai plus. Quoique mon pays n'ait peut-être pas besoin de moi, je ne pourrais jamais voir partir l'armée sans partir avec elle. Que ma



Je me battraï

mère le croie ou non! Mon âge? Je vous l'ai déjà dit. J'ai dix-neuf ans. Comment! Je n'ai que quatorze ans? Qui dit
30 cela? Qu'il vienne ici me dire cela! On ne me prendra pas? Je suis trop jeune et je parle trop? Comment! Mon oncle ici! C'est ma mère qui vous a fait venir. Bien qu'on ne veuille pas me prendre parce que je suis trop jeune et parce que je parle trop, je serai soldat et je me battrai, vous allez
35 voir. N'en dites rien à ma mère, je vous prie.

423. Résumé. Santé, malade; mal à la tête; dents; médecin; bouche; dix-neuf ans; fatigué, pourquoi?; maladies, médecin; rhume, pays froid; mère; soldat malade; capitaine; avoir peur; prendre comme soldat; âge; trop jeune; oncle; serai soldat.

424. Oral Drill. 1. Although he rests. 2. Unless your health is weak. 3. In order that I may come. 4. Before we understand this. 5. How is he? 6. He is not well. 7. Let them hurry! 8. Although you close your mouth. 9. Unless he has a head ache. 10. In order that we may take a walk. 11. Before he holds it. 12. His teeth hurt him. 13. Let him go to bed! 14. Are you well? 15. In order that you may see it. 16. Before you are better. 17. Although he believes it. 18. Let them get up! 19. In order that you may rest. 20. Unless he has a sickness. 21. Before they see it. 22. I am better. 23. Let him dress! 24. Although I learn that. 25. In order that she may go. 26. Unless they remember. 27. He has a tooth ache. 28. Let them believe it! 29. How are you? 30. Are you not better? 31. Unless we are mistaken. 32. Before they take them. 33. She is not better to-day. 34. Although he has a cold.

II

425.

DIALOGUE

1. Good-day, sir! Although you didn't tell me to come this afternoon, I felt so sick that I couldn't go to bed without seeing you
 2. You remember that I asked you to come to my office every day. Do so unless you wish to catch the same disease as your brother has caught
 3. Although I am not better to-day, I believe that it is only a cold
 4. It's only a cold! You don't know then what that means? That means that you are very sick. Have you a head ache?
 5. Yes, I tired myself yesterday; I always have a head ache when I am tired
 6. You are certain that it is not your teeth that are aching? Truly! We know now that nearly all diseases come from the teeth. You don't believe it?
 7. Tell me so that I may understand well: How can you know that my teeth are hurting before you see them?
- Bonjour, monsieur! Quoique vous ne m'ayez pas dit de venir cette après-midi, je me sentais si malade que je ne pouvais pas me coucher sans vous voir
- Vous vous rappelez que je vous ai prié de venir chez moi tous les jours. Faites-le à moins que vous (ne) vouliez attraper la même maladie que votre frère a attrapée
- Bien que je n'aile pas mieux aujourd'hui, je crois que ce n'est qu'un rhume
- Ce n'est qu'un rhume! Vous ne savez donc pas ce que cela veut dire? Cela veut dire que vous allez très mal. Avez-vous mal à la tête?
- Oui, je me suis fatigué hier; j'ai toujours mal à la tête quand je suis fatigué
- Vous êtes certain que ce ne sont pas les dents qui vous font mal? Vraiment! Nous savons maintenant que presque toutes les maladies viennent des dents. Vous ne le croyez pas?
- Dites-moi pour que je comprenne bien: Comment pouvez-vous savoir que les dents me font mal avant que vous les voyiez?

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>8. Although you don't come often enough to my office, I always know what is hurting you. So don't say: "Let the doctor look at me before he comes and tells me what is hurting me!"</p> <p>9. You don't need to look! Let the others believe that, if they wish!</p> <p>10. Well! open your mouth so that I may see! There! What was I telling you? You have not a head ache, you have a tooth ache. You will feel perfectly well when you no longer have any teeth</p> <p>11. And yet I have a head ache, and it is not my teeth that ache!</p> | <p>Bien que vous ne veniez pas assez souvent chez moi, je sais toujours ce qui vous fait mal. Ne dites donc pas: «Que le médecin me regarde avant qu'il vienne me dire ce qui me fait mal!»</p> <p>Vous n'avez pas besoin de regarder? Que les autres croient cela, s'ils veulent!</p> <p>Eh bien! ouvrez la bouche pour que je voie! Voilà! Qu'est-ce que je vous disais? Vous n'avez pas mal à la tête, vous avez mal aux dents. Vous irez parfaitement bien quand vous n'aurez plus de dents</p> <p>Et pourtant j'ai mal à la tête, et ce ne sont pas les dents qui me font mal!</p> |
|---|---|

426. Conversation. 1. Will you leave this country unless they take you as a soldier? 2. Will you go before your mother is well? 3. Will he be able to enter the army although he is only sixteen? 4. Does he do that in order that the doctor may not see that he has a head ache? 5. Do you say that in order that your uncle may not come? 6. What does his mother not wish? 7. Will he do it although she does not wish it? 8. Will she send her brother unless her son comes? 9. What did the captain say to the lieutenant? 10. How did the boy catch a cold?

427. Theme. Although I am not very well now, I shall be much better soon. I am always better during the winter. My health is always less good before the snow comes.

Don't live here unless you believe that you will like (the) snow and (the) rain and (the) ice. We have a great deal of 5
it every winter. My husband is going to the city in order that he may finish some work that he has been doing for a long time. His mother asked me if I wished to go with him. I said: "Let him go alone! He will work better without me. I shall go there later unless they (on) take him as a soldier!" 10
You see, although I am always very well in the country, the city is always bad for me (hurts me). I never have a head ache here, but I am always sick in the city unless I wish to go to the doctor's every day. Your health is weak also, isn't it? I thought you were sick last winter. You had 15
a tooth ache for (during) a month? You don't call that a sickness? How are you now? The doctors think all (the) sicknesses come from the teeth. Do you believe that? Go to my doctor's in order that he may see what is the matter with you (what is hurting you). He will not let you go before 20
he understands your sickness.

428. Exercises. A. Conjugate:

Before I come.

Unless I go.

B. Drill on the present subjunctive of **donner, finir, vendre, avoir, aller, apprendre, tenir, vouloir, voir, croire**, using a conjunction, or 'Let him —!' 'Let them —!': § 480, *A.*

C. Students ask and answer questions such as:

How are you?

Have you a head ache?

42. QUARANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON [karüt døzjem]

LA PENSION

Je. I

429. Uses of the Subjunctive (*continued*):3. Usually with *impersonal* verbs:*Il faut* que vous sortiez, You must go out*Il vaut mieux* que vous soyez ici, It is better for you to be here (that you be here)*Il est possible* qu'il vienne, It is possible he may come*Il est impossible* qu'il vienne, It is impossible that he come

4. With some verbs expressing emotion:

Wishing:

<i>Je veux</i>	} que vous finissiez cela, I wish you to finish that
<i>Je désire</i>	

*Happiness and sorrow:**Je suis content* qu'il ait fait ceci, I am glad he has done this*Je regrette* qu'il soit si bête, I am sorry he is so stupid*Doubting:**Je doute* qu'il fasse cela, I doubt that he will do that*Fearing:**J'ai peur* qu'il ne¹ vienne, I am afraid he may come

430. Present Subjunctive of Irregular Verbs:

(a) être, étant:	<i>je sois</i> [swa]	<i>nous soyons</i> [swajõ]
	(tu sois [swa])	<i>vous soyez</i> [swaje]
	<i>il soit</i> [swa]	ils soient [swa]
faire, faisant:	<i>je fasse</i> [fas]	<i>nous fassions</i> [fasjõ]
	(tu fasses [fas])	<i>vous fassiez</i> [fasje]
	il fasse [fas]	ils fassent [fas]

¹See § 418, note 1.

pouvoir, pouvant : <i>je puisse</i> [pyis]	<i>nous puissions</i> [pyisjɔ]
(tu puisses [pyis])	<i>vous puissiez</i> [pyisje]
il puisse [pyis]	ils puissent [pyis]

(b) The following verbs follow the rule:

savoir, **sachant**: *je sache*, etc.

sentir, **sentant**: *je sente*, etc. (*So dormir, partir, sortir*)

écrire, **écrivait**: *j'écrive*, etc.

conduire, **conduisant**: *je conduise*, etc.

dire, **disant**: *je dise*, etc.

lire, **lisant**: *je lise*, etc.

431. **Connaître** [kənɛitr], *to know*¹; **connaissant** [kənɛsɑ̃],
connu [kɔny].

(Other forms follow the rules.)

432. **Mettre** [mɛtr], *to put*; **mettant** [mɛtɑ̃], **mis** [mi].

<i>Present indicative:</i>	<i>je mets</i> [mɛ]	<i>nous mettons</i> [mɛtɔ̃]
	(tu mets [mɛ])	<i>vous mettez</i> [mɛte]
	il met [mɛ]	ils mettent [mɛt]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

433. VOCABULARY

agréable [agreabl], agreeable	l'occasion [ləkazjɔ̃] (<i>f.</i>), opportunity
aimable [ɛmabl], amiable, kind	la partie [parti], part
américain [amerikɛ̃], American	la pension [pɑ̃sjɔ̃], pension,
causer [koze], to chat	boarding-house
content [kɔ̃tɑ̃], glad	le repas [rɛpa], meal
il faut [il fo], it is necessary (must)	rester [reste], to remain
inviter [ɛvite], to invite	la vie [vi], life
loin [lwɛ̃], far	
louer [lwe], to rent	

434. DRILL

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. It is possible for us to know it | Il est possible que nous le sachions |
| 2. It is impossible for you to write to them | Il est impossible que vous leur écriviez |

¹ The commonest use of **connaître** as distinguished from **savoir** is 'to be acquainted with.'

Je connais ce monsieur. I am acquainted with this gentleman.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 3. It is better for them to say it | Il vaut mieux qu'ils le disent |
| 4. I doubt that they understood it | Je doute qu'ils l'aient compris |
| 5. I fear you may have tired yourself | J'ai peur que vous (ne) vous soyez fatigué |
| 6. He wishes us to chat with her | Il veut que nous causions avec elle |
| 7. I am glad you rested | Je suis content que vous vous soyez reposé |
| 8. Do you desire him to do that? | Désirez-vous qu'il fasse cela? |
| 9. They must take it | Il faut qu'ils le prennent |
| 10. Are you glad he conducts himself well? | Êtes-vous content qu'il se conduise bien? |
| 11. It is better for you to be amiable | Il vaut mieux que vous soyez aimable |
| 12. We fear he has come to the boarding-house | Nous avons peur qu'il (ne) soit venu à la pension |
| 13. It is possible for him to learn this | Il est possible qu'il apprenne ceci |
| 14. Does she regret that we cannot go there? | Est-ce qu'elle regrette que nous ne puissions pas y aller? |
| 15. Is it impossible for her to hold it? | Est-il impossible qu'elle le tienne? |
| 16. I doubt his coming | Je doute qu'il vienne |
| 17. We must seize the opportunity to invite them | Il faut que nous saisissons l'occasion de les inviter |
| 18. It is better for us to remain there | Il vaut mieux que nous y restions |
| 19. We fear the meals are too expensive | Nous avons peur que les repas (ne) soient trop chers |
| 20. I am glad the life there is agreeable | Je suis content que la vie y soit agréable |

435. Reading. En arrivant à Paris, mon frère et moi, nous sommes descendus à un hôtel. Cet hôtel était très bon, mais étant venus à Paris pour apprendre à parler français nous ne voulions pas rester dans cet hôtel, parce que beau-

coup d'Américains y arrivaient tous les jours et sachant que nous parlions un peu le français ils désiraient que nous sortions avec eux toutes les après-midis. «Il faut que vous veniez avec nous,» disaient-ils; «nous serons bien contents de payer pour tous, vous n'aurez rien à payer.» Je disais toujours: «Je suis content que vous désiriez que nous sortions avec vous, mon frère et moi, mais j'ai beaucoup de travail à faire: il faut que je finisse l'étude d'un livre très difficile avant ce soir et je n'en ai lu qu'une petite partie. Je voudrais bien aller avec vous, mais je doute que je puisse le faire.» Mon frère disait: «Je regrette beaucoup qu'il me soit impossible de sortir avec vous cette après-midi, mais un de mes amis qui demeure loin d'ici m'a invité à dîner chez lui ce soir et il faut que je sois là avant sept heures.»

Un jour mon frère m'a dit: «Nous pourrions rester dans cet hôtel toute notre vie sans apprendre un mot de français: il y a trop d'Américains ici! Il faut absolument que nous cherchions un autre hôtel où il y ait moins d'Américains.» Je lui ai répondu: «Sortons! Allons chercher une pension de famille!» Une pension de famille, vous savez bien ce que c'est, n'est-ce pas? On demeure dans une bonne famille française: on y loue une chambre bon marché, on y prend tous ses repas, on a l'occasion de causer français tout le temps, on y rencontre de belles jeunes Françaises très aimables, — enfin si vous allez à Paris pour étudier le français, n'allez pas à un hôtel, allez dans une pension de famille. La vie y est très agréable: je sais ce que je dis, je ne me trompe pas. Vous n'avez pas besoin d'avoir peur que les repas y soient moins bons qu'au restaurant. Certainement il vaut mieux que vous fassiez cela pour que vous ayez l'occasion d'apprendre à parler français.

35

436. Résumé. À l'hôtel; apprendre français; Américains, sortir; payer; travail; livre; frère; un jour le frère dit; autre hôtel; pension; chambre, repas, causer; hôtel, pension.

437. Oral Drill. 1. He wishes you to talk with her. 2. Are you glad we are here? 3. We must know. 4. I doubt his doing it. 5. Let him feel! 6. In order that he may be able. 7. It is better for me to write. 8. Are you well? 9. We are glad you conduct yourself well. 10. They wish us to say it. 11. Let him read them! 12. He must put it in his mouth. 13. Do you doubt his coming? 14. I am sorry you don't know him. 15. We desire you to invite us. 16. It is better for him to remain here. 17. Are you sorry he came to this pension? 18. Are you afraid he will lose a part of it? 19. I doubt our remaining there. 20. They are glad the meals are good. 21. We are afraid he may lose his wife. 22. You desire him to be agreeable. 23. Unless you chat with her. 24. It is impossible that we rent this house. 25. Although they go far from here. 26. Before you take the opportunity. 27. It is possible he is kind. 28. We are very well. 29. Before she stopped. 30. Unless they went to bed late. 31. Although we got up early. 32. Before you took a walk. 33. It is possible she has come. 34. I am glad they remembered. 35. I doubt that he hurried. 36. I am sorry you tired yourself. 37. He fears you have conducted yourself badly. 38. Unless she went out. 39. It is impossible that they stopped there. 40. Before they dressed.

II

438.**DIALOGUE**

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Good-day, my friend! Where are you going so fast? | Bonjour, mon ami! Où allez-vous si vite? |
| 2. Hurry up, if you wish to come with me! | Dépêchez-vous, si vous voulez venir avec moi! |
| 3. Tell me what has happened! | Dites-moi ce qui est arrivé! |
| 4. I must be at my boarding-house in a quarter of an hour | Il faut que je sois à ma pension dans un quart d'heure |
| 5. Wait! Stay! When shall I | Attendez! Restez! Quand est-ce |

have the opportunity of chatting a little with you? It is impossible that you should arrive there before six o'clock. It is too far

6. Well! I'm not going there. I have gone only a very little part of the way. What a life! It is you who said to me: "It is better that you should go into a family boarding-house"

7. Life is not agreeable there? It is possible that the meals are not better there than at the restaurant, but the young girls are very amiable, are they not?

8. I am glad that you made me enter this boarding-house, because now I know how much more agreeable hotel life is

9. I regret that we were mistaken

10. You were not mistaken, you were right; I do not doubt that one learns French better in boarding-houses where one has so many opportunities to talk it — only in this boarding-house there are only English and Americans! They thought to leave far behind them the English

que j'aurai l'occasion de causer un peu avec vous? Il est impossible que vous y arriviez avant six heures. C'est trop loin

Eh bien! Je n'y vais pas. Je n'ai fait qu'une toute petite partie du chemin. Quelle vie! C'est vous qui m'avez dit: «Il vaut mieux que vous alliez dans une pension de famille»

La vie n'y est pas agréable? Il est possible que les repas n'y soient pas meilleurs qu'au restaurant, mais les jeunes filles sont très aimables, n'est-ce pas?

Je suis content que vous m'ayez fait entrer dans cette pension, parce que maintenant je sais combien la vie d'hôtel est plus agréable

Je regrette que nous nous soyons trompés

Vous ne vous êtes pas trompé, vous aviez raison; je ne doute pas qu'on (n')apprenne mieux le français dans les pensions où on a tant d'occasions de le parler — seulement, dans cette pension il n'y a que des Anglais et des Américains! Ils croyaient laisser loin derrière eux la langue anglaise, comme moi. Ils ne veulent pas rester dans la

language, like me. They don't want to remain in the boarding-house; and I, I must choose a good little hotel far from here and I must rent a little room there

pension; et moi, il faut que je choisisse un bon petit hôtel loin d'ici et que j'y loue une petite chambre

11. Listen! Stay here! It is better you should wait. Remember that it is possible that the others should seek to leave like you

Écoutez! Restez ici! Il vaut mieux que vous attendiez. Rappelez-vous qu'il est possible que les autres cherchent à partir comme vous

12. That's true! I don't doubt that they will do that. I stay

C'est vrai! Je ne doute pas qu'ils (ne) fassent cela. Je reste

439. Conversation. 1. Can one learn French at Paris although one lives at a hotel? 2. Do you desire me to go out with you? 3. Are you glad he wishes you to go out with him? 4. Must they finish their work before they go¹ to the theater? 5. Is it impossible for him to come¹ with me? 6. Is it better for one to learn¹ French at Paris or at Rheims? 7. Are they afraid you could not find a good boarding-house? 8. Isn't it better for one to eat¹ well? 9. Do you doubt that the meals are good? 10. Are you afraid your French friend may learn English before you learn French?

440. Theme. Although the French lady at the pension is very kind, I must leave unless she departs. Although you know her very well, you cannot know how much time I have lost in chatting with her. I am glad you have come.
5 You must remain here with me; you will see that what I say is true. The life here would be very agreeable, it is true, but you would do better to rent a room in that hotel before they are all taken. I am sorry you can't stay here, but you

¹ Though the infinitive is correct here, the student is expected to use the subjunctive.

see what would happen (arrive). It is impossible for one to write a book unless one seizes every opportunity to (de) work ¹⁰ during the greater part of the time. I doubt her leaving before her friend goes to (the) war, unless they get married soon. They will do it in order to be able to go to France together. You must not think that I do not like her, although I say that I have not been able to work while she is in the house. (The) ¹⁵ last winter she went to bed early every evening and she got up late, and she sang all the time while she was undressing and while she was dressing. She sings very well, but that is a little too much, unless I am mistaken.

441. Exercises. A. Drill on present subjunctive of *être*, *faire*, *pouvoir*, *savoir*, *dormir*, *écrire*, *conduire*, *dire*, *lire*, using *il faut*, *il vaut mieux*, etc. (§ 429, 3): § 480, A.

B. Drill on *connaître*, *mettre*: § 480, E.

43. QUARANTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON [karāt trwazjem]

LA MAISON

I

442. Demonstrative Pronouns:

- (a) *ceci* [səsi], *this*
cela [səla], *that* (§ 221)
- (b) *m. celui* [səlyi], *this or that (one), the one*
f. celle [sɛl], *this or that (one), the one*
m. ceux [sø], *these or those, the ones*
f. celles [sɛl], *these or those, the ones*

NOTE 1. -ci and -là may be added to the last four forms (see §220, note 2):

celui-ci, *celle-ci* = *this one*; *ceux-ci*, *celles-ci* = *these*
celui-là, *celle-là* = *that one*; *ceux-là*, *celles-là* = *those*

Celui-ci est bon, celui-là est mauvais, This one is good, that one is bad
 Celles-ci sont bonnes, celles-là sont mauvaises, These are good, those
 are bad

NOTE 2. For the Demonstrative *Adjective* (*ce, cette, ces*, see § 220).

443. Possessive Pronouns :

	<i>mine</i>	<i>(thine)</i>	<i>his, hers, its</i>
<i>m. s.</i>	le mien [mjɛ̃]	(le tien [tjɛ̃])	le sien [sjɛ̃]
<i>f. s.</i>	la mienne [mjɛn]	(la tienne [tjɛn])	la sienne [sjɛn]
<i>m. pl.</i>	les miens [mjɛ̃]	(les tiens [tjɛ̃])	les siens [sjɛ̃]
<i>f. pl.</i>	les miennes [mjɛn]	(les tiennes [tjɛn])	les siennes [sjɛn]

	<i>ours</i>	<i>yours</i>	<i>theirs</i>
<i>m. s.</i>	le nôtre [no:tr]	le vôtre [vo:tr]	le leur [lœ:r]
<i>f. s.</i>	la nôtre [no:tr]	la vôtre [vo:tr]	la leur [lœ:r]
<i>m. pl.</i>	les nôtres [no:tr]	les vôtres [vo:tr]	les leurs [lœ:r]
<i>f. pl.</i>	les nôtres [no:tr]	les vôtres [vo:tr]	les leurs [lœ:r]

NOTE. *De* and *à* contract with *le* and *les* :

Il parle du mien, He speaks of mine

À mon frère et au vôtre, To my brother and to yours

444. Possession is also indicated by the use of *à* (see §247, *B, C*).

Ce livre est à moi, This book is mine

or Ce livre est le mien, This book is mine

445. Recevoir [rəsəvwair], *to receive*; *recevant* [rəsəvã],
reçu [rəsy].

Present indicative:

je reçois [rəswa]

(*tu reçois* [rəswa])

il reçoit [rəswa]

nous recevons [rəsəvɔ̃]

vous recevez [rəsəve]

ils reçoivent [rəswa:v]

Future:

je recevrai [rəsəvre], etc.

Present subjunctive:

je reçoive [rəswa:v]

(*tu reçoives* [rəswa:v])

il reçoive [rəswa:v]

nous recevions [rəsəvjɔ̃]

vous receviez [rəsəvje]

ils reçoivent [rəswa:v]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

(Other forms follow the rules.)

j'aurais dû aller, I ought to have gone

la fourchette [furfɛt], fork
l'invité [lɛvite] (*m.*), guest
mettre la table, to set the table
le morceau [mɔrsɔ], piece
la nappe [nap], table-cloth
par [par], by, through
permettre [pɛrmɛtr], to permit
présenter [prezɑ̃te], to present,
introduce
la serviette [sɛrvjet], napkin
la tasse [tas], cup

1. This spoon and that one	Cette cuiller-ci et celle-là
2. This glass and that of my sister	Ce verre et celui de ma sœur

- | | |
|--|--|
| 3. These knives and those of my father | Ces couteaux et ceux de mon père |
| 4. Your table-cloth and mine | Votre nappe et la mienne |
| 5. My fork and yours | Ma fourchette et la vôtre |
| 6. Our kitchen and hers | Notre cuisine et la sienne |
| 7. Your bread and theirs | Votre pain et le leur |
| 8. He receives; they receive | Il reçoit; ils reçoivent |
| 9. We receive; you have received | Nous recevons; vous avez reçu |
| 10. He is to come; we are to go | Il doit venir; nous devons aller |
| 11. They are to carry; they were to show | Ils doivent porter; ils devaient montrer |
| 12. I ought to go; I had to speak | Je devrais aller; j'ai dû parler |
| 13. We shall owe; we shall receive | Nous devons; nous recevrons |
| 14. He receives his bread and mine | Il reçoit son pain et le mien |
| 15. Have you received yours? | Avez-vous reçu le vôtre? |
| 16. Those who have had to do it | Ceux qui ont dû le faire |
| 17. You must be tired | Vous devez être fatigué |
| 18. He will receive presents | Il recevra des cadeaux |
| 19. Although he has received | Quoiqu'il ait reçu |
| 20. He wishes that I may receive | Il veut que je reçoive |

450. Reading. Nous avons des invités aujourd'hui. Ce sont des parents de ma mère qui viennent de la campagne. Ils ne doivent rester en ville que quelques jours. Ma mère est très bonne; elle les a reçus très poliment. On doit toujours faire cela. Nous le leur devons parce que ce sont des parents. Celui qui ne reçoit pas poliment ses parents, ne devrait pas être poliment reçu par eux. Est-ce que vous vous montrez toujours aussi bon pour les vôtres que nous pour les nôtres? Ma mère dit à tout le monde: Permettez que je vous présente mon oncle, ma tante, ma cousine! Et tout le monde répond: Je suis charmé de faire leur connaissance.

Je croyais pourtant qu'on devait m'apporter des cadeaux. C'est ce que les parents doivent faire. Moi je n'ai vraiment rien reçu, quoique je leur aie donné de très jolies choses. 15 Ceux qui reçoivent des cadeaux, devraient aussi en donner; mais tout ce que je recevrai d'eux sera la petite boîte de bonbons — celle que vous voyez là sur la table — qu'ils m'ont mise entre les mains en arrivant. Elle ne vaut pas



Ma mère met la table

beaucoup, celle-là! Celles que ma sœur reçoit de son fiancé 20 sont beaucoup plus grandes. La mienne ne vaut que cinquante centimes; les siennes coûtent très cher. Tous mes petits amis reçoivent de jolis cadeaux de leurs parents: celui-ci reçoit un fusil des siens, celui-là une épée des siens. Moi je ne reçois des miens qu'une boîte de bonbons! Je 25 n'aime pas des parents comme les nôtres. Je voudrais en avoir comme les leurs. Pourquoi dites-vous: Quel garçon!

Ma mère met la table maintenant. Elle y a déjà mis les assiettes, les tasses, les couteaux, les fourchettes, les cuillers. Voyez-vous ces deux petites assiettes bleues? Celle-ci est 30

la mienne; celle-là est à ma sœur. Elle trouve la sienne plus jolie, mais elle a tort; moi j'aime mieux la mienne. On lui a donné la sienne pour son anniversaire; mon frère et moi nous avons reçu les nôtres à Noël. Voilà tout le monde assis autour
35 de la table. Celui-là c'est mon oncle, celle-ci c'est ma tante, ceux-là sont mes cousins. Regardez comme ils mangent, mes deux cousins! Celui-là ne dit pas un seul mot: il a toujours un morceau de pain dans la bouche. Celui-ci parle tout le temps. Il ne doit pas être assis à la table: il est trop
40 jeune. Il a pris la serviette de son frère parce que la sienne est tombée sous ses pieds—et il mange avec son couteau! Je n'aime pas mes parents—mais je pense que vous devez trouver les vôtres plus charmants que les miens.

451. Résumé. Parents en ville; reçus; présenter; cadeaux; bonbons; fiancé; petits amis; mettre la table; assiettes bleues; anniversaire, Noël; cousins, pain, jeune, serviette, couteau.

452. Oral Drill. 1. This glass and that one. 2. Your cup and mine. 3. This spoon and that of my sister. 4. My plate and his. 5. These presents and those of my brother. 6. Your presents and hers. 7. These napkins and those of your mother. 8. Our napkins and yours (*pl.*). 9. That fork and this one. 10. Her fork and yours. 11. Their bread and ours. 12. My bread and hers. 13. Those who receive us. 14. The one who receives me. 15. We receive them. 16. You will receive her. 17. She would not receive them. 18. Has she received them? 19. She is to speak. 20. They are to go out. 21. We are to depart. 22. You were to come. 23. You ought to go. 24. Have you received your letters? 25. I am to receive some. 26. The one who had to carry them. 27. She must be tired. 28. Although I have received them. 29. Do you wish that we receive her? 30. You must depart.

II

453.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Where is the maid? She ought to be here | Où est la bonne? Elle devrait être ici |
| 2. Here I am, madam. I had to wait a long time at the grocer's. He was to receive our bread from the baker's at three o'clock. He always receives ours before that, but to-day he received it only at four o'clock | Me voici, madame. J'ai dû attendre longtemps chez l'épicier. Il devait recevoir notre pain de chez le boulanger à trois heures. Il reçoit toujours le nôtre avant cela, mais aujourd'hui il ne l'a reçu qu'à quatre heures |
| 3. You ought to go to another grocer's! Why wait at that one's store? | Vous devriez aller chez un autre épicier! Pourquoi attendre chez celui-là? |
| 4. What am I to do now, madam? | Qu'est-ce que je dois faire maintenant, madame? |
| 5. You must set the table. I have some guests who are to come soon | Vous devez mettre la table. J'ai des invités qui doivent venir bientôt |
| 6. Always guests! Those who receive guests and who keep open house every day ought to pay their maids better. Those who have all the pleasure ought at least to pay those who do all the work | Toujours des invités! Ceux qui reçoivent des invités et qui tiennent maison ouverte tous les jours devraient mieux payer leurs bonnes. Ceux qui ont tout le plaisir devraient au moins payer celles qui font tout le travail |
| 7. You forget the tips and the presents that you receive | Vous oubliez les pourboires et les cadeaux que vous recevez |
| 8. I don't receive so many as that! | Je n'en reçois pas tant que cela! |
| 9. There are two of my guests already! The one who is ringing is my uncle, and the one who is coming | Voilà déjà deux de mes invités! Celui qui sonne c'est mon oncle, et celle qui vient avec lui c'est ma tante. Mon mari |

with him is my aunt. My husband will receive them in the parlor. I had to come to make the tea in the kitchen. Have you received the cakes that I ordered?

10. They are these perhaps?
11. No, it is not those. They were to bring them at two o'clock. They ought to have arrived a long time ago
12. Must I set the table?
13. How! you have not set it yet! Well, put the knives, the forks and the spoons beside the plates. But must I tell you all that? You must know it already. Put also one of these boxes of candy beside each plate. Each one is to have his. And don't forget the napkins! Yesterday you put on only mine and my husband's! We had ours, I mine and he his, — and my guests did not have theirs!

les recevra dans le salon. J'ai dû venir faire le thé dans la cuisine. Est-ce que vous avez reçu les gâteaux que j'ai commandés?

Ce sont peut-être ceux-ci?

Non, ce ne sont pas ceux-là. On devait les apporter à deux heures. Ils auraient dû arriver il y a longtemps

Faut-il que je mette la table?

Comment! vous ne l'avez pas mise encore! Eh bien, mettez les couteaux, les fourchettes et les cuillers à côté des assiettes. Mais est-ce que je dois vous dire tout cela? Vous devez le savoir déjà. Mettez aussi une de ces boîtes de bonbons à côté de chaque assiette. Chacun doit avoir la sienne. Et n'oubliez pas les serviettes! Hier vous avez mis seulement la mienne et celle de mon mari. Nous avions les nôtres, moi la mienne et lui la sienne, — et mes invités n'avaient pas les leurs!

454. Conversation. 1. Did you have guests yesterday? 2. Where did they come from and how long were they to stay at your house? 3. How did you receive them? 4. Ought those who do not receive their relatives politely to be politely received by them? 5. She has many relatives, and I also; does she show herself as good to hers as I am (it) to

mine? 6. If we said: Allow us to introduce our uncle to you, what would you answer? 7. Are you to bring your cousins some presents? 8. Ought the one who receives a present also to give something? 9. How much is this little box of candy worth, which I have received? 10. Do you like your relatives as much as ours?

455. Theme. I always receive my guests as politely as you receive yours. I am to receive some poor relations to-day, and I shall receive them very politely. I owe it to them because they have always received me very well. They always say to their guests: Permit us to introduce to you our 5 cousins, and all their friends reply that they will be charmed to make our acquaintance. The maid has set the table. You ought to see the blue plates, the cups, the pretty knives and forks and spoons, the white table-cloth, and the napkins beside the plates. We have received ten boxes of 10 candy from the grocer. Each one is to have his beside his plate. You will receive yours and I shall receive mine. But you must wait. The cakes which we were to receive from the grocer at noon have not yet arrived. The maid has had to go to the grocer's, and my mother will have to make the 15 tea which we are to drink. The guests are to be seated around the table and the maid is to carry the tea and the cakes to all those who ask for any. Do you see those big chairs? That one is for my father, this one is mine. That chair beside mine is yours. You must not eat my candy, 20 however, which is between my plate and yours. Wait!

456. Exercises. A. Fill the following blanks, with (1) *this*, (2) *that*, (3) *this one* (m. and f.), (4) *that one* (m. and f.):

— is funny.

— is better (*vaut mieux*)
than —.

— goes quickly.

— means something.

B. Translate the following:

This plate (cake, fork, knife, table-cloth) is the one you are looking for.

Change to the plural.

C. Fill the following blanks with (1) *mine*, (2) *his*, (3) *ours*, (4) *yours*, (5) *theirs*:

These (*m.*) are —.

That one (*m. and f.*) is —.

Those (*f.*) are —.

This one (*m. and f.*) is —.

D. Drill on **recevoir, devoir**: § 480, *E*.

44. QUARANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON [karã:t katriem]

UNE LETTRE: LE PAQUEBOT, LA DOUANE

I

457. Summary of Interrogative and Relative Pronouns:

[For reference]

1. Note that the interrogative adjective *what? which?* is *quel? quelle?* *quels? quelles?*: *Quel livre avez-vous? Quel livre est-ce que vous avez? What book have you?*

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

I. PERSONS (*who? whom?*)

Subject:

2. (a) *Qui est ici?*

3. *Qui est-ce qui est ici?*

Who is here?

Object:

4. (b) *Qui (voyez-vous)?*

5. *Qui (est-ce que vous voyez)?*

Whom do you see?

Object of prep.:

6. (c) *Avec qui (allez-vous)?*

7. *Avec qui (est-ce que vous allez)?*

With whom are you going?

8. Note that *which (one)?* = *lequel?*: *Lequel (des hommes) est ici? Which (of the men) is here? Lequel (voyez-vous)? Lequel (est-ce que vous voyez)? Avec lequel (allez-vous)? Avec lequel (est-ce que vous allez)?*

II. THINGS (*what?*)

Subject:

9. (a) 10. *Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table?*
What is on the table?

Object:

11. (b) *Que (voyez-vous)?* 12. *Qu'(est-ce que vous voyez)?*
What do you see?

Object of prep.:

13. (c) *Avec quoi (écrivez-vous)?* 14. *Avec quoi (est-ce que vous*
With what do you write? écrivez)?

15. Note that *which (one)?* = *lequel?*: *Lequel (des crayons) est sur la table? Which (of the pencils) is on the table? etc.* See 8.

III. *What?* (asking for a definition)

16. What kind of thing is . . . ? *Qu'est-ce que c'est qu'un chameau?*
What is a camel?

17. Compare: *What is your opinion? Quelle est votre opinion?* See interrogative adjectives above.

IV. *What* = *that which*

Subject:

18. (a) *Je sais ce qui est ici.* I know what is here.

Object:

19. (b) *Je sais ce que vous* I know what you see.
voyez.

Predicate with être:

20. (c) *Je sais ce que vous êtes.* I know what you are.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

I. PERSONS (*who, whom*)

Subject:

21. (a) *L'enfant qui est ici est* The child who is here is good.
sage.

Object:

22. (b) *L'enfant que vous voyez est sage.* The child whom you see is good.

Object of prep.:

23. (c) *L'enfant avec qui vous allez est sage.* The child with whom you go is good.
 24. (d) *L'enfant dont je parle est sage.* The child of whom I speak is good

II. THINGS (*which*)

Subject:

25. (a) *Le livre qui est ici est bon.* The book which is here is good.

Object:

26. (b) *Le livre que vous voyez est bon.* The book which you see is good.

Object of prep.:

27. (c) *Le crayon avec lequel vous écrivez est bon.* The pencil with which you write is good.
 28. (d) *Le livre dont vous parlez est bon.* The book of which you speak is good.

458. Remarks on Interrogative and Relative Pronouns:

1. Where parentheses are used (see 4, 5, 6, 7, etc.) all the student has to remember is the equivalence of the inverted and *est-ce que* forms: see § 27.

2. Usage is determined by the models in § 27.

Pronoun: *Qui voit-il?* Whom does *he* see?

Noun: *Qui est-ce que l'homme voit?* Whom does the *man* see?

3. Both parts of *lequel* are declined (*lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*). Combined with *à* and *de*:

auquel	à laquelle	auxquels	auxquelles
duquel	de laquelle	desquels	desquelles

4. Note that *what?*, subject of a verb, must be translated *qu'est-ce qui?* (10). There is no form for 9.

5. Note **dont** (28), *of which*. With prepositions other than *of*, use **lequel** (27).

6. *whose?* (interrogative) usually = **à qui?** (*to whom?*): see § 247, C.

whose (relative) = **dont** (*of whom, of which*), both of persons and things.

Whose book is this? **À qui est ce livre?**

I know the man whose son has gone, **Je connais l'homme dont le fils est parti**

Here is the flag whose color is blue! **Voici le drapeau dont la couleur est bleue!**

459. **Craindre** [krɛ̃:dr], *to fear*; **craignant** [krɛ̃nɑ̃], *crainť* [krɛ̃].

<i>Present indicative:</i> je crains [krɛ̃]	nous craignons [krɛ̃nɔ̃]
(tu crains [krɛ̃])	vous craignez [krɛ̃nɛ]
il craint [krɛ̃]	ils craignent [krɛ̃n]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

460. Conjugate like **craindre**: **plaindre** [plɛ̃:dr], *to pity*; **se plaindre**, *to complain*.

461. **Ouvrir** [uvrɪr], *to open*; **ouvrant** [uvrɑ̃], **ouvert** [uvɛr].

<i>Present indicative:</i> j'ouvre [ʒu:vr]	nous ouvrons [uvrɔ̃]
(tu ouvres [u:vr])	vous ouvrez [uvrɛ]
il ouvre [u:vr]	ils ouvrent [u:vr]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

462. Conjugate like **ouvrir**: **couvrir** [kuvrɪr], *to cover*; **offrir** [ɔfrɪr], *to offer*; **souffrir** [sufɪrɪr], *to suffer*.

463.

VOCABULARY

asseyez-vous! [aseʒe vu], sit
down!

le bateau [bato], boat

à bord [bɔr], on board

la cabine [kabin], cabin

dévouer [devwe], *to devote*

la douane [dwan], custom-house

il faudra [fodra], *fut. of il faut*

le matelot [matlo], sailor
 la mer [mɛr], sea
 le paquebot [pakbo], steamer
 plusieurs [plyzjø:r], several
 le pont [pɔ̃], deck

le quai [kɛ], wharf, dock
 la terre [tɛr], land
 traverser [travɛrsɛ], to cross
 le voyage [vwaja:ʒ], journey
 voyager [vwajaze], to travel

464.

DRILL

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| 1. Of what? of whom? | De quoi? de qui? |
| 2. To what? to whom? | À quoi? à qui? |
| 3. The man to whom, for whom | L'homme à qui, pour qui |
| 4. The boat to which, for which | Le bateau auquel, pour lequel |
| 5. The steamer on board which | Le paquebot à bord duquel |
| 6. Which one of these sailors? | Lequel de ces matelots? |
| 7. For whom? for what? | Pour qui? pour quoi? |
| 8. To which of the steamers? | Auquel des paquebots? |
| 9. To which of the ladies? | À laquelle des dames? |
| 10. Of what do you complain? | De quoi vous plaignez-vous? |
| 11. The door which is open | La porte qui est ouverte |
| 12. The door which I open | La porte que j'ouvre |
| 13. The door through which | La porte par laquelle |
| 14. The man who sees John | L'homme qui voit Jean |
| 15. The man whom John sees | L'homme que voit Jean (or que Jean voit) |
| 16. The lady of whom we complain | La dame dont nous nous plaignons |
| 17. Who was opening the door? | Qui ouvrait la porte? |
| 18. Which sea have you crossed? | Quelle mer avez-vous traversée? |
| 19. Which of the cabins is yours? | Laquelle des cabines est la vôtre? |
| 20. What! we are at the wharf! | Quoi! nous sommes au quai! |

465. Reading.

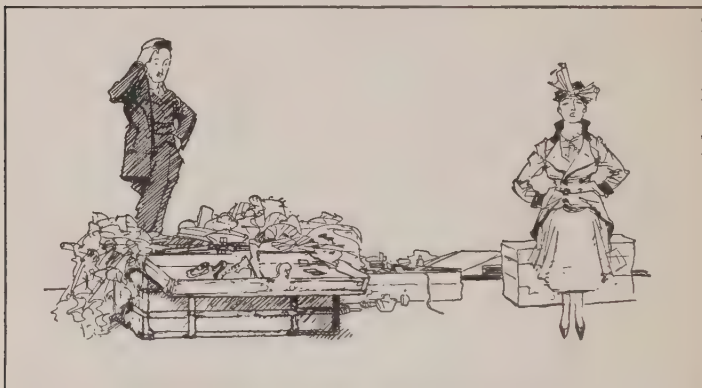
Ma chère amie,

Me voilà enfin sur le grand bateau, dont je vous ai parlé dans ma lettre d'hier, et sur lequel je craignais presque de mettre le pied. Enfin je voyage, je traverse la mer! Je

crains beaucoup que le temps ne soit bien mauvais. Quoique 5
je ne craigne rien sur terre, j'ai toujours craint la mer; les
vents, les éclairs, le tonnerre, tout cela loin de la terre me
fait peur!

J'ai trouvé ici beaucoup de lettres — moi qui craignais
de ne rien recevoir, j'ai reçu au moins cent lettres et cartes 10
postales! Je me plaignais quelquefois d'avoir moins d'amis
que les autres — il ne faut plus que je me plaigne de cela!
Je vais à la poste chercher mes lettres — dans le bateau,
naturellement — nous avons une poste ici! Je les demande,
je les reçois, je les ouvre, je les lis, tout cela avec le plus grand 15
plaisir du monde; mais répondre à toutes ces lettres, après
les avoir reçues, ouvertes et lues, voilà, je le crains, quelque
chose qui sera moins agréable, — il y en a tant! Plaignez-
moi — et, si vous n'êtes pas très contente de cette lettre,
ne vous plaignez pas de moi! Tous mes amis et amies m'ont 20
écrit. Auxquels répondre tout de suite? Lesquels atten-
dront? De quoi leur parler? — il y a tant de choses à dire!
Heureusement j'ai beaucoup de très belles cartes postales
illustrées sur chacune desquelles je n'aurai qu'à écrire deux
mots. Mais j'ai tant d'amis dont j'ai reçu des lettres, des 25
cadeaux, des fleurs, des boîtes de bonbons, et auxquels il
faudra que j'écrive des lettres et non des cartes. Vous en
êtes une des premières, et je commence par vous, parce que
je ne voudrais jamais que vous vous plaigniez de moi, comme
nous nous sommes plaintes de ma sœur qui a passé ses 30
vacances de Noël à New-York — vous vous rappelez cela,
n'est-ce pas? — sans que nous ayons reçu un seul mot d'elle!
Moi je ne me suis pas arrêtée chez les amis dont je vous avais
parlé et chez lesquels ma sœur a fait visite si souvent. Je
craignais que le paquebot ne parte sans moi! Et puis, j'ai 35
dû aller en ville acheter une autre malle. J'en ai trois main-
tenant! Quoi! trois malles! direz-vous. Oui, mademoiselle!
J'en ai une dans laquelle je n'ai que des robes et des cha-
peaux, une autre, plus grande, où je mets mon linge, mes

40 souliers et je ne sais quoi encore, et enfin une troisième dans laquelle je ne porte que des livres. Je crains que je ne reste longtemps à la douane en descendant du paquebot. Et on ne me dira pas: Asseyez-vous, mademoiselle!



Je crains que je ne reste longtemps à la douane

Écrivez-moi encore l'adresse de ces deux amis français
45 dont vous me parliez et auxquels vous voulez que j'apporte vos lettres. J'ai perdu le carnet dans lequel j'avais écrit cela. Auquel des deux dois-je donner la boîte de cigares, et auquel l'autre petite boîte que vous avez si bien enveloppée, et dans laquelle il y a, je pense, des mouchoirs de soie? Pour qui
50 les cigares? et pour qui les mouchoirs?

Écrivez-moi bientôt. Que dit-on chez nous? De quoi parle-t-on? Avec lesquels de mes amis causez-vous de moi? J'écrirai à tout le monde, mais qu'on ne s'en plaigne pas si je n'écris que deux mots à chacun!

55

Votre amie bien dévouée;

Henriette.

466. **Résumé.** Grand bateau; bon matelot; terre, mer; cent lettres; peu d'amis; une poste; lettres reçues; y ré-

pondre; cartes; cadeaux; par qui commencer?; sœur, Noël; amis à New-York; trois malles; douane; adresse perdue; cigares, mouchoirs; écrire.

467. Oral Drill. 1. To whom do you speak? 2. Of what do you speak? 3. Which one of the steamers? 4. On which of the boats? 5. For whom is that box? 6. To which of the wharves are you going? 7. Of what does she complain? 8. For whom do you open the door? 9. The door which she opens. 10. Of what cabin do you speak? 11. The steamer on board which you came. 12. On board which of the steamers did she come? 13. The man whom I see. 14. The lady who sees me. 15. The sailor of whom I spoke. 16. The custom-house through which we passed. 17. Pity me! 18. Don't pity him! 19. Don't complain! 20. Open the door at the left! 21. We have opened the door at the right. 22. To which of the boats are you going? 23. Who came? 24. Whom have you seen? 25. To whom did she speak? 26. What! is it you? 27. Which of the doors did you open? 28. For whom do you open the door? 29. The sailor of whom I was complaining. 30. Of what do you complain?

II

468.

DIALOGUE

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. What! you are traveling again? | Quoi! vous voyagez encore? |
| 2. Yes, I am going to cross the sea this time. I am going to make that trip to France of which I have spoken so much and for which I have at last enough money | Oui, je vais traverser la mer cette fois. Je vais faire ce voyage en France dont j'ai tant parlé et pour lequel j'ai enfin assez d'argent |
| 3. You don't fear the sea then at this season? | Vous ne craignez donc pas la mer dans cette saison? |

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>4. No, I don't fear it any more, this sea on which I have traveled so many times, and of which you are afraid because you have never crossed it. The first time that I went to France, I feared it very much, I also</p> <p>5. I, I have always feared it. Is it big, the boat in which you will travel?</p> <p>6. Do you remember the boat of which you spoke to me so often and in which you came to New York?</p> <p>7. The one on the deck of which we walked so much? I remember it perfectly</p> <p>8. Well, the one in which I shall travel is much larger than that one</p> <p>9. What! what are you telling me?</p> <p>10. Yes, you will see. Come there immediately with me. Here we are already on the wharf. They are opening the door through which one goes to the boat. Pass through that open door there, to the right</p> <p>11. Through which of these doors? I see several of them</p> <p>12. What! you don't see that little door which the em-</p> | <p>Non, je ne la crains plus, cette mer sur laquelle j'ai voyagé tant de fois, et dont vous avez peur parce que vous ne l'avez jamais traversée. La première fois que je suis allé en France, je la craignais beaucoup, moi aussi</p> <p>Moi, je l'ai toujours crainte. Est-il grand, le paquebot sur lequel vous voyagerez?</p> <p>Vous rappelez-vous le bateau dont vous me parliez si souvent et sur lequel vous êtes venu à New-York?</p> <p>Celui sur le pont duquel nous nous promenions tant? Je me le rappelle parfaitement</p> <p>Eh bien, celui sur lequel je voyagerai est beaucoup plus grand que celui-là</p> <p>Quoi! que me dites-vous?</p> <p>Oui, vous verrez. Venez-y tout de suite avec moi. Nous voilà déjà sur le quai. On ouvre la porte par laquelle on va au bateau. Passez par cette porte ouverte, là, à droite</p> <p>Par laquelle de ces portes? J'en vois plusieurs</p> <p>Quoi! vous ne voyez pas cette petite porte que les employés</p> |
|--|---|

ployees are opening, there
at the left?

ouvrent, là, à gauche?

13. At the left! You said: at
the right! Now I see it,
the big steamer on board
which you are going to
travel

À gauche! Vous avez dit: à droite!
Maintenant je le vois, le grand
paquebot à bord duquel vous
allez voyager

14. Let's go on board! They
are opening my cabin.
Let's enter it! Sit down!

Allons à bord! On ouvre ma
cabine. Entrons-y! Asseyez-
vous!

469. Conversation. 1. Do you fear to cross the sea? 2. What is one afraid of and of what does one complain? 3. Did you receive several letters from your friends? 4. What did you do when they gave you your letters? 5. Which one of your friends did you answer at once? 6. Do you pity me because I have so many letters and cards which I must answer? 7. To which of your friends are you writing and of what do you speak? 8. Have you complained of me because I did not stop at your house? 9. Are you not afraid that you may remain a long time at the custom-house? 10. To whom will you give the box in which you have those good cigars?

470. Theme.

My dear Henrietta:

I am going to travel! I shall cross the sea on a big steamer. I used to fear the sea a little, but I do not fear it now. I have always feared (the) bad weather much less than you, although I have not traveled as often as you. I came 5 to New York yesterday evening on a little boat which stopped in front of the wharf. I am staying at the house of my aunt Mary, of whom I have already spoken to you in one of my letters. She is a very old lady at whose house I always stay when I am in town. She always opens her house to me, and 10 she receives me with the greatest pleasure in the world. I

stay only at her house, although I sometimes fear that my visits may not be agreeable for her. I have so many friends, you know, who come there when I am there. She is all alone
 15 in her house. Don't you pity her? But she fears nothing and she never complains, although she is always alone there. I have received several letters which I shall answer soon. Of what do you wish that I write to you? Of my dresses, of which I have bought four? Of the trunks, in which I have
 20 put my dresses? Of my books, of which I have not yet opened the first one? Of the picture-postals of which I have a hundred, and on each of them I shall write only six words? Of the big steamer on board which I shall soon be, and in which I have a pretty little cabin? But it is already mid-
 25 night, — I shall go to bed now and shall write no more this evening.

Your most devoted friend,

Mary.

471. Exercises. Fill the following blanks with pronouns, using each blank as many times as possible:

— is here?

— does the man fear?

— do you fear?

With — are you doing that?

— of the children (houses) do you like the best?

Drill on **craindre, se plaindre**: § 480, *E*.

Drill on **offrir, souffrir**: § 480, *E*.

45. QUARANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON [karã:t sêkjẽm]

Review

I

472. 1. Let her finish! 2. Although he takes it. 3. Unless he comes. 4. Let them hold it! 5. Before he goes. 6. Unless they be. 7. In order that we may have it.

8. We remember it. 9. Unless we remember it. 10. You are taking a walk. 11. Although we are taking a walk. 12. He chooses them. 13. Unless he chooses me. 14. She has a head ache. 15. Although she has a tooth ache. 16. You must be here. 17. It is possible that he may do that. 18. I fear that they have done it. 19. Are they doing that? 20. Are you glad that I have come? 21. Why have I come? 22. Do you wish us to go out? 23. He must go out. 24. I doubt that he will be able. 25. Let them say it! 26. He fears I may have tired myself. 27. It is not possible you should know that. 28. I am glad that you are hurrying. 29. We must take them. 30. Do you wish that he should conduct himself badly? 31. It is better that he go. 32. He must learn. 33. We doubt their coming. 34. Let him choose this knife or that one! 35. That table-cloth or this one. 36. These glasses and those. 37. My uncle and yours. 38. Your aunts and mine. 39. My hand and his. 40. My bread and hers. 41. They receive these cakes and those. 42. He will receive this box and that of his sister. 43. He is to come. 44. We are to go. 45. Those who had to speak. 46. Although he has received it. 47. They wish that he receive them. 48. To whom does he say it? 49. Of what do you speak? 50. Which sailor? 51. Which one of the boats? 52. Those whom I see. 53. Which ones do you see? 54. The lady of whom I was complaining. 55. The door through which he was coming.

II

473. 1. Although his health is good, he has a head ache. 2. Unless you close your mouth, you will have a tooth ache. 3. Let him go to bed, unless he is better. 4. I have hurried so that you may take a walk with me. 5. Unless he was mistaken, she was glad that you are here. 6. Do you wish that we do it? 7. Is it better that we remain in the boarding-house? 8. Are you not afraid that he may not write?

9. Do you doubt my doing it? 10. We are glad that you know her. 11. Although she went to bed late, she got up early. 12. Hurry up, if you wish her to come! 13. He must be at the theater at eight o'clock. 14. Although you have no napkin, I have mine. 15. They have received our letter and his. 16. I had my gun and that of John, my sword and that of Peter. 17. We had our guns and those of John, our swords and those of Peter. 18. Those who receive us well do what they ought to do. 19. You are to cross the sea and I am to stay in New York. 20. My box of candy and his are larger than that of Mary. 21. This boat and the one in which you traveled are very small. 22. To whom is the sailor speaking, and of what? 23. On board of which of these steamers will you travel? 24. For whom were you making this? 25. Of whom or of what are you complaining? 26. I am complaining of the sailors and of their boats. 27. Of which of the sailors? 28. Enter my cabin and sit down! 29. Although I have crossed it several times, I fear the sea. 30. Which (ones) of these letters have you answered? 31. From which of your friends did you receive letters and which (ones) of these letters will you answer?

ADDENDA

Notes on Past Definite and Imperfect Subjunctive

474. These tenses are rarely used in conversation or in informal discourse, such as letters. They belong to purely literary style; consequently, before the student begins to read he must master them.

475. Endings of Past Definite:

<i>First Conjugation</i>		<i>Second and Third Conjugations</i>	
-ai [e]	-âmes [am] ¹	-is [i]	-îmes [im]
-as [a] ¹	-âtes [at] ¹	-is [i]	-îtes [it]
-a [a]	-èrent [ɛ:r]	-it [i]	-irent [i:r]

¹ See Introduction, §§16, 1 and 4; 38, 4, (Exceptions)

I gave, etc.

je donn **ai** [dɔne]
 (tu donn **as** [dɔna])
 il donn **a** [dɔna]
 nous donn **âmes** [dɔnam]
 vous donn **âtes** [dɔnat]
 ils donn **èrent** [dɔnɛ:r]

I sold, etc.

je vend **is** [vādi]
 (tu vend **is** [vādi])
 il vend **it** [vādi]
 nous vend **îmes** [vādim]
 vous vend **îtes** [vādit]
 ils vend **irent** [vādi:r]

NOTE. There are no irregularities in the past definite not offered in the first person, even in the case of irregular verbs. In a large number of irregular verbs (*avoir, être, recevoir, etc.*) *i* in the ending is replaced by *u*.

476. Endings of Imperfect Subjunctive. There are no departures from the rule, even in the irregular verbs, in the formation of the imperfect subjunctive: add the endings to the second person singular of the past definite.

For the third singular, substitute **t** for the **s** of the past definite and put a circumflex over the vowel.

I. tu donn as

I might (should) give, etc.
 je donnas **se** [dɔnas]
 (tu donnas **ses** [dɔnas])
 il donnât [dɔna]¹
 nous donnas **sions** [dɔnasjɔ̃]
 vous donnas **siez** [dɔnasje]
 ils donnas **sent** [dɔnas]

II. and III. tu (fin is) vend is

I might (should) sell, etc.
 je vendis **se** [vādis]
 (tu vendis **ses** [vādis])
 il vendît [vādi]
 nous vendis **sions** [vādisjɔ̃]
 vous vendis **siez** [vādisje]
 ils vendis **sent** [vādis]

477. The imperfect subjunctive is used after past tenses and the conditional tense:

Je voulais (voudrais) qu'ils vendissent leur maison, I wished (should wish) them to sell their house

Quoiqu'il eût bien travaillé, je ne l'ai pas payé, Although he had worked well, I have not paid him

NOTE. The present subjunctive is generally used in place of the imperfect subjunctive in conversation and in informal discourse.

478. Exercises. Drill on past definite (of any verbs): § 480, A.

479. Drill on imperfect subjunctive: § 480, A, using the formula *il désirait que* —.

¹ See page 270, footnote.

SCHEMES FOR VERB DRILL

480. A. *Single Tense.* Fill the following blanks:

- | | | |
|----------|----------------|----------------|
| 1. you — | 3. they (m.) — | 5. they (f.) — |
| 2. I — | 4. he — | 6. we — |
| | | 7. she — |

B. *Present, past indefinite, future:*

- | | | |
|----------------|---------------|-----------------|
| 1. I have — | 6. he has — | 11. they will — |
| 2. you — | 7. they — | 12. I shall — |
| 3. they have — | 8. you have — | 13. he — |
| 4. I — | 9. you will — | 14. he will — |
| 5. we shall — | 10. we — | 15. we have — |

C. *Present, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect:*

- | | | |
|---------------|-------------------|------------------|
| 1. she has — | 9. they were —ing | 17. —ing |
| 2. I shall — | 10. we — | 18. you have — |
| 3. —ing | 11. you will — | 19. they will — |
| 4. you — | 12. —ing | 20. we were —ing |
| 5. I was —ing | 13. she — | 21. they — |
| 6. he will — | 14. they have — | 22. he was —ing |
| 7. I — | 15. we shall — | 23. I have — |
| 8. we have — | 16. you were —ing | 24. —ing |

D. *Present, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect, conditional, imperative:*

- | | | |
|----------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| 1. —ing | 12. he will — | 23. —ing |
| 2. he would — | 13. I — | 24. she — |
| 3. she has — | 14. they would — | 25. they have — |
| 4. —! | 15. —! | 26. we shall — |
| 5. I shall — | 16. we have — | 27. you were —ing |
| 6. you would — | 17. they were —ing | 28. they will — |
| 7. —ing | 18. —ing | 29. you have — |
| 8. you — | 19. we should — | 30. we were —ing |
| 9. I was —ing | 20. you will — | 31. they — |
| 10. let us —! | 21. let us —! | 32. he was —ing |
| 11. I should — | 22. we — | 33. I have — |

E. Present indicative, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect, conditional, imperative, present subjunctive (I must —: il faut que je —):

- | | | |
|----------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| 1. he was —ing | 13. I should — | 25. let us —! |
| 2. he would — | 14. he will — | 26. we — |
| 3. they must — | 15. I — | 27. I have — |
| 4. she has — | 16. he must — | 28. she — |
| 5. —! | 17. they would — | 29. they have — |
| 6. we must — | 18. —! | 30. I must — |
| 7. I shall — | 19. you must — | 31. we shall — |
| 8. you would — | 20. we have — | 32. you were —ing |
| 9. —ing | 21. they were —ing | 33. they will — |
| 10. you — | 22. —ing | 34. you have — |
| 11. I was —ing | 23. we should — | 35. we were —ing |
| 12. let us —! | 24. you will — | 36. they — |

F. The entire verb, including past definite (indicated as follows: I —ed) and imperfect subjunctive (he had to —: il fallait qu'il or il a fallu qu'il —):

- | | | |
|-----------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| 1. he was —ing | 17. he will — | 33. we — |
| 2. he would — | 18. you —ed | 34. I —ed |
| 3. they must — | 19. I — | 35. I have — |
| 4. I —ed | 20. we had to — | 36. she — |
| 5. she has — | 21. he must — | 37. they have — |
| 6. he had to — | 22. they would — | 38. I must — |
| 7. —! | 23. —! | 39. we —ed |
| 8. they —ed | 24. you must — | 40. we shall — |
| 9. we must — | 25. we have — | 41. he had to — |
| 10. I shall — | 26. they were —ing | 42. you were —ing |
| 11. you would — | 27. they had to — | 43. they will — |
| 12. —ing | 28. —ing | 44. you have — |
| 13. you — | 29. we should — | 45. we were —ing |
| 14. I was —ing | 30. you will — | 46. they — |
| 15. let us —! | 31. you had to — | |
| 16. I should — | 32. let us —! | |

APPENDIX

SYNOPSIS OF REGULAR VERBS — IRREGULAR VERBS

Synopsis of the Regular Verbs

For convenient reference, before treating the irregular verbs, complete paradigms of the regular verbs and of the auxiliary verbs are here given.

CONJUGATIONS

I

donn er, to give

donn ant, giving

donn é, given

I give

je donn e

tu donn es

il donn e

nous donn ons

vous donn ez

ils donn ent

II

Infinitive

fin ir, to finish

Present Participle

fin iss ant, finishing

Past Participle

fin i, finished

Present Indicative

I finish

fin is

fin is

fin it

fin iss ons

fin iss ez

fin iss ent

Imperfect Indicative

I was finishing

fin iss ais

fin iss ais

fin iss ait

fin iss ions

fin iss iez

fin iss aient

III

vend re, to sell

vend ant, selling

vend u, sold

I sell

vend s

vend s

vend

vend ons

vend ez

vend ent

I was selling

vend ais

vend ais

vend ait

vend ions

vend iez

vend aient

Past Definite Indicative

<i>I gave</i>	<i>I finished</i>	<i>I sold</i>
je donn ai	<i>f</i> fin is	<i>f</i> vend is
tu donn as	fin is	vend is
il donn a	fin it	vend it
nous donn âmes	fin îmes	vend îmes
vous donn âtes	fin îtes	vend îtes
ils donn èrent	fin irent	vend irent

Future Indicative

<i>I shall give</i>	<i>I shall finish</i>	<i>I shall sell</i>
je donner ai	finir ai	vendr ai
tu donner as	finir as	vendr as
il donner a	finir a	vendr a
nous donner ons	finir ons	vendr ons
vous donner ez	finir ez	vendr ez
ils donner ont	finir ont	vendr ont

Conditional

<i>I should give</i>	<i>I should finish</i>	<i>I should sell</i>
je donner ais	finir ais	vendr ais
tu donner ais	finir ais	vendr ais
il donner ait	finir ait	vendr ait
nous donner ions	finir ions	vendr ions
vous donner iez	finir iez	vendr iez
ils donner aient	finir aient	vendr aient

Imperative

<i>give</i>	<i>finish</i>	<i>sell</i>
donn e	fin is	vend s
donn ons	fin iss ons	vend ons
donn ez	fin iss ez	vend ez

Present Subjunctive

<i>I may give</i>	<i>I may finish</i>	<i>I may sell</i>
je donn e	fin iss e	vend e
tu donn es	fin iss es	vend es
il donn e	fin iss e	vend e
nous donn ions	fin iss ions	vend ions
vous donn iez	fin iss iez	vend iez
ils donn ent	fin iss ent	vend ent

Imperfect Subjunctive

<i>I might give</i>	<i>I might finish</i>	<i>I might sell</i>
je donn asse	fin isse	vend isse
tu donn asses	fin isses	vend isses
il donn ât	fin ît	vend ît
nous donn assions	fin issions	vend issions
vous donn assiez	fin issiez	vend issiez
ils donn assent	fin issent	vend issent

Synopsis of Compound Tenses

(formed with avoir)

Indicative Past Indefinite:	j'ai donné, fini, vendu, etc.	<i>I have given, etc.</i>
“ Pluperfect:	j'avais donné, etc.	<i>I had given, etc.</i>
“ Past Anterior:	j'eus donné, etc.	<i>I had given, etc.</i>
“ Future Perfect:	j'aurai donné, etc.	<i>I shall have given, etc.</i>
Conditional Perfect:	j'aurais donné, etc.	<i>I should have given, etc.</i>
Subjunctive Perfect:	j'aie donné, etc.	<i>I may have given, etc.</i>
“ Pluperfect:	j'eusse donné, etc.	<i>I might have given, etc.</i>

(formed with être)

Indicative Past Indefinite:	je suis allé (allée), etc.	<i>I have gone, etc.</i>
“ Pluperfect:	j'étais allé, etc.	<i>I had gone, etc.</i>
“ Past Anterior:	je fus allé, etc.	<i>I had gone, etc.</i>
“ Future Perfect:	je serai allé, etc.	<i>I shall have gone, etc.</i>
Conditional Perfect:	je serais allé, etc.	<i>I should have gone, etc.</i>
Subjunctive Perfect:	je sois allé, etc.	<i>I may have gone, etc.</i>
“ Pluperfect:	je fusse allé, etc.	<i>I might have gone, etc.</i>

Compound Infinitives

Perfect Infinitive: **avoir donné**, etc., *to have given*, etc.
être allé, etc., *to have gone*, etc.

Compound Participles

Perfect Participle: **ayant donné**, etc., *having given*, etc.
étant allé, etc., *having gone*, etc.

Auxiliary Verbs

Infinitive

avoir, *to have***être**, *to be*

Present Participle

ayant, *having***étant**, *being*

Past Participle

eu, *had***été**, *been*

Present Indicative

j'ai, *I have*, etc.
tu as
il a
nous avons
vous avez
ils ont

je suis, *I am*, etc.
tu es
il est
nous sommes
vous êtes
ils sont

Imperfect Indicative

j'avais, *I had*, etc.
tu avais
il avait
nous avions
vous aviez
ils avaient

j'étais, *I was*, etc.
tu étais
il était
nous étions
vous étiez
ils étaient

Past Definite Indicative

j'eus, *I had*, etc.
tu eus
il eut
nous eûmes
vous eûtes
ils eurent

je fus, *I was*, etc.
tu fus
il fut
nous fûmes
vous fûtes
ils furent

Future Indicative

j'aurai, <i>I shall have, etc.</i>	je serai, <i>I shall be, etc.</i>
tu auras	tu seras
il aura	il sera
nous aurons	nous serons
vous aurez	vous serez
ils auront	ils seront

Conditional

j'aurais, <i>I should have, etc.</i>	je serais, <i>I should be, etc.</i>
tu aurais	tu serais
il aurait	il serait
nous aurions	nous serions
vous auriez	vous seriez
ils auraient	ils seraient

Imperative

aie, <i>have, etc.</i>	sois, <i>be, etc.</i>
ayons	soyons
ayez	soyez

Present Subjunctive

j'aie, <i>I may have, etc.</i>	je sois, <i>I may be, etc.</i>
tu aies	tu sois
il ait	il soit
nous ayons	nous soyons
vous ayez	vous soyez
ils aient	ils soient

Imperfect Subjunctive

j'eusse, <i>I might have, etc.</i>	je fusse, <i>I might be, etc.</i>
tu eusses	tu fusses
il eût	il fût
nous eussions	nous fussions
vous eussiez	vous fussiez
ils eussent	ils fussent

TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS

Simple Verbs

In the following table the principal parts are printed in dark type, except the present indicative first person singular, which is italicized (except when the imperative singular is not identical with it).

The italicized forms are those of the imperative.

The future alone is given under the infinitive (the conditional invariably having the same stem, with the ending *-ais*).

Under the present participle only the imperfect indicative is given — the other derivative forms: the present plural (indicative and imperative) and the present subjunctive are on the opposite page (along with the present indicative singular).

Under the past participle is given the auxiliary used in forming the compound tenses.

Under the past definite is given the imperfect subjunctive.

INFINITIVE	PRES. PAR.	PAST PAR.	PRES. IND.	PAST DEF.
Absoudre , absolve (like résoudre) ¹				
Acquérir , acquire	acquérant	acquis	<i>acquièrs</i>	acquis
acquerrai	acquérais	avoir —		acquisse
Aller , go	allant	allé	vais ²	allai
irai	allais	être —		allasse
Assaillir , assail (like tressaillir)				
Asseoir , ³ seat	asseyant	assis	<i>assieds</i>	assis
assiérai	asseyais	avoir —		assisse
Astreindre , constrain (like atteindre)				
Atteindre , attain	atteignant	atteint	<i>atteins</i>	atteignis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	atteignais	avoir —		atteignisse
Avoir , have	ayant	eu	ai	eus
aurai	avais	avoir —		eusse
Boire , drink	buvant	bu	<i>bois</i>	bus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	buvais	avoir —		busse
Bouillir , boil	bouillant	bouilli	<i>bous</i>	bouillis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	bouillais	avoir —		bouillisse
Ceindre , gird (like atteindre)				
Circonscrire , circumscribe (like inscrire)				
Clore , close		clos	clos	
<i>fut. reg.</i>		avoir —		
Concevoir , conceive	concevant	conçu	<i>conçois</i>	conçus
concevrai	concevais	avoir —		conçusse
Conclure , conclude	concluant	conclu	<i>conclus</i>	conclus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	concluais	avoir —		concluse
Conduire , conduct	conduisant	conduit	<i>conduis</i>	conduisis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	conduisais	avoir —		conduisisse
Confire , pickle	confisant	confit	<i>confis</i>	confis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	confisais	avoir —		confisse
Connaître , know	connaissant	connu	<i>connais</i>	connus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	connaissais	avoir —		connusse
Conquérir , conquer (like aquérir)				
Construire , construct	construisant	construit	<i>construis</i>	construisis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	construisais	avoir —		construisisse
Contraindre , constrain (like craindre)				
Coudre , sew	cousant	cousu	<i>couds</i>	cousis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	cousais	avoir —		cousisse

¹ Past participle: *absous*, *absoute*.² Rarer forms: Pres. Ind. *assois*; Pres. Subj.

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

{	acquiens	acquiens	acquiert	<i>acquérons</i>	<i>acquérez</i>	acquièrent
{	acquière	acquières	acquière	acquérions	acquériez	acquièrent
{	vais	vas	va	<i>allons</i>	<i>allez</i>	vont
{	aïlle	aïlles	aïlle	allions	alliez	aillent
{	assieds	assieds	assied	<i>asseyons</i>	<i>asseyez</i>	asseyent
{	asseye	asseyes	asseye	asseyions	asseyiez	asseyent
{	atteins	atteins	atteint	<i>atteignons</i>	<i>atteignez</i>	atteignent
{	atteigne	atteignes	atteigne	atteignions	atteigniez	atteignent
{	ai	as	a	avons	avez	ont
{	aie	aies	ait	ayons	ayez	aient
{	IMPER.:	<i>aie</i>		<i>ayons</i>	<i>ayez</i>	
{	bois	bois	boit	<i>buions</i>	<i>buvez</i>	boivent
{	boive	boives	boive	buions	buvez	boivent
{	bous	bous	bout	<i>bouillons</i>	<i>bouillez</i>	bouillent
{	bouille	bouilles	bouille	bouillions	bouilliez	bouillent
{	clos	clos	clôt			
{	close	closes	close			
{	conçois	conçois	conçoit	<i>concevons</i>	<i>concevez</i>	conçoivent
{	conçoive	conçoives	conçoive	concevions	conceviez	conçoivent
{	conclus	conclus	conclut	<i>concluons</i>	<i>concluez</i>	concluent
{	conclue	conclues	conclue	concluions	concluez	concluent
{	conduis	conduis	conduit	<i>conduisons</i>	<i>conduisez</i>	conduisent
{	conduise	conduises	conduise	conduisions	conduisiez	conduisent
{	confis	confis	confit	<i>confisons</i>	<i>confisez</i>	confisent
{	confise	confises	confise	confisions	confisiez	confisent
{	connais	connais	connait	<i>connaissons</i>	<i>connaissez</i>	connaissent
{	connaisse	connaisse	connaisse	connaissons	connaissez	connaissent
{	construis	construis	construit	<i>construisons</i>	<i>construisez</i>	construisent
{	construise	construises	construise	construisions	construisiez	construisent
{	couds	couds	coud	<i>couons</i>	<i>cousez</i>	cousent
{	couse	couses	couse	couions	cousiez	cousent

* Imperative *va* (*vas* before *y* or *en*).assoie; Imper. *assoyais*; Fut. *assoirai*, *asseyerai*.

INFINITIVE	PRES. PAR.	PAST PAR.	PRES. IND.	PAST DEF.
Courir , run courrai	courant courrais	couru avoir —	<i>cours</i>	courus courusse
Couvrir , cover (like ouvrir)				
Craindre , fear <i>fut. reg.</i>	craignant craignais	craint avoir —	<i>crains</i>	craignis craignisse
Croire , believe <i>fut. reg.</i>	croyant crotais	cru avoir —	<i>crois</i>	crus crusse
Croître , grow <i>fut. reg.</i>	croissant croissais	crû avoir } être }	<i>croît</i>	crûs crûsse
Cueillir , gather cueillerai	cueillant cueillais	cueilli avoir —	<i>cueille</i>	cueillis cueillisse
Cuire , cook <i>fut. reg.</i>	cuisant cuisais	cuit avoir —	<i>cuis</i>	cuisis cuisisse
Décevoir , deceive (like concevoir)				
Déchoir , fall décherrai (déchoirai)	déchoyais	déchu avoir } être }	<i>déchois</i>	déchus déchusse
Déduire , deduce (like conduire)				
Détruire , destroy <i>fut. reg.</i>	détruisant détruisais	détruit avoir —	<i>détruis</i>	détruisis détruisisse
Devoir , owe devrai	devant devais	dû avoir —	<i>dois</i>	dus dusse
Dire , say <i>fut. reg.</i>	disant disais	dit avoir —	<i>dis</i>	dis disse
Dissoudre , dissolve (like résoudre) ¹				
Dormir , sleep <i>fut. reg.</i>	dormant dormais	dormi avoir —	<i>dors</i>	dormis dormisse
Échoir , fall (like déchoir) ²				
Écrire , write <i>fut. reg.</i>	écrivait écrivais	écrit avoir —	<i>écrits</i>	écrivis écrivisse
Empreindre , imprint (like atteindre)				
Enduire , coat (like conduire)				
Enfreindre , infringe (like atteindre)				
Envoyer , send (<i>reg. except Fut.</i> enverrai)				
Éteindre , extinguish (like atteindre)				
Être , be serai	étant étais	été avoir —	<i>suis</i>	fus fusse
Êtreindre , bug (like atteindre)				

¹ Past participle: dissous, dissoute.

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

{ cours	cours	court	<i>courons</i>	<i>courez</i>	courent
{ coure	coures	coure	courions	couriez	courent
{ crains	crains	craint	<i>craignons</i>	<i>craignez</i>	craignent
{ craigne	craignes	craigne	craignons	craigniez	craignent
{ crois	crois	croit	<i>croyons</i>	<i>croyez</i>	croient
{ croie	croies	croie	croyions	croyiez	croient
{ croîs	croîs	croît	<i>croissons</i>	<i>croissez</i>	croissent
{ croisse	croisses	croisse	croissions	croissiez	croissent
{ cueille	cueilles	cueille	<i>cueillons</i>	<i>cueillez</i>	cueillent
{ cueille	cueilles	cueille	cueillions	cueilliez	cueillent
{ cuis	cuis	cuit	<i>cuisons</i>	<i>cuissez</i>	cuisent
{ cuise	cuisés	cuise	cuisions	cuisiez	cuisent
{ déchois	déchois	{ déchoit	<i>déchoyons</i>	<i>déchoyez</i>	déchoient
		{ déchet			
{ déchoie	déchoies	déchoie	déchoyions	déchoyiez	déchoient
{ détruis	détruis	détruit	<i>détruisons</i>	<i>détruisez</i>	détruisent
{ détruise	détruises	détruise	détruisions	détruisiez	détruisent
{ dois	dois	doit	<i>devons</i>	<i>devez</i>	doivent
{ doive	doives	doive	devions	deviez	doivent
{ dis	dis	dit	<i>disons</i>	<i>dites</i>	disent
{ dise	dises	dise	disions	disiez	disent
{ dors	dors	dort	<i>dormons</i>	<i>dormez</i>	dorment
{ dorme	dormes	dorme	dormions	dormiez	dorment
{ écris	écris	écrit	<i>écrivons</i>	<i>écrivez</i>	écrivent
{ écrive	écrives	écrive	écrivions	écriviez	écrivent
{ suis	es	est	sommes	êtes	sont
{ sois	sois	soit	soyons	soyez	soient
IMPER.:	sois		<i>soyons</i>	<i>soyez</i>	

2 Present participle: échéant.

INFINITIVE	PRES. PAR.	PAST PAR.	PRES. IND.	PAST DEF.
Exclure, exclude (like conclure)				
Faillir , ¹ fail, miss	faillant	failli	faux	faillis
faudra	faillais	avoir —		faillisse
Faire, do, make	faisant	fait	fais	fis
ferai	faisais	avoir —		fisse
Falloir, be necessary		fallu	il faut	il fallut
il faudra	il fallait	avoir —		il fallût
Feindre, feign (like atteindre)				
Frîre, fry (like rire²)				
Fuir, flee	fuyant	fui	fuis	fuis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	fuyais	avoir —		fuisse
Geindre, groan (like atteindre)				
Gésir, lie	gisant			
	gisais			
Hair, hate			hais	
Induire, induce (like conduire)				
Inscrire, inscribe	inscrivant	inscrit	inscris	inscrivis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	inscrivais	avoir —		inscrivisse
Instruire, instruct (like construire)				
Introduire, introduce (like conduire)				
Joindre, join	joignant	joint	joins	joignis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	joignais	avoir —		joignisse
Lire, read	lisant	lu	lis	lus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	lisais	avoir —		lusse
Luire, shine	luisant	lui	luis	[luisis]
<i>fut. reg.</i>	luisais	avoir —		[luisisse]
Maudire, curse	maudissant	maudit	maudis	maudis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	maudissais	avoir —		maudisse
Mentir, lie	mentant	menti	mens	mentis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	mentais	avoir —		mentisse
Mettre, put	mettant	mis	mets	mis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	mettais	avoir —		misse
Moudre, grind	moulant	moulu	mouds	moulus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	moulais	avoir —		moulusse
Mourir, die	mourant	mort	meurs	mourus
mourrai	mourais	être —		mourusse
Mouvoir, move	mouvant	mu	meus	mus
mouvrai	mouvais	avoir —		musse

¹ Most forms are obsolete.

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

{ faux	faux	faut	<i>faillons</i>	<i>failliez</i>	faillent
{ faille	faillies	faille	faillions	failliez	faillent
{ fais	fais	fait	<i>faisons</i>	<i>faites</i>	font
{ fasse	fasses	fasse	fassions	fassiez	fassent
{		il faut			
{		il faille			
{ fuis	fuis	fuit	<i>fuyons</i>	<i>fuyez</i>	fuient
{ fuie	fuies	fuie	fuyions	fuyiez	fuient
		gît	gisons	gisez	gisent
hais	hais	hait	[all other forms are regular]		
{ inscris	inscris	inscrit	<i>inscrivons</i>	<i>inscrivez</i>	inscrivent
{ inscrive	inscrives	inscrive	inscrivions	inscriviez	inscrivent
{ joins	joins	joint	<i>joignons</i>	<i>joignez</i>	joignent
{ joigne	joignes	joigne	joignons	joigniez	joignent
{ lis	lis	lit	<i>lisons</i>	<i>lisez</i>	lisent
{ lise	lises	lise	lisons	lisiez	lisent
{ Luis	Luis	luit	<i>luisons</i>	<i>luisiez</i>	luisent
{ luisse	luisse	luisse	luisions	luisiez	luisent
{ maudis	maudis	maudit	<i>maudissons</i>	<i>maudissez</i>	maudissent
{ maudisse	maudisses	maudisse	maudissions	maudissiez	maudissent
{ mens	mens	ment	<i>mentons</i>	<i>mentez</i>	mentent
{ mente	mentes	mente	mentions	mentiez	mentent
{ mets	mets	met	<i>mettons</i>	<i>mettez</i>	mettent
{ mette	mettes	mette	mettions	mettiez	mettent
{ mouds	mouds	moud	<i>moulons</i>	<i>moulez</i>	moulent
{ moule	moules	moule	moulions	mouliez	moulent
{ meurs	meurs	meurt	<i>mourons</i>	<i>mourez</i>	meurent
{ meure	meures	meure	mourions	mouriez	meurent
{ meus	meus	meut	<i>mouvons</i>	<i>mouvez</i>	meuvent
{ meuve	meuves	meuve	mouvions	mouviez	meuvent

* Past participle: frit. Many forms obsolete.

INFINITIVE	PRES. PAR.	PAST PAR.	PRES. IND.	PAST DEF.
Naître , be born	naissant	né	<i>naît</i>	naquis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	naissais	être —		naquisse
Nuire , injure	nuisant	nui	<i>nuît</i>	nuisis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	nuisais	avoir —		nuisisse
Offrir , offer	offrant	offert	<i>offre</i>	offris
<i>fut. reg.</i>	offrais	avoir —		offrisse
Oindre , anoint (like joindre)				
Ouvrir , open	ouvrant	ouvert	<i>ouvre</i>	ouvris
<i>fut. reg.</i>	ouvrais	avoir —		ouvrisse
Paître , pasture (like paraître)				
Paraître , appear	paraissant	paru	<i>paraît</i>	parus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	paraissais	avoir —		parusse
Partir , depart	partant	parti	<i>part</i>	partis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	partais	être —		partissee
Peindre , paint	peignant	peint	<i>peint</i>	peignis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	peignais	avoir —		peignisse
Percevoir , perceive (like concevoir)				
Plaindre , pity (like craindre)				
Plaire , please	plaisant	plu	<i>plaît</i>	plus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	plaisais	avoir —		plusse
Pleuvoir , rain	pleuvant	plu	il pleut	il plut
il pleuvra	il pleuvait	avoir —		il plut
Poindre , pierce (like joindre)				
Pouvoir , be able	pouvant	pu	peux, puis	pus
pourrai	pouvais	avoir —		pusse
Prendre , take	prenant	pris	<i>prends</i>	pris
<i>fut. reg.</i>	prenais	avoir —		prissee
Prescrire , prescribe (like inscrire)				
Produire , produce (like conduire)				
Proscrire , proscribe (like inscrire)				
Recevoir , receive (like concevoir)				
Réduire , reduce (like conduire)				
Repentir (<i>se</i>), repent (like sentir)				
Requérir , require (like acquérir)				
Résoudre , resolve	résolvant	résolu	<i>résous</i>	résolus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	résolvais	avoir —		résolusse
Restreindre , restrain (like atteindre)				

¹ From the participial

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

{ nais	nais	naît	<i>naissons</i>	<i>naissiez</i>	naissent
{ naisse	naisses	naisse	naissions	naissiez	naissent
{ nuis	nuis	nuit	<i>nuisons</i>	<i>nuisiez</i>	nuisent
{ nuise	nuises	nuise	nuisions	nuisiez	nuisent
{ offre	offres	offre	<i>offrons</i>	<i>offrez</i>	offrent
{ offre	offres	offre	offrions	offriez	offrent
{ ouvre	ouvrés	ouvre	<i>ouvrons</i>	<i>ouvrez</i>	ouvrent
{ ouvre	ouvrés	ouvre	ouvriers	ouvriez	ouvrent
{ parais	parais	paraît	<i>paraissions</i>	<i>paraissiez</i>	paraissent
{ paraisse	paraisses	paraisse	paraissions	paraissiez	paraissent
{ pars	pars	part	<i>partons</i>	<i>partez</i>	partent
{ parte	partes	parte	partions	partiez	partent
{ peins	peins	peint	<i>peignons</i>	<i>peignez</i>	peignent
{ peigne	peignes	peigne	peignons	peigniez	peignent
{ plais	plais	plaît	<i>plaisons</i>	<i>plaisez</i>	plaisent
{ plaise	plaises	plaise	plaisions	plaisiez	plaisent
{		il pleut			pleuvent
{		il pleuve			
{ peux <i>or</i>	peux	peut	pouvons	pouvez	peuvent
{ puis			(no imperatives)		
{ puisse ¹	puisses	puisse	puissions	puissiez	puissent
{ prends	prends	prend	<i>prenons</i>	<i>prenez</i>	prennent
{ prenne	prennes	prenne	prenions	preniez	prennent
{ résous	résous	résout	<i>résolvons</i>	<i>résolvez</i>	résolvent
{ résolve	résolves	résolve	résolvions	résolviez	résolvent

¹ adjective puissant.

INFINITIVE	PRES. PAR.	PAST PAR.	PRES. IND.	PAST DEF.
Rire , laugh	riant	ri	<i>ris</i>	ris
<i>fut. reg.</i>	riaiss	avoir —		risse
Savoir , know	sachant	su	sais	sus
saurai	savais	avoir —		susse
Séduire , seduce (like conduire)				
Sentir , feel	sentant	senti	<i>sens</i>	sentis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	sentaiss	avoir —		sentisse
Seoir , suit, fit (like asseoir) ¹				
Servir , serve	servant	servi	<i>sers</i>	servis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	servaiss	avoir —		servisse
Sortir , go out	sortant	sorti	<i>sors</i>	sortis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	sortaiss	être —		sortisse
Souffrir , suffer	souffrant	souffert	<i>souffre</i>	souffris
<i>fut. reg.</i>	souffraiss	avoir —		souffrisse
Souscrire , subscribe (like inscrire)				
Suffire , suffice	suffisant	suffi	<i>suffis</i>	suffis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	suffisaiss	avoir —		suffisse
Suivre , follow	suisant	suiwi	<i>suis</i>	suiwis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	suiwaiss	avoir —		suivisse
Taire , keep still	taisant	tu	<i>tais</i>	tus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	taisaiss	avoir —		tusse
Teindre , dye (like atteindre)				
Tenir , ² hold	tenant	tenu	<i>tiens</i>	tins
tiendrai	tenaiss	avoir —		tinssse
Traduire , translate (like conduire)				
Traire , milk	trayant	trait	<i>trais</i>	—
<i>fut. reg.</i>	trayaiss	avoir —		—
Transcrire , transcribe (like inscrire)				
Tressaillir , start	tressaillant	tressailli	<i>tressaille</i>	tressaillis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	tressaillaiss	avoir —		tressaillisse
Vaincre , ³ vanquish	vainquant	vaincu	<i>vaincs</i>	vainquis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	vainquaiss	avoir —		vainquisse
Valoir , be worth	valant	valu	<i>vaux</i>	valus
vaudrai	valaiss	avoir —		valusse
Venir , ² come	venant	venu	<i>viens</i>	vins
viendrai	venaiss	être —		vinssse

¹ Few forms in use. Siéent occurs in Ind. Pres. 3d. Pl. and séant as present

² Tenir and venir, alike throughout, circumflex the past definite plurals tîmes,

³ Vaincre is irregular only in spelling.

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

{ris	ris	rit	<i>rions</i>	<i>riez</i>	rient
{rie	ries	rie	riions	riiez	rient
{sais	sais	sait	savons	savez	savent
{sache	saches	sache	sachions	sachiez	sachent
{IMPER.: sache			sachons	sachez	
{sens	sens	sent	<i>sentons</i>	<i>sentez</i>	sentent
{sente	sentes	sente	sentions	sentiez	sentent.
{sers	sers	sert	<i>servons</i>	<i>servez</i>	servent
{serve	serves	serve	servions	serviez	servent
{sors	sors	sort	<i>sortons</i>	<i>sortez</i>	sortent
{sorte	sortes	sorte	sortions	sortiez	sortent
{souffre	souffres	souffre	<i>souffrons</i>	<i>souffrez</i>	souffrent
{souffre	souffres	souffre	souffrions	souffriez	souffrent
{suffis	suffis	suffit	<i>suffisons</i>	<i>suffisez</i>	suffisent
{suffise	suffises	suffise	suffisions	suffisiez	suffisent
{suis	suis	suit	<i>suivons</i>	<i>suivez</i>	suivent
{suive	suives	suive	suivions	suiviez	suivent
{tais	tais	tait	<i>taisons</i>	<i>taisez</i>	taisent
{taise	taises	taise	taisions	taisiez	taisent
{tiens	tiens	tient	<i>tenons</i>	<i>tenez</i>	tiennent
{tienne	tiennes	tienne	tenions	teniez	tiennent
{trais	trais	trait	<i>trayons</i>	<i>trayez</i>	traient
{traie	traies	traie	trayions	trayiez	traient
{tressaille	tressailles	tressaille	<i>tressaillons</i>	<i>tressaillez</i>	tressaillent
{tressaille	tressailles	tressaille	tressaillions	tressailliez	tressaillent
{vaincs	vaincs	vainc	<i>vainquons</i>	<i>vainquez</i>	vainquent
{vainque	vainques	vainque	vainquions	vainquiez	vainquent
{vaux	vaux	vaut	<i>valons</i>	<i>valez</i>	valent
{vaille	vailles	vaille	valions	valiez	vaillent
{viens	viens	vient	<i>venons</i>	<i>venez</i>	viennent
{vienne	viennes	vienne	venions	veniez	viennent

participle.

vinmes; tintes, vintes, and the subjunctive third person singular tint, vint.

INFINITIVE	PRES. PAR.	PAST PAR.	PRES. IND.	PAST DEF.
Vêtir , clothe	vêtant	vêtu	<i>vêts</i>	vêtis
<i>fut. reg.</i>	vêtais	avoir —		vêtisse
Vivre , live	vivant	vécu	<i>vis</i>	vécus
<i>fut. reg.</i>	vivais	avoir —		vécusse
Voir , see	voyant	vu	<i>vois</i>	vis
verrai	voyais	avoir —		visse
Vouloir , wish	voulant	voulu	veux ¹	voulus
voudrai	voulais	avoir —		voulusse

¹ The imperative forms are hardly used, but *veuillez*

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

{ vêts	vêts	vêt	<i>vêtons</i>	<i>vêtez</i>	vêtent
{ vête	vêtes	vête	vêtions	vêtiez	vêtent
{ vis	vis	vit	<i>vivons</i>	<i>vivez</i>	vivent
{ vive	vives	vive	vivions	viviez	vivent
{ vois	vois	voit	<i>voyons</i>	<i>voyez</i>	voient
{ voie	voies	voie	voyions	voyiez	voient
{ veux	veux	veut	voulons	voulez	veulent
{ veuille	veuilles	veuille	voulions	vouliez	veuillent

(+infinitive), *please, be good enough to, is common.*

Compound Verbs

These are conjugated like the simple verbs (printed in **black type**). See pages 282-293.

abstenir, *abstain*
abstraire, *abstract*
accourir, *run up*
accroître, *increase*
accueillir, *receive*
admettre, *admit*
advenir, *happen*
apercevoir, *perceive*
apparaître, *appear*
appartenir, *belong*
apprendre, *learn, teach*
asseoir, *seat*
attirer, *attract*
commettre, *commit*
comparaître, *appear*
complaire, *be complaisant*
comprendre, *comprehend*
compromettre, *compromise*
concourir, *cooperate, compete*
consentir, *consent*
contenir, *contain*
contredire, *contradict*

NOTE. *disez* not *dites* in present
 indicative and imperative

contrefaire, *counterfeit*
contrevenir, *contravene*
convaincre, *convince*
convenir, *agree, suit*
déconfire, *discomfit*
découdre, *unsew*
découvrir, *discover*
décrire, *describe*
décroître, *decrease*
dédire, *unsay* (see *contredire*)

défaillir, *fail, faint*
défaire, *undo*
démentir, *give the lie*
démettre, *put out*
départir, *distribute*
dépeindre, *depict*
déplaître, *displease*
désapprendre, *unlearn*
desservir, *clear* (table)
déteindre, *fade*
détenir, *detain*
devenir, *become*
dévêtir, *undress*
disconvenir, *disagree*
discourir, *discourse*
disjoindre, *disjoin*
disparaître, *disappear*
distraindre, *distract*
éclore, *hatch*
 (éclosent, éclôra, éclôront occur
 in the present and future)
éconduire, *show out* (politely)
élire, *elect*
émettre, *emit*
émouvoir, *move*
encourir, *incur*
endormir, *put to sleep*
enfuir, *flee*
enjoindre, *enjoin*
s'ensuivre, *follow*
entreprendre, *undertake*
entretenir, *maintain*
entrevoir, *catch a glimpse of*
s'éprendre, *be enamored*

<i>équivaloir</i> , be equivalent	<i>récrire</i> , write again
<i>extraire</i> , extract	<i>recueillir</i> , gather up
<i>forfaire</i> , offend	<i>redevenir</i> , become again
<i>interdire</i> , interdict	<i>redire</i> , repeat
(See <i>contredire</i>)	<i>réélire</i> , reelect
<i>intervenir</i> , intervene	<i>refaire</i> , make again
<i>maintenir</i> , maintain	<i>rejoindre</i> , rejoin
<i>méconnaître</i> , fail to know	<i>relire</i> , reread
<i>médire</i> , speak ill of	<i>reluire</i> , shine
(See <i>contredire</i>)	<i>remettre</i> , remit
<i>méfaire</i> , do wrong	<i>rendormir</i> , put to sleep again
<i>méprendre</i> , mistake	<i>renaître</i> , be born again
<i>obtenir</i> , obtain	<i>renvoyer</i> , send away
<i>omettre</i> , omit	<i>repâitre</i> , feast
<i>parcourir</i> , run through	<i>repartir</i> , depart again.
<i>parvenir</i> , reach	<i>repeindre</i> , repaint
<i>permettre</i> , permit	<i>reprendre</i> , retake, resume
<i>poursuivre</i> , pursue	<i>ressentir</i> , feel, resent
<i>pourvoir</i> , provide	<i>ressortir</i> , go out again
NOTE. fut. <i>pourvoirai</i> , past.	<i>se ressouvenir</i> , remember
def. <i>pourvus</i>	<i>retenir</i> , retain
<i>prédire</i> , predict	<i>revenir</i> , come back
(See <i>contredire</i>)	<i>revêtir</i> , clothe
<i>pressentir</i> , have a presentiment	<i>revivre</i> , revive
<i>prévaloir</i> , prevail	<i>revoir</i> , see again
<i>prévenir</i> , forestall	<i>rouvrir</i> , reopen
<i>prévoir</i> , foresee (fut. <i>prévoirai</i>)	<i>satisfaire</i> , satisfy
<i>promettre</i> , promise	<i>secourir</i> , succor
<i>provenir</i> , be derived	<i>soumettre</i> , submit
<i>rapprendre</i> , re-learn	<i>sourire</i> , smile
<i>rasseoir</i> , reseal	<i>soustraire</i> , take away
<i>reconduire</i> , reconduct	<i>soutenir</i> , sustain
<i>reconnaître</i> , recognize	<i>se souvenir</i> , remember
<i>reconquérir</i> , reconquer	<i>surfaire</i> , overrate
<i>reconstruire</i> , reconstruct	<i>surprendre</i> , surprise
<i>recoudre</i> , resew	<i>survenir</i> , come up
<i>recourir</i> , have recourse	<i>survivre</i> , survive
<i>recouvrir</i> , re-cover	<i>transmettre</i> , transmit

I

Class-room Words and Phrases

- | | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| 1. Do you know? | Savez-vous? [save vu] |
| 2. I don't know | Je ne sais pas [ʒə nə se pa] |
| 3. Do you understand? | Comprenez-vous? [kõprəne vu] |
| 4. I don't understand | Je ne comprends pas [ʒə nə kõprã pa] |
| 5. Do you wish —? Will you —? | Voulez-vous—? [vule vu] |
| 6. Don't forget! | N'oubliez pas! [nublie pa] |
| 7. I have forgotten | J'ai oublié [ʒe ublie] |
| 8. Rise! | Levez-vous! [ləve vu] |
| 9. Sit down! | Asseyez-vous! [aseʒe vu] |
| 10. Tell me! | Dites-moi! [dit mwa] |
| 11. Pronounce! repeat! | Prononcez! [prɔnõse]; répétez! [re-pete] |
| 12. Translate! read! | Traduisez! [tradyize]; lisez! [lize] |
| 13. Notice! listen! | Remarquez! [rəmarke]; écoutez! [ekute] |
| 14. Begin! go on! | Commencez! [kõmāse]; continuez! [kõtinye] |
| 15. Answer! explain! | Répondez! [repõde]; expliquez! [eksplike] |
| 16. Study! prepare! | Étudiez! [etydje]; préparez! [pre-pare] |
| 17. Correct! tell! | Corrigez! [korize]; racontez! [ra-kõte] |
| 18. Go! wait! | Allez! [ale]; attendez! [atāde] |
| 19. Write! erase! | Écrivez! [ekrive]; effacez! [efase] |
| 20. Open! close! | Ouvrez! [uvre]; fermez! [ferme] |
| 21. Pay attention to —! | Faites attention à—! [fet zatãsjã a] |
| 22. Raise your hand! | Levez la main! [ləve la mē] |

23. What does — mean?	Que veut dire—? [kə vø di:r]
24. How do you say — in French?	Comment dit-on—en français? [kəmā di tō ā frāse]
25. How do you spell —?	Comment écrit-on —? [kəmā tekri tō]
26. What is the lesson for —?	Quelle est la leçon pour —? [kel e la ləsō pur]
27. To-day; to-morrow	Aujourd'hui [oʒurdi]; demain [dəmē]
28. Aloud	À haute voix [a ot vwa]
29. Please	S'il vous plaît [sil vu plē]
30. Very well; that's enough; that's right	C'est bien [se bjē]
31. That's all	C'est tout [se tu]
32. At the top of the page	Au haut de la page [o o də la pa:ʒ]
33. At the bottom of the page	Au bas de la page [o ba də la pa:ʒ]
la ligne [liŋ], line	oral [ɔral], oral
la partie [parti], part	écrit [ekri], written
la règle [rɛgl], rule	le tableau noir [tablo nwa:r], blackboard
la locution [lokysjō], expression	la craie [kʁe], chalk
l'examen [legzamē] (<i>m.</i>), examination	la conversation [kōvɛrsasjō], conversation
l'étudiant [lɛtydjā] (<i>m.</i>), student	l'orthographe [lɔrtograf] (<i>f.</i>), spelling
la feuille de papier [fœ:j də papje], sheet of paper	l'apostrophe [lapɔstʁɔf] (<i>f.</i>), apostrophe
le vocabulaire [vɔkabyɛ:r], vocabulary	majuscule [majyskyl], capital (letter)
la grammaire [gramɛ:r], grammar	minuscule [minyskyl], small (letter)
la traduction [tradyksjō], translation	la prononciation [prɔnɔsjasjō], pronunciation
en français [ā frāse], in French	la voyelle [vwajɛl], vowel; la — brève [brɛ:v], longue [lō:g], nasale [nazal], short, long, nasal vowel
en anglais [ā nāgle], in English	la consonne [kōsɔn], consonant
le thème [təm], translation into French	l'accent [laksā] (<i>m.</i>), accent
la version [vɛrsjō], translation into English	
la lecture [lekty:r], reading	
l'exercice [legzɛrsis] (<i>m.</i>), exercise, drill	

- la lèvre [lɛ:vʁ], lip
 la langue [lɑ̃:g], tongue
 la syllabe [silab], syllable
 trop vite [tro vit], too fast
 lentement [lɑ̃tmɑ̃], slowly
 l'élision [lɛlizjɔ̃] (*f.*), elision
 la liaison [ljɛzɔ̃], linking
 l'h muette [laʃ myɛt], h mute
 l'h aspirée [laʃ aspire], h aspi-
 rate
 le genre [ʒɑ̃:r], gender
 le nombre [nɔ̃:br], number
 le masculin [maskylɛ̃], masculine
 le féminin [feminɛ̃], feminine
 le singulier [sɛ̃gyljɛ], singular
 le pluriel [plyrjɛl], plural
 la première personne [pʁəmje:ʁ
 pɛʁsɔ̃], first person
 la forme [fɔʁm], form
 la formation [fɔʁmasjɔ̃], formation
 le gallicisme [galisism], Gallicism
 l'idiotisme [lidjɔtism] (*m.*), idiom
 l'accord [lakɔ:r] (*m.*), agreement
 l'emploi [lɑ̃plwa] (*m.*), use
 la terminaison [terminezɔ̃], ending
 le partitif [partitif], partitive
 la syntaxe [sɛ̃taks], syntax
 régulier [regyljɛ], regular
 irrégulier [iregyljɛ], irregular
 négatif [negatif], negative
 le nom [nɔ̃], noun
 la préposition [prepozisjɔ̃], prepo-
 sition
 l'article [lartikl] (*m.*), article
 défini [defini], definite
 indéfini [ɛ̃defini], indefinite
 la conjonction [kɔ̃ʒɔksjɔ̃], conjunc-
 tion
 l'adverbe [ladverb] (*m.*), adverb
 l'adjectif [ladʒektif] (*m.*), adjective
 la comparaison [kɔ̃parezɔ̃], com-
 parison
 le positif [pozitif], positive
 le comparatif [kɔ̃paratif], compara-
 tive
 le superlatif [syperlatif], superla-
 tive
 les nombres [nɔ̃:br], numbers
 cardinaux [kardino], cardinals
 ordinaux [ɔrdino], ordinals
 le pronom [pʁɔnɔ̃], pronoun
 personnel [pɛʁsɔ̃nɛl], personal
 possessif [pɔsesif], possessive
 démonstratif [demɔ̃stratif], de-
 monstrative
 relatif [rɛlatif], relative
 interrogatif [ɛ̃terogatif], interroga-
 tive
 conjoint [kɔ̃ʒwɛ̃], conjunctive
 disjoint [disʒwɛ̃], disjunctive
 le régime direct [rezim direkt],
 direct object
 indirect [ɛ̃direkt], indirect
 le pronom sujet [syʒɛ], subject
 pronoun
 le pronom régime [rezim], object
 pronoun
 le verbe [verb], verb
 transitif [trāzitif], transitive
 intransitif [ɛ̃trāzitif], intransitive
 la conjugaison [kɔ̃ʒygezɔ̃], conju-
 gation
 la voix [vwa], voice
 actif, -ve [aktif, akti:v], active
 passif, -ve [pasif, pasi:v], passive
 le mode [mɔd], mood
 l'infinitif [lɛ̃finitif] (*m.*), infinitive
 l'indicatif [lɛ̃dikatif] (*m.*), indica-
 tive
 l'impératif [lɛ̃peratif] (*m.*), impera-
 tive
 le subjonctif [sybʒɔ̃ktif], subjunc-
 tive
 le temps [tɑ̃], tense

le présent [prezã], present
 l'imparfait [lẽparfẽ] (*m.*), imperfect
 le passé défini [pase defini], past
 definite
 le passé indéfini [pase ẽdefini], past
 past indefinite

le futur [fyty:r], future
 le conditionnel [kõdisjõnel], con-
 ditional
 composé [kõpoze], compound
 auxiliaire [oksiljɛ:r], auxiliary
 réfléchi [refleʃi], reflexive

II

Useful Phrases for Memorizing

- | | |
|-------------------------------|--|
| 1. Good morning! | Bonjour! [bõʒu:r] |
| Good day! | |
| 2. Good evening! | Bonsoir! [bõswa:r] |
| 3. Good-by! | Au revoir! [o rævwa:r] |
| 4. How are you? | { Comment vous portez-vous? [kõ-
mã vu porte vu] |
| How do you do? | |
| How's your health? | |
| 5. How's your sister? | { Comment allez-vous? [kõmã tale
vu] |
| | Comment se porte (<i>or</i> comment
va) Mademoiselle votre sœur?
[kõmã sɔ port (va) madmwazel
votrɔ sœr] |
| 6. I'm very well | Je me porte très bien [ʒə mɛ portɔ
trɛ bjɛ] |
| 7. How goes it? | Comment ça va? (<i>familiar</i>) [kõmã
sa va] |
| 8. Remember me to — | { Bien des choses à — [bjɛ de ʒoiz
a] <i>votre mère</i>
Mes compliments à — [mɛ kõpli-
mã za] |
| 9. What's your name? | |
| 10. My name is — | Comment vous appelez-vous? [kõ-
mã vu zaple vu] |
| 11. It is three weeks since — | Je m'appelle — [ʒə mapel]
Il y a trois semaines que — [il ja
trwa sɛmɛn kɛ] |
| 12. What is the way to —? | Quel est le chemin pour aller à
—? [kɛl ɛ lə ʃɛmɛ pur ale a] |
| 13. Straight ahead | Tout droit [tu drwa] |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 14. What's that? | Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela? [kəs kə sɛ kə sɛla] |
| 15. What did you say? (=Please repeat) | Comment? or Plaît-il? [kəmɑ̃; plɛ til] |
| 16. What do you mean? | Que voulez-vous dire? [kə vule vu diʁ] |
| 17. What? What! | Quoi? Quoi! [kwa] |
| 18. What's the use? | À quoi bon? [a kwa bɔ̃] |
| 19. What's — good for? | À quoi sert —? [a kwa sɛʁ] |
| 20. He uses a pen | Il se sert d'une plume [il sɛ sɛʁ dyn plym] |
| 21. What's to be done? } | Que faire? [kə fɛʁ] |
| 22. What shall I do? } | |
| 23. What's your number? | Quel est votre numéro? [kɛl ɛ vɔtrə nymɛro] |
| 24. What's the matter? } | { Qu'est-ce que vous avez (qu'il a, etc.)? [kəs kə vu zave] |
| 25. Nothing | { Je n'ai rien [ʒə ne ʁjɛ] |
| 26. What's up? | Qu'est-ce qu'il y a? [kəs kil ja] |
| 27. What news? | Quoi de nouveau? [kwa də nuvo] |
| 28. Nothing new | Rien de nouveau [ʁjɛ də nuvo] |
| 29. Have you heard from —? | Avez-vous des nouvelles de —? [ave vu de nuvel də] |
| 30. I have not heard from — | Je n'ai pas de nouvelles de — [ʒə ne pa də nuvel də] |
| 31. It makes no difference | Cela ne fait rien [sɛla nə fɛ ʁjɛ] |
| 32. That will do, that's enough | Cela suffit [sɛla syfi] |
| 33. I beg your pardon | Pardon! or Je vous demande pardon [ʒə vu dəmɑ̃d pardɔ̃] |
| 34. Excuse me! | Pardon! or Excusez-moi! [ɛkskyze mwa] |
| 35. I should like — | Je voudrais — [ʒə vudʁɛ] |
| 36. When does the train leave? | Quand part le train? [kɑ̃ paʁ lə trɛ̃] |
| 37. How far is it to —? | À quelle distance est —? [a kɛl distɑ̃s ɛ] |
| 38. Beside me | À côté de moi [a kote də mwa] |
| 39. On the other side of — | De l'autre côté de — [də lo:tʁə kote də] |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 40. Does that suit you? | Est-ce que cela vous convient? [ɛs
kə səla vu kɔ̃vjɛ̃] |
| 41. That's just what I want | Voilà mon affaire [vwala mɔ̃
nafɛ:r] |
| 42. I'm very sorry | Je suis bien fâché [ʒə syi bjɛ̃ fa-
ʃe] |
| 43. That's none of my business | Cela ne me regarde pas [səla nə
mə rəɡard pa] |
| 44. I think so | Je le pense [ʒə lə pɑ̃s] |
| 45. I said so | Je l'ai dit [ʒə le di] |
| 46. He looks well (French,
funny, etc.) | Il a l'air bien (français, drôle, etc.)
[il a lɛ:r bjɛ̃, frãse, dro:l] |
| 47. It's a pity }
It's too bad } | C'est dommage [sɛ dɔmaʒ] |
| 48. Look out! | Attention! [atãsjɔ̃] |
| 49. The right book | Le livre qu'il faut [lə livr kil fo] |
| 50. The wrong thing | La chose qu'il ne faut pas [la ʃo:z
kil nə fo pa] |
| 51. That's quite proper | C'est comme il faut [sɛ kɔm il fo] |
| 52. That's improper | Ce n'est pas comme il faut [sə nə
pa kɔm il fo] |
| 53. So much the better! | Tant mieux! [tã mjø] |
| 54. So much the worse! | Tant pis! [tã pi] |
| 55. Of course | Naturellement [natyrelmã] |
| 56. Have the kindness to — | Ayez la bonté de — [ɛʒe la bɔ̃te
də] |
| 57. Let's see! | Voyons! [vwajɔ̃] |
| 58. Come! Come now! | Voyons! [vwajɔ̃] |
| 59. All the same | Tout de même [tu də mɛ:m] |
| 60. Not at all | Pas du tout [pa dy tu] |
| 61. Nothing at all | Rien du tout [rjɛ̃ dy tu] |
| 62. All right! | Très bien! [trɛ bjɛ̃] |
| 63. Be so good as to — | Veuillez — [vøʒe] |
| 64. Don't mention it (=You're
welcome) | Il n'y a pas de quoi [il nja pa də
kwa] |
| 65. Will you do me a favor? | Voulez-vous me rendre un ser-
vice? [vule vu mə rã:dr œ ser-
vis] |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 66. I had a good time | Je me suis bien amusé [ʒə mə syi
bjɛ̃ namyzɛ] |
| 67. A good trip to you! | Bon voyage! [bɔ̃ vɔʒaʒ] |
| 68. To be ten feet long (wide) | Avoir dix pieds de long (large)
[avwaʁ di pjɛ də lɔ̃, larʒ] |
| 69. Ten feet deep | Dix pieds de profondeur [pʁɔfɔ̃-
dœʁ] |
| 70. He is six feet tall | Il a six pieds de taille [il a si pjɛ
də taiʒ] |
| 71. Never mind! | N'importe! [nɛ̃pɔʁt] |
| 72. Some more meat (bread) | Encore de la viande (du pain)
[ɑ̃kœʁ də la vjɑ̃d, dy pɛ̃] |
| 73. Do you want some more? | En voulez-vous encore? [ɑ̃ vule vu
zɑ̃kœʁ] |
| 74. Keep still (=Don't talk)! | Taisez-vous! [teze vu] |
| 75. My native tongue | Ma langue maternelle [ma lɑ̃:g
matɛʁnɛl] |
| 76. You are lucky | Vous avez de la chance [vu zave
də la ʃɑ̃s] |
| 77. Reserve two seats for me | Retenez deux places pour moi
[ʁetne də plas pœʁ mwa] |
| 78. This way, gentlemen! | Par ici, messieurs! [paʁ isi mesjø] |
| 79. On the way to France | En route pour la France [ɑ̃ rut
pœʁ la frɑ̃s] |
| 80. Abroad | À l'étranger [a letrɑ̃ʒɛ] |
| 81. As for — | Quant à — [kɑ̃ ta] |
| 82. He has just arrived | Il vient d'arriver [il vjɛ darive] |
| 83. To go away | S'en aller* [sɑ̃ nale] |
| 84. He went away | Il s'en est allé [il sɑ̃ ne tale] |
| 85. The question is to know
whether — | Il s'agit de savoir si — [il saʒi də
savwaʁ si] |
| 86. He asks in vain | Il a beau demander [il a bo də-
mɑ̃de] |
| 87. In the French manner | À la française [a la frɑ̃sɛʁz] |
| 88. With blue eyes | Aux yeux bleus [o zjø blø] |
| 89. With a gray beard | À barbe grise [a barbɛ griʒ] |
| 90. He has a house built | Il fait bâtir une maison [il fe ba-
tiʁ yn mezɔ̃] |

- | | |
|---|--|
| 91. He has the doctor come | Il fait venir le médecin [il fɛ və-
nir lə mɛdsɛ] |
| 92. He has a grudge against
his friend | Il en veut à son ami [il ɑ̃ vø ta sɔ̃
nami] |
| 93. He has a grudge against
him | Il lui en veut [il lɥi ɑ̃ vø] |
| 94. He starts to run | Il se met à courir [il sɛ mɛ ta ku-
rir] |
| 95. He is (busy) writing | Il est en train d'écrire [il ɛ tɑ̃ trɛ̃
dekriʁ] |
| 96. That is not worth while | Cela ne vaut pas la peine [sɛla nə
vo pa la pɛn] |
| 97. I agree with you | Je suis d'accord avec vous [ʒə syi
dakɔʁ avɛk vu] |
| 98. Neither she nor he is . . . | Ni elle ni lui n'est [ni ɛl ni lɥi
nɛ] . . . |
| 99. Nor I either | Ni moi non plus [ni mwa nɔ̃ ply] |
| 100. So be it! all right! | Soit! [swat] |
| 101. To stand | Rester debout [rɛstɛ dəbu] |
| 102. Somewhere | Quelque part [kɛlkə paʁ] |
| 103. Nowhere | Nulle part [nyl paʁ] |
| 104. He approaches him | Il s'approche de lui [il sapʁɔʃ də
lɥi] |
| 105. He makes fun of them | Il se moque d'eux [il sɛ mɔk də] |
| 106. He is a member of — | Il fait partie de — [il fɛ parti də] |

SUMMARY OF GRAMMAR

NOUNS

481. Gender.

Masculine: those designating males.

Feminine: those designating females, and most nouns ending in **-e**; **porte, ville**; **-é**: **bonté** (kindness), **amitié** (friendship); **-eur**: **chaleur** (heat), **hauteur** (height); **-ion**: **nation**, **confusion**.

For more extensive rules for gender see §§ 557-559.

482. Number. To form the plural, add **s** to the singular: **école, écoles**.

Exceptions to the general rule:

Nouns ending in

1. **-s, -x, -z** remain unchanged: **temps, voix** (voice), **nez** (nose).

2. **-au, -eu**¹ add **-x**: **tableaux, jeux**.

3. **-al**² change **-al** to **-aux**: **cheval, chevaux**.³

4. Unclassified: **l'œil, les yeux**.

le ciel, les cieux (but **les ciels** = skies in pictures).

l'aïeul, les aïeux, ancestors (but **les aïeuls**=grandfathers).

le bétail, les bestiaux (cattle).

¹ And the following seven in **-ou**: **bijou** (jewel), **caillou** (pebble), **chou** (cabbage), **genou** (knee), **hibou** (owl), **joujou** (plaything), **pou** (louse). But **clou** (nail), **clous**; **trou** (hole), **trous** etc.

² And a few in **-ail**: **travail, travaux**; **bail** (lease), **corail** (coral), **émail** (enamel), **vitrail** (stained glass window).

³ Except: **bal** (ball, i.e. danse), **bals**; **carnaval, carnavals**; **chacal** (jackal), **chacals**; **régal** (treat), **régals**.

483. Articles. Definite (*the*):

	<i>Contractions with de</i>	<i>Contractions with à</i>
le livre	du livre	au livre
la table	de la table	à la table
l'école	de l'école	à l'école
les livres, les tables, les écoles	des livres, etc.	aux livres, etc.

Indefinite (*a, an*): **un homme, une femme.**

NOTE. The article and the prepositions are repeated before each noun they modify: **un homme et une femme, du livre et de la table.**

GENERAL AND PARTITIVE NOUN

484. With the general noun in English the definite article is sometimes used: *the* dog is an animal; it is regularly used in French:

J'aime les pommes,	I like apples.
Le courage est une vertu,	Courage is a virtue.

The partitive words in English are *some, any* (*no, none = not any*). These words are frequently omitted in English but may usually be supplied: he has (some) apples.

485. The partitive word in English (*some, any, etc.*) may be an adjective or a pronoun.

1. If *some* or *any* is an adjective it is expressed in French by **de** + the definite article (= *of the*): **du courage, des pommes.**

NOTE. The article is omitted, **de** standing alone:

(a) After a negative:¹

Je n'ai pas d'argent.

(b) When an adj. precedes the noun. (See Permissible Deviations § 560,1):

J'ai de belles fleurs.

But: J'ai des fleurs blanches.

¹ With **ni** (neither) . . . **ni** (nor) both **de** and the article are omitted: **il n'a ni amis ni ennemis.**

Cases *c*) and *d*) do not trouble English-speaking students:

(*c*) In expressions of quantity and number: **assez de pain**; ¹ **une grande quantité de pain**; **un mètre de soie** (silk).

(*d*) In the construction noun modifying noun: a gold watch, **une montre d'or**; a kitchen table, **une table de cuisine**.

2. If *some* or *any* is a pronoun, it is expressed by **en**, which is placed directly before the verb: **Il en a**, **En avez-vous?** See § 518.

NOTE. Do not omit **en** with numerals and adverbs of quantity: **Il en a six**, **Il en a assez**.

NOTES ON THE USE OF THE ARTICLES

486. Definite Article omitted in English. The definite article is employed in French in the following cases where it is omitted in English:

1. With general nouns (see § 484).

2. With proper names preceded by a title² or by an adjective: **le capitaine Fracasse**, **le petit Jean**.

3. With names of languages, except after **en** and with **parler**: **Il étudie le français**, **Dites cela en français**, **Il parle français** or **le français**.

4. With names of countries: **la France**, **le Canada**.

Except before **en** and **de** with *feminine* countries: **Il va en France**, **Il vient d'Italie**; but: **Il va au Canada**, **Il vient des Etats-Unis**.

¹ So with all the adverbs of quantity: see § 496.

But the article is not omitted with **bien des** = **beaucoup de** and **la plupart de**; **bien du travail**, much work; **bien des hommes**, many men; **la plupart des Américains**, most Americans.

² In direct address the article is omitted (**Docteur Morot**, **voulez-vous me dire . . .**); or **Monsieur** (**Madame**, etc.) is prefixed and the name is omitted (**Je vous prie, monsieur le capitaine, de vouloir bien . . .**).

5. With names of the days of the week except when "*next*" or "*last*" is expressed or understood: **Le dimanche est un jour de repos, Il vient le dimanche** (every Sunday), *but* **Il viendra dimanche** (*next* Sunday); and in dates: **le quinze avril**, April 15 (See §509).

6. With names of seasons, unless they are preceded by **en**: **L'été est beau**. But **en été, en automne, en hiver** (*cf. au printemps*).

7. In the following expressions and some others:
à l'école, à l'église, au collège, au marché (market).
l'année dernière (*prochaine*). Cf. § 493, 3.
il est le bienvenu, he is welcome.

faire la guerre (*paix*), garder le silence, avoir le temps,
cet habit sent la fumée, this coat smells of smoke.

487. Definite Article omitted in French. The definite article is omitted in French:

1. With numerical titles (see § 503, Note 2).
2. Usually with nouns in apposition: **Jean, fils du général**.

488. Indefinite Article omitted in French. The indefinite article is omitted in French:

1. Before an *unmodified* predicate noun which is virtually an adjective. Such nouns are those indicating profession, religion or nationality: **Il est médecin (Américain, chrétien)**.
But: Mon ami est un médecin très bien connu.

NOTE that with **c'est, ce sont** (which are used instead of **il est**, etc. when the noun is the logical subject and hence not used adjectively) the article is not omitted: **c'est un médecin, ce sont des Américains**. See § 525.

2. Usually with nouns in apposition: **les Plaideurs, comédie de Racine**.

3. In the expressions **mettre fin** (put an end), **rendre service** (do a favor), **faire signe** (give a signal) and others.

4. **Cent** = a hundred; **mille** = a thousand: see p. 314, footnote. **Quel** = what a: see § 528, 9.

489. Two Idiomatic Uses of the Definite Article. The definite article is used:

1. Instead of the indefinite article in expressions of measure, weight, number: **cinquante sous la livre** (**le mètre, la douzaine**).

But in expressions of time use **par**: **dix francs par jour**.

2. Instead of a possessive adjective when the meaning cannot be doubtful, especially with parts of the body: **il me donne la main, il s'est cassé le bras, elle a une bague** (ring) **sur le doigt, il a perdu la vie, il a la mémoire courte** (short).

ADJECTIVES

490. Gender. To form the feminine add **-e**: **petit, petite. grand, grande.**

Exceptions to the general rule:

1. If the masculine ends in **-e**, it remains unchanged in the feminine: **facile, difficile.**

2. Final **f** becomes **v**, **x** becomes **s**: **vif, vive** (lively); **heureux, heureuse** (happy).

3. Final **-el, -eil, -ien, -on, -s** and **-t**¹ usually double the consonant: **tel, telle** (such); **pareil, pareille** (similar); **ancien, ancienne** (old); **bon, bonne** (good); **bas, basse** (low); **muet, muette** (mute).

4. Final **-eur** becomes **-euse** in adjectives derived from verbs; in others it is regular: **flatteur, flatteuse** (flattering); **trompeur, trompeuse** (deceptive).

But: **meilleur, meilleure; extérieur, extérieure.**

5. Final **-er** becomes **-ère**: **cher, chère; familier, familière.**

¹ Some adjectives ending in **-et** have **-ête** instead of **-ette**: **complet, complète**; so **inquiet, inquiète** (worried); **secret, secrète**, etc.

6. Common exceptions:

blanc, blanche (white)	franc, franche (frank)
bref, brève (short)	gentil, gentille (pretty, kind)
doux, douce (sweet, soft)	long, longue (long)
faux, fausse (false)	public, publique (public)
frais, fraîche (fresh)	sec, sèche (dry)

7. The following form their feminines from a special masculine form in **-l** (**bel, fol**, etc.) which is used before a vowel or non-aspirate **h**: **le bel arbre, un vieil ami**.

beau, bel, belle (beautiful)	nouveau, nouvel, nouvelle (new)
fou, fol, folle (mad)	vieux, vieil, vieille (old)
mou, mol, molle (soft)	

The plurals, (whether before vowel or consonant), are **beaux, belles; fous, folles; mous, molles; nouveaux, nouvelles; vieux, vieilles**. Cf. § 491.

491. Number. The plural of adjectives is formed like that of nouns:

bon, bons: see § 482.

-s and -x: frais, frais (fresh); **creux, creux** (hollow).
see § 482, 1.

-au:¹ **beau, beaux**: see § 482, 2.

-al: royal, royaux: see § 482, 3.

492. Agreement. Adjectives — including past and present participles used adjectively — are varied in ending to agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun which they modify.

NOTE. If an adjective modifies more than one noun or pronoun it is plural, and if any one of the nouns is masculine, it is also masculine: **la langue et la littérature françaises; Marie et Henri sont bons**.

493. Position. The position of the adjective is determined mainly by usage. In general it follows the noun.

¹ But those in **-eu** are regular: **bleu, bleus**.

1. The following *short, common* adjectives precede the noun: **beau, grand, joli, méchant, bon, gros, long, petit, court, jeune, mauvais, vieux.**

2. The following adjectives follow the noun:

(a.) Those denoting

(1) *Color*: **un cheval noir.**

(2) *Nationality*: **la langue française.**

(3) *Physical quality*: **l'eau chaude, un nuage épais**
(a thick cloud), **une table carrée** (square).

(b.) Present and past participles used adjectively:
une femme tremblante, le français parlé.

3. Many adjectives change in meaning according as they precede or follow the noun; for example:

- { homme bon, good-natured man
- { bon homme, simple, worthy man, old chap
- { homme grand, tall man
- { grand homme, great man
- { homme brave, brave man
- { brave homme, worthy, honest man
- { homme honnête, polite man
- { honnête homme, honest man
- { homme pauvre, impecunious man
- { pauvre homme, poor man (implies pity)
- { la même chose, the same thing
- { la chose même, the thing itself (see § 530, 7)
- { la dernière semaine, the last week (of a series)
- { la semaine dernière, last week (just expired). See § 486, 7.

ADVERBS

494. Formation. Adverbs are formed from adjectives by adding **-ment** to the masculine if it ends in a vowel, otherwise to the feminine.

Adjectives ending in **-ant** or **-ent** have adverbial forms in **-amment** and **-emment**.

facile, facilement, easily
 modéré, modérément, moderately
 infini, infiniment, infinitely
 excessif, excessivement, exceedingly
 heureux, heureusement, happily
 constant, constamment, constantly
 prudent, prudemment, prudently

495. Position. The position of the adverb is decided mainly by usage. In general it comes after the verb. With compound tenses, it usually comes between the auxiliary and the participle:

il parle bien	he speaks well
il a bien parlé	he has spoken well
à proprement parler	to speak properly

496. Adverbs of Quantity (see § 485, 1, c, and footnote):

beaucoup { much; many;	beaucoup de viande, much meat beaucoup d'amis, many friends
peu { little; few;	peu de lait, little milk peu de voyageurs, few travelers
assez, enough;	assez de billets, enough tickets
trop { too much; too many;	trop de vin, too much wine trop d'histoires, too many stories
plus, more;	plus de colis, more packages
moins { less; fewer;	moins d'encre, less ink moins de chapeaux, fewer hats
combien { how much; how many;	combien de crème, how much cream combien de mots, how many words
tant { so much; so many;	tant de beurre, so much butter tant de malles, so many trunks
autant { as much as many	autant de pain, as much bread autant de livres, as many books

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS

497. Comparison of adjectives:

<i>Positive</i>	<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Superlative</i>
s. grand (e)	plus grand (e)	le (la) plus grand (e) ¹
	moins grand (e)	le (la) moins grand (e)
pl. grands (es)	plus grands (es)	les plus grands (es)
	moins grands (es)	les moins grands (es)

Elle est plus grande que ² moi, She is taller than I.

Ce sont les plus belles villes du ³ monde, They are the most beautiful cities in the world.

Donnez-moi les pommes les plus mûres, Give me the ripest apples.⁴

498. Comparison of adverbs:

souvent, plus (moins) souvent, le plus (moins) souvent.

Il vient moins souvent que vous, He comes less often than you.

Il vient le plus souvent, He comes the most often.

499. aussi grand que = as great as

aussi souvent que = as often as

NOTE. In a negative sentence **aussi** is usually replaced by **si**: **Il n'est pas si grand que moi; Il ne vient pas si souvent que vous.**

500. The following adjectives are irregularly compared:

bon, meilleur, le meilleur, good, better, best

{ mauvais, pire, le pire
mauvais, plus mauvais, le plus mauvais { bad, worse, worst

{ petit, moindre, le moindre, small, lesser, least
petit, plus petit, le plus petit, small, smaller, smallest

¹ When the comparative is preceded by the definite article, it has the same form as the superlative: the greater = the greatest.

² *Que, than,* is replaced by *de* before numerals: *J'en ai plus de dix,* I have more than ten.

³ With superlatives *in* is translated *de*.

⁴ Note the extra article with the superlative of adjectives that follow their nouns. After possessives the article is omitted *unless* the adjective follows the noun:

Mes plus beaux livres, My finest books.

But: Mes livres les plus usés, My most worn books.

501. The following adverbs are irregularly compared:

bien, mieux, le mieux, well, better, best

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{mal, pis, le pis} \\ \text{mal, plus mal, le plus mal} \end{array} \right\}$ badly, worse, worst

peu, moins, le moins, little, less, least

beaucoup, plus, le plus, much, more, most

NUMERALS

502. Cardinal.

1 un, une (<i>f.</i>)	30 trente
2 deux	31 trente et un
3 trois	32 trente-deux
4 quatre	33 trente-trois, etc.
5 cinq	40 quarante
6 six	50 cinquante
7 sept	60 soixante
8 huit	70 soixante-dix
9 neuf	71 $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{soixante et onze} \\ \text{soixante-onze} \end{array} \right.$
10 dix	72 soixante-douze, etc.
11 onze	80 quatre-vingts
12 douze	81 quatre-vingt-un
13 treize	82 quatre-vingt-deux
14 quatorze	90 quatre-vingt-dix
15 quinze	91 quatre-vingt-onze, etc.
16 seize	100 cent ¹
17 dix-sept	101 cent un, etc.
18 dix-huit	200 deux cents
19 dix-neuf	201 deux cent un, etc.
20 vingt	1000 mille (<i>mil in dates</i>) ¹
21 vingt et un	1001 mille (et) un
22 vingt-deux	4000, quatre mille, etc.
23 vingt-trois	1000,000, un million
24 vingt-quatre	1,000,000,000, un milliard
25 vingt-cinq, etc.	

¹ A (*one*) is omitted with 100,1000: *Il a lu cent (mille) pages.* For *mil* see § 509.

NOTE 1. Multiples of **vingt** and **cent** add **-s** unless a number follows: **quatre-vingts** (**deux cents**) personnes, but **quatre-vingt-dix**, **deux cent trois**. See Permissible Deviations 560, 3.

NOTE 2. For permitted omission of the hyphen in numerals see § 560, 5.

503. The **Ordinals** (except **premier**, first, **second**, second) are formed by adding **-ième** to the cardinals: **troisième**, **quatrième**, etc. Final **-e** is dropped (**quatre**, **quatrième**, **onze**, **onzième**, etc. **u** is inserted in **cinquième**, and **f** becomes **v** in **neuvième** and its compounds.

NOTE 1. **Deuxième** is used more commonly than **second** in a series including more than two, and is used exclusively in compounds: **le second volume** (of two), **la deuxième page** (of more than two); **la vingt-deuxième page**.

NOTE 2. Excepting **premier**, the ordinals are replaced by the cardinals after names of sovereigns, and in dates: **Louis Quatorze**, Louis the Fourteenth; **François Premier**, Francis the first; **le premier mai**, May the first; **le six mai**, May the sixth. Note that the article is omitted after names of sovereigns. Note the word order in dates.

504. Remarks on the Pronunciation of Numerals.

1. Pronunciation of **cinq**, **six**, **sept**, **huit**, **neuf**, **dix**:
1. Used alone: [sɛ̃k], [sis], [sɛt], [yit], [nœf], [dis]
2. Before a word beginning with a consonant [sɛ̃], [si], [sɛ], [yi], [nø], [di]
3. Before a word beginning with a vowel [sɛ̃k], [siz], [sɛt], [yit], [nœv], [diz]
2. **dix-huit** [di zyit] 18; **dix-neuf** [diz nœf] 19; **vingt** [vɛ̃] 20; **vingt-deux** [vɛ̃t dø] 22, etc., to **vingt-neuf** [vɛ̃t nœf] 29; but in **quatre-vingt-un** 81, to **quatre-vingt-dix-neuf** 99, **vingt** is pronounced [vɛ̃].
3. The **t** of **cent** is not sounded in **cent un**, **deux cent un**, etc.
4. **x** is pronounced [z] in **deuxième**, **sixième**, **dixième**, and [s] in **soixante**.

5. **c** = [g] in **second** [sə-gɔ̃], **second**, and its derivatives: **secondaire**, etc.

6. Do not elide nor link before **huit**,¹ *eight*; **huitième**,¹ *eighth*; **onze** *eleven*; **onzième**, *eleventh*; **le onzième livre** [le ɔ̃zjɛm livr], *the eleventh book*.

505. Adverbs. Numerical adverbs are formed regularly: **premièrement**, **deuxièmement**, etc.

506. Collective numerals.

1. The suffix **-aine** which may be added to **huit**, **dix**, **douze**, **quinze**, **vingt**, **trente**, etc., is equivalent to English *some*, *about*; **une dizaine de livres**, *some (about) ten books*.

2. **Millier** is the collective of **mille**: **un millier d'hommes**, *about 1000 men*.

3. *Both* is **tous** (fem. **toutes**) **les deux**.

Once, twice, etc. = **une fois, deux fois**.

507. Fractions:

$\frac{1}{2}$ un demi ²	$\frac{1}{4}$ un quart
$\frac{1}{3}$ un tiers	$\frac{1}{5}$ un cinquième
$\frac{2}{3}$ deux tiers	$\frac{1}{6}$ un sixième, etc.

NOTE. When **demi** precedes its noun, it is invariable and is joined to it by a hyphen; when it follows its noun it agrees with it. (See Permissible Deviation, § 560, 2.)

une demi-heure
deux heures et demie

508. Time of Day.

Quelle heure est-il? What time is it?

Il est une heure, It is one o'clock.

Il est quatre heures, It is four o'clock.

Il est huit heures dix, It is 8:10.

Il est sept heures (et) un quart, It is 7:15.

¹ But link in compound numerals: **dix-huit** (di zyit), **vingt-huitième** (vɛ̃tyitjɛm).

² *Half* as a noun is **la moitié: la moitié de la pomme**.

Il est neuf heures et demie, It is 9:30.

Il est neuf heures moins dix, It is 8:50.

Il est neuf heures moins un quart, It is 8:45.

Il est midi; il est minuit, It is 12 (noon); it is 12 (midnight).

Il est midi dix, It is 12:10 (noon).

Il est minuit et demi, It is 12:30 (night).

À quelle heure allez-vous? At what time do you go?

509. Dates.

Mil¹ neuf cent vingt-deux, 1922.

Quel jour du mois est-ce (*or* sommes-nous) aujourd'hui? What date is it?

C'est aujourd'hui le quinze (see § 503, Note 2) avril. It is April 15.

Ce sera demain le premier (see § 503, Note 2) avril. Tomorrow will be April 1.

Dans huit jours, d'aujourd'hui en huit, in a week.

Il y a quinze jours, two weeks ago.

Il arrivera le quinze, he will arrive *on* the 15th.

510. Age.

Quel âge avez-vous? How old are you?

J'ai vingt ans.

Je suis âgé de vingt ans. { I am 20 years old.

J'ai plus de (see p. 313, footnote ²) vingt ans, I am more than 20.

Je suis plus âgé de vingt ans, I am older by twenty years.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

511. Subject Pronouns:

je, I

nous, we

tu, thou

vous, you

il, he, it; elle, she, it

ils, elles, they

NOTE 1 **Tu** and **vous**. In French **tu** is used in familiar address between members of a family, or very intimate friends; also in addressing young children and animals.

The agreement with **tu** and **vous** is logical: **tu** (a man) *es* arrivé; **vous** (one person) *êtes* riche; **vous** (more than one person) *êtes* riches.

¹ Mil replaces mille in dates. See Permissible Deviations § 560,4.

NOTE 2. The subject must ordinarily be repeated before each verb to which it refers: *j'irai et je chercherai*.

NOTE 3. A plural pronoun referring to masculine and feminine singulars is masculine: *J'ai vu votre frère et votre sœur. Ils se portent bien.*

512. Object Pronouns.

Conjunctive Pronouns		Disjunctive Pronouns
<i>Direct object</i>	<i>Indirect object</i>	
1. <i>me</i> , me	<i>me</i> , to me	<i>moi</i> , me
2. <i>te</i> , thee	<i>te</i> , to thee	<i>toi</i> , thee
3. <i>le</i> , him, it	<i>lui</i> , to him	<i>lui</i> , him
3. <i>la</i> , her, it	<i>lui</i> , to her	<i>elle</i> , her
3. <i>se</i> , himself, herself, itself, oneself	<i>se</i> , to himself, etc.	<i>soi</i> , himself, oneself, etc. (see § 519)
1. <i>nous</i> , us	<i>nous</i> , to us	<i>nous</i> , us
2. <i>vous</i> , you	<i>vous</i> , to you	<i>vous</i> , you
3. <i>les</i> (<i>m.</i>), them	<i>leur</i> (<i>m.</i>), to them	<i>eux</i> , them
3. <i>les</i> (<i>f.</i>), them	<i>leur</i> (<i>f.</i>), to them	<i>elles</i> , them
3. <i>se</i> (<i>m.f.</i>), themselves	<i>se</i> (<i>m.f.</i>) to themselves	(lacking; see § 519)

NOTE 1. Direct and indirect object pronouns are alike except in the third person.

NOTE 2. In English the preposition *to* before indirect objects of *persons* is omitted after certain verbs: Give him a book = give to him; Sell him = sell to him. The indirect object pronoun is always used here in French. Of course, as in English, direct object pronouns are also used with these verbs: Give him *it* = give *it* to him. See § 541.

Je le donne, I give it.

Je lui donne, I give him, her (= to him, to her).

Je le lui donne, I give him it.

Like *donner* are treated *demander* (ask), *montrer* (show), *permettre* (allow), and other verbs. See § 541.

513. Conjunctive pronouns are always *objects of verbs*. Disjunctive pronouns are used:

1. After prepositions: *avec moi, sans lui, chez eux*, etc.

2. After *c'est*, *it is*: *c'est moi*, *c'est lui*, etc.¹ See § 525.

3. Where the pronoun is used alone, i. e. neither as subject nor object of a verb:

Qui partira? Moi, Who will go? I.

4. Where the pronoun is used as part of a compound subject:

Lui et Jean se parlent, He and John are speaking to each other.¹

5. In the *intensive* pronouns:

<i>moi-même</i> , myself	{ <i>nous-même</i> , ourself <i>nous-mêmes</i> , ourselves
<i>toi-même</i> , thyself	{ <i>vous-même</i> , yourself <i>vous-mêmes</i> , yourselves
<i>lui-même</i> , himself	<i>eux-mêmes</i> , themselves (<i>m.</i>)
<i>elle-même</i> , herself	<i>elles-mêmes</i> , themselves (<i>f.</i>)
<i>soi-même</i> , itself, oneself, himself (<i>reflexive</i>)	

NOTE. For permitted omission of the hyphen see § 560,6.

514. The conjunctive *indirect* object is replaced by *à* + a disjunctive pronoun in the following cases:

1. When there is more than one indirect object:

Il le donne à elle (à son père) et à moi, He gives it to her (to her father) and to me.

2. When the *direct* object is any other pronoun than *le*, *la*, *les*:

Je vous présenterai à lui, I will introduce you to him. *But:*

Je vous le présenterai, I will introduce him to you.

3. To emphasize the indirect object:

Il le donne à moi, He gives it to *me*.

4. After *penser*, *songer* and verbs of motion:

Je pense (songe) à lui, I think of him.

Je vais (viens) à elle, I am going (coming) to her.

¹ The French say:

c'est moi, it is I
c'est toi, it is thou
c'est lui, it is he
c'est elle, it is she

c'est nous, it is we
c'est vous, it is you
ce sont eux, it is they
ce sont elles, it is they

See Permissible Deviations, § 560,8.

515. Order of pronoun objects. Pronoun objects precede their verb in the following order:

me	} precede	{ le la les }	} precede	{ lui leur }	} precede y	} precede (s) en
te						
se						
nous						
vous						

Il me le dit, He says it to me.

Il le lui dit, He says it to him.

Il se le dit, He says it to himself.

Order with compound tenses: pronoun, auxiliary, participle:

Il nous les a donnés, He gave them to us.

Il les leur a donnés, He gave them to them.

Il m'en a donné, He gave me some.

Order with negative: **ne**, pronoun, verb, **pas**.

ne, pronoun, auxiliary, **pas**, participle:

Il ne leur en donne pas, He does not give them any.

Il n'y en a pas, There are none.

Il ne leur en a pas donné, He gave them none.

516. Order of Pronouns with imperatives.

1. With *negative* imperatives the regular rules are followed:

Ne lui en donnez pas, Do not give him any.

2. With *positive* imperatives the order is as in English.

Note the hyphens:

Donnez-les-lui, Give them to him (her).

Donnez-le-nous, Give it to us.

Donnez-leur-en, Give them some.

Envoyez-les-y, Send them there.

NOTE. **Moi** and **toi** are used instead of **me** and **te** except before **en**:
Dites-moi, Tell me; Va-t'en, Go away; Donnez-m'en; Give me some.

517. Pleonastic *le*.

This **le** is neuter and invariable (*it*). It must usually be omitted in translation:

Êtes-vous content? Je *le* suis, Are you glad? I am.

Sont-elles contentes? Elle *le sont*, Are they glad? They are.

Je *le* pense, I think *so*.

Voulez-vous? Je *le* veux, Do you want to? I do.

518. *En* and *y*. In speaking of *things* (rarely of *persons*), **en** replaces **de** + a disjunctive third person pronoun.

y replaces **à** + a disjunctive third person pronoun:

J'*en* parle, I speak of *it* (**en** = **de lui**).

But: Je parle **de lui**, I speak of *him*.

J'*y* pense, I think of *it* (**y** = **à lui**).

But: Je pense **à lui**, I think of *him*.

NOTE. **En** used in the partitive construction (see § 485,2) is equivalent likewise to **de** + a disjunctive third person pronoun:

Avez-vous **de l'encre**? J'*en* ai. (**En** = **d'elle**).

Avez-vous **des livres**? J'*en* ai. (**En** = **d'eux**).

519. Reflexive Pronouns.

1. Conjunctives and disjunctives of the first and second persons (**me, te, nous, vous; moi, toi, nous, vous**) may be used reflexively:

Je **me** vois, I see myself; tu **parles de toi**, you speak of yourself.

2. In the *third* person, **se** is the *conjunctive* form for singular and plurals of both genders, direct and indirect:

Il (elle) **se flatte**, He (she) flatters himself (herself).

Ils (elles) **se parlent**, They talk to themselves.

The *disjunctive* form is the appropriate disjunctive pronoun (**lui, elle, eux, elles**):

Il parle **de lui** (*or de lui-même*), He speaks of himself.

Ils parlent **d'eux** (*or d'eux-mêmes*), They speak of themselves; *except* that **soi** is used for the *singular* when the subject is indefinite (**on, tout le monde, chacun**):

On pense **à soi**, We think of ourselves.

3. The plural reflexive pronouns may be translated *each other, one another*:

Nous nous aimons, We love ourselves, We love one another.

Ils **se parlent**, They are talking to themselves (one another).

520. Possessives.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
m. mon }	mes, my.	m. le mien	les miens }
f. ma }		f. la mienne	les miennes }
m. ton }	tes, thy.	m. le tien	les tiens }
f. ta }		f. la tienne	les tiennes }
m. son }	ses, } his, her,	m. le sien	les siens }
f. sa }		f. la sienne	les siennes }
			its.
m. }	notre nos, our.	m. le nôtre }	les nôtres, ours.
f. }		f. la nôtre }	
m. }	votre vos, your.	m. le vôtre }	les vôtres, yours.
f. }		f. la vôtre }	
m. }	leur leurs, theirs.	m. le leur }	les leurs, theirs.
f. }		f. la leur }	

NOTE 1. Before a vowel or non-aspirate *h*, *mon*, *ton*, *son* are used instead of *ma*, *ta*, *sa*. (cf. §§ 490,7; 523 Note 1.)

Mon âme est immortelle, My soul is immortal.

Son excellente école, His (her) excellent school.

NOTE 2. *De* and *à* contract with *le* and *les*:

Il parle du mien, He speaks of mine.

Faites-le aux vôtres, Do it to yours.

521. Agreement. Possessives have the gender and number of the noun they modify, not of the antecedent as in English:

Son défaut, his (her, its) fault.

Ses vertus et les miennes, his (her, its) virtues and mine.

NOTE. To avoid ambiguity, *à* + a personal pronoun may be added:

Son défaut à elle, Her fault.

Sa vertu à lui, His virtue.

522. Remarks on possessive adjectives:

1. The possessive adjective is repeated before successive nouns: ***mon livre et ma plume***.

2. Possession is indicated more commonly by the use of

à + a personal pronoun than by the possessive pronoun; the latter implies emphasis or opposition.

A qui ¹ est ce livre? Whose book is this?

Il est à moi, It is mine.

Non, c'est le mien! No, it is *mine*.

3. For the use of the definite article instead of the possessive pronoun in speaking of parts of the body (**Je me brosse les cheveux**), see § 489,2.

2. Idiomatic expressions:

Le mien, le tien, etc., my property, thy property, etc.

Les miens, the members of my immediate family, my relatives.

DEMONSTRATIVES

523. *This, that* used as an Adjective = **ce** (*m.*), **cette** (*f.*), **ces** (*pl.*), *these, those*.

NOTE 1. Before a masculine noun or adjective beginning with a vowel or aspirate **h** use **cet**: **cet ami**, *this (or that) friend*; **cet homme**, *this or that man* (cf. § 520, Note 1).

NOTE 2. To distinguish *this* and *that* before nouns, or for emphasis, add to the noun **-ci** (*here*) for *this* and **-là** (*there*) for *that*.

ce livre-ci et cette plume-là, *this book and that pen*.

ces livres-ci et ces plumes-là, *these books and those pens*.

cet homme-là ne me plaît pas, *I don't like that man*.

524. Pronouns.

(a) ce , this, that, it	} see § 525
ceci , this	
cela , that	

(b) *m.* **celui**, the one, this or that (one), he
f. **celle**, the one, this or that (one), she
m. **ceux**, the ones, these or those, they
f. **celles**, the ones, these or those, they

¹ For **à qui?** and **de qui?** = whose? see § 528,6.

Celui qui le trouve le gardera, He (the one) who finds it will keep it.
Préférez-vous mes fleurs ou celles de mon ami? Je préfère celles de votre ami. Do you prefer my flowers or those of my friend?
 I prefer your friend's.

NOTE 1. **-ci** and **-là** may be added to the last four forms (see § 523, Note 2):

celui-ci, celle-ci = this one; **ceux-ci, celles-ci** = these.

celui-là, celle-là = that one; **ceux-là, celles-là** = those.

Celui-ci est bon, celui-là est mauvais, This one is good, that one is bad.

Celles-ci sont bonnes, celles-là sont mauvaises, These are good, those are bad.

NOTE 2. **Celui-là** answers to *the former*; **celui-ci**, to *the latter*.

Napoléon et César — de ces deux héros je préfère celui-ci, Napoleon and Caesar — of these two heroes I prefer the latter.

Celui-là était Français, celui-ci Romain, The former was French, the latter Roman.

525. Ce, ceci and cela are neuters (i. e. used in reference to an indefinite antecedent); = *this, that* when *one* could not be added.

Ceci (cela) m'intéresse, This (that) interests me.

But: Celui-ci m'intéresse, This *one* interests me.

The commonest use of **ce** is in place of the personal pronouns **il, elle, ils, elles** or a demonstrative pronoun as subject of **être**¹ when followed by a noun which is the logical subject of the verb (cf. § 488,1), or by a pronoun:

C'est mon ami (noun), He is my friend.

C'est lui (pronoun; see § 513,2), It is he.

But: Il est aimable (adjective), He is agreeable.

Il est facile (adjective) de faire cela, It is easy to do that.²

Exceptions: 1. **Il est** is always used in expressions of time: **il est cinq heures**.

¹ Note the use of **ce** for **ceci** or **cela** with **devoir** and **pouvoir**; **Ce peut (doit) être vrai**, That may (must) be true.

² **C'est + adjective + à** is used when the infinitive has no object: **C'est facile à faire**, It (that) is easy to do.

2. **C'est, ce sont** are used when the adjective is in the superlative:

Ce sont les meilleurs que nous ayons, They are the best we have.

3. **C'est** frequently replaces **il est** in colloquial discourse and even in the literary language.

526. Interrogative Adjectives (*which? what?*)

	Sing.	Plural
M	<i>Quel livre?</i>	<i>Quels livres?</i>
F	<i>Quelle plume?</i>	<i>Quelles plumes?</i>

NOTE. When *which?* = *which one?*, it is a pronoun and is translated by *lequel* (see § 527,8,15):

527. Interrogative and Relative Pronouns.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

I. PERSONS (*who? whom?*)

Subject:

2. (a) *Qui est ici?* 3. *Qui est-ce qui est ici?*
Who is here?

Object:

4. (b) *Qui (voyez-vous)?* 5. *Qui (est-ce que vous voyez)?*
Whom do you see?

Object of prep.:

6. (c) *Avec qui (allez-vous)?* 7. *Avec qui (est-ce que vous allez)?*
With whom are you going?

8. Note that *which (one)?* = *lequel?*: *Lequel* (des hommes) *est ici?* *Which (of the men) is here?* *Lequel* (voyez-vous)? *Lequel (est-ce que vous voyez)?* *Avec lequel* (allez-vous)? *Avec lequel (est-ce que vous allez)?* See 15. (cf. § 526 NOTE.)

II. THINGS (*what?*)

Subject:

9. (a) (lacking; see § 528,4). 10. *Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table?*
What is on the table?

Object:

11. (b) *Que (voyez-vous)?* 12. *Qu' (est-ce que vous voyez)?*¹
What do you see?

¹ *Qu'est-ce que?* may be lengthened to *Qu'est-ce que c'est que?*
Qu'est-ce que c'est que vous voyez? (Cf. 16, 19 note.)

Object of prep.:

13. (c) *Avec quoi* (écrivez-vous)? 14. *Avec quoi* (*est-ce que vous écrivez*)?

With what do you write?

15. Note that *which* (*one*)? = *lequel*?: *Lequel* (des crayons) *est sur la table*? *Which* (of the pencils) *is on the table*? etc. See 8.

III. *What?* (asking for a definition)

16. What kind of thing is . . . ? *Qu'est-ce que c'est qu'un chameau*?
What is a camel?

17. Compare: *What is your opinion?* *Quelle est votre opinion*?
See interrogative adjectives above.

IV. What = *that which*

Subject:

18. (a) *Je sais ce qui est ici.* I know what is here.

Object:

19. (b) *Je sais ce que vous voyez.*¹ I know what you see.

Predicate with *être* (see §528,5):

20. (c) *Je sais ce que vous êtes.* I know what you are.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

I. PERSONS (*who, whom*)

Subject:

21. (a) *L'enfant qui est ici est sage.* The child who is here is good.

Object:

22. (b) *L'enfant que vous voyez est sage.* The child whom you see is good.

Object of prep.:

23. (c) *L'enfant avec qui vous allez est sage.* The child with whom you go is good.

24. (d) *L'enfant dont je parle est sage.* The child of whom I speak is good.
(See § 529,1.)

¹ May be lengthened to *ce que c'est que* (Cf. p. 325 footnote).

Je sais ce que c'est que vous voyez.

Je sais ce que c'est qu'un chameau.

II. THINGS (*which*)

Subject:

25. (a) *Le livre qui est ici est bon.* The book which is here is good.

Object:

26. (b) *Le livre que vous voyez est bon.* The book which you see is good.

Object of prep.:

27. (c) *Le crayon avec lequel vous écrivez est bon.* The pencil with which you write is good.28. (d) *Le livre dont vous parlez est bon.* The book of which you speak is good. (See § 529, 1.)

528. Remarks on Interrogative Pronouns (§ 527):

1. Where parentheses are used (see § 527 4, 5, 6, 7, etc.) all the student has to remember is the equivalence of the inverted and *est-ce que* forms.

NOTE. Usage is determined by the models in § 536:

Pronoun: *Qui voit-il?* Whom does *he* see?

Noun: *Qui est-ce que l'homme voit?* Whom does the *man* see?

2. Both parts of *lequel* are declined (*lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*). Combined with *à* and *de*:

auquel	à laquelle	auxquels	auxquelles
duquel	de laquelle	desquels	desquelles

3. Note that the *i* of *qui* is never elided.

4. Note that *what?*, subject of a verb, must be translated *qu'est-ce qui?* (10). There is no form for 9. But *que?* and *qu'est-ce que?* are used instead of *qu'est-ce qui?* as nominative predicate of a few verbs such as *être, devenir*, and with impersonal verbs:

Qu'est-ce?	} What is it?
Qu'est-ce que c'est?	
Que devenez-vous?	} What is becoming of you?
Qu'est-ce que vous devenez?	
Que faut-il?	} What is necessary?
Qu'est-ce qu'il faut?	

5. Add *devenir* and impersonal verbs to *être* mentioned in § 527, 20.

Je sais ce que vous devenez, I know what you are becoming.

Je sais ce qu'il faut, I know what is necessary.

6. *whose?* (interrogative) usually = *à qui?* or *de qui?*
whose (relative) = **dont** (*of whom, of which*), both of
 persons and things. See § 522,2.

Whose book is this? **À qui est ce livre?**

Whose son are you? **De qui êtes-vous le fils?**

I know the man whose son has gone, **Je connais l'homme dont le fils
est parti.**

Here is the flag whose color is blue! **Voici le drapeau dont la couleur
est bleue!**

7. **Quel?** before **être** may mean *who?*

Qui est cet homme? }
Quel est cet homme? } Who is that man?

8. (a) *What = that which* when object (cf. 19) of a preposition (except *of*), is **ce ... quoi**:

Dites-moi ce à quoi vous pensez, Tell me what you are thinking of.

NOTE. **Ce** may be omitted:

Vous savez à quoi je pense, You know what I am thinking of.

(b) When the preposition is *of*, use **ce dont**. If **ce** is omitted, **dont** becomes **de quoi**:

Vous savez ce dont je parle, You know what I am speaking of.

Vous savez de quoi il parle, You know what he speaks of.

Compare:

Il a de quoi vivre, He has enough to live on.

9. Note the following exclamatory forms:

Quel! What a! **Quelle belle femme!** What a beautiful woman!

Que! How! **Que cela me plaît!**

Que de! How many! How much! **Que de livres!** **Que de courage!**

Quoi! What! **Quoi! c'est vous!**

529. Remarks on Relative Pronouns (See § 527)

1. Note **dont** (24, 28). With prepositions other than *of*, use **qui** for persons (23) and **lequel** for things (27).

2. **Lequel** may be used of persons to replace the forms used in 21, 22, 23, 24, especially where ambiguity would result from the use of **qui**:

Les sœurs du capitaine auquel (or auxquelles) je rendis visite hier.	The sisters of the captain whom I visited yesterday.
La sœur de mon ami, laquelle demeure chez nous.	My friend's sister, who lives at our house.

3. **Où** (lit. *where*), is occasionally used of *things* as a virtual relative pronoun, replacing **dans lequel**, **auquel**.

Le temps où nous vivons est très prosaïque.	The age in which we live is very prosaic.
La cabane d'où il est sorti.	The hut from which he came out.

530. Indefinite pronouns and adjectives:

1. **On** (Latin *homo*, man) = one, they, you, people, etc. It is frequently used to translate an English passive. Its verb is in the singular.

Ici on parle français, One speaks French here. French is spoken here.

NOTE. **L'on** usually replaces **on** after **si**, **et**, **où**, **que**: **Si l'on** vous voit.

2. **Tout** (**toutes**; *pl.* **tous**, **toutes**), adjective or pronoun = all, every: **tout homme**, every man; **tous les hommes**, all men.

NOTE. **Tout le monde le sait**, *Everybody* knows it.

Tous (toutes) les deux étaient là, *Both* were there. cf. § 530,6.

Tout me plaît, *Everything* pleases me.

Tous ont péri, They *all*¹ perished.

Tout ce qui est bon, *Everything* that is good.

Tout ce que vous voulez, *Everything* you like.

3. **chaque** (adjective), each, every: **chaque homme**, each (every) man; **chacun**, **-e** (pronoun), each one, every one; **chacun croit**, each (every) one believes.

4. **Quelque**, some (*plural* = a few; **plusieurs** (indeclinable) = several):

¹ Sound the **-s** of **tous** when it is a pronoun.

quelqu'un (quelqu'une, quelques-uns, quelques-unes), some one, some ones.

quelque chose, something.

NOTE: *quelque* (indeclinable when followed by an adjective or adverb) . . . *que* (with subjunctive; see § 550,3) = however, whatever:

Quelque braves qu'ils soient, However brave they may be.

Quelques désirs que vous ayez, Whatever desires you may have.

When it is followed *immediately* by *être*, *quelque* is resolved into the appropriate form of *quel* + *que*:

Quels que soient vos désirs, whatever your desires may be.

5. *aucun* (no, nobody), *nul* (no, nobody), *personne* (nobody), *rien* (nothing): see § 532.

6. *autre*: adjective or pronoun, other:

L'autre cheval, the other horse.

Les autres sont meilleurs, The others are better.

NOTE: When not preceded by *the*, *others* (pronoun) is usually *d'autres* (subject or object):

D'autres vous le diront, Others will tell it to you.

Donnez-m'en d'autres, Give me others.

Autrui may here be used after a preposition, but only of persons:

Le bonheur d'autrui (or *des autres*), the happiness of others.

Attendez d'autrui ce que vous faites à autrui, Expect from others what you do to others.

L'un . . . l'autre, les uns . . . les autres: (the) one . . . the other; the ones . . . the others:

L'un l'aime, l'autre le déteste, (The) one loves him, the other hates him.

NOTE: *Ils le font l'un et l'autre*, Both do it. Cf. § 530,2.

Aimez-vous les uns les autres, Love one another. Cf. § 519,3.

7. *même*, same, even, very, self:

C'est la même chose, It's the same thing.

Vos amis mêmes, (note word-order), Even your friends or Your friends themselves or Your very friends.

Moi-même, etc., myself, etc. (see § 513,5)

NOTE *même*, adverb, = even: *Il vole même*, He even flies.

8. **Tel (telle, tels, telles)** such:

Telle était sa crainte, Such was his fear.

NOTE. **Un tel homme**, *Such a man*.

Chez Monsieur un tel, At the home of Mr. *So and So*.

Il est tellement riche, He is *so* rich.

9. Indefinite Relatives:

(a) Adjectives.

Quelconque, any, whatever, has a plural in **-s**, and always follows its noun:

Un homme quelconque, Any man whatever.

Des hommes quelconques, Any men whatever.

NOTE. For **quelque . . . que**, **quel . . . que**, see § 530, 4.

(b) Pronouns.

Quiconque (*invariable*), whoever:

Quiconque le dit a tort, Whoever says it is wrong.

Qui que with subjunctive of **être** replaces **quiconque**:
Qui que ce soit, Whoever it is.

Quoi que with subjunctive, whatever:

Quoi que ce soit, Whatever it is.

Quoi que vous fassiez, Whatever you do.

NEGATION

531. The verb is rendered negative by putting **ne** before it and **pas** after it. (**Point** is a more emphatic substitute for **pas**): **Je ne donne pas** (or **point**).

NOTE 1. In compound tenses the auxiliary is similarly negated, the participle following **pas**. **Il n'a pas fini**.

NOTE 2. With infinitives **ne pas** is usually grouped before the verb: **ne pas parler**, not to speak; **ne pas avoir fini**, not to have finished.

NOTE 3. With interrogative verbs followed by a subject-pronoun **pas** follows the latter: **Ne finit-il pas?** **N'a-t-il pas fini?**

NOTE 4. **Ne** is regularly separated from the verb by personal object-pronouns governed by it: **Je ne la donne pas**, I do not give it.

532. Like **ne — pas** are used:¹

ne — jamais , never
ne — rien , nothing
ne — personne , nobody
ne — aucun , -e, not any
ne — guère , scarcely
ne — nul , -le, not any
ne — plus , no more, no longer
ne — que , only, not more than
ne — ni — ni , neither, nor

Il ne finit jamais.	He never ends.
Il n'a que deux frères.	He has only two brothers.
Je n'ai ni père ni mère.	I have neither father nor mother.
Je n'ai rien vu.	I have seen nothing.

NOTE 1. **Rien**, **personne**, **aucun**, and **nul**, when used as subjects, precede **ne** and the verb.

Rien n'est arrivé.	Nothing has happened.
Personne n'a parlé.	No one has spoken.

NOTE 2. As **ne** cannot be used except before a verb, it is omitted when the latter is not expressed, and the **jamais**, **rien**, **personne**, **pas**, etc., have negative value.

Qui est venu? Personne!	Who came? Nobody!
Que dit-il? Rien.	What does he say? Nothing.
Plus de pain dans la maison!	No more bread in the house!

533. **Pas** omitted: **Pas** is often omitted with the verbs **pouvoir**, **savoir**, **oser**, **cesser**, after **si**, *if*, and regularly in connection with **ni**, *nor*.

Il n'ose le faire.	He dares not do it.
Si je ne me trompe.	If I do not deceive myself.
Ce bébé ne marche ni ne parle.	This baby neither walks nor talks.

¹ Position with compound tenses or with complementary infinitive:

Same as **pas** (**je n'ai pas cherché**):

rien ; Je n'ai rien cherché	Je ne peux rien comprendre
jamais ; Je n'ai jamais cherché	Je ne peux jamais comprendre
plus ; Je n'ai plus cherché	Je ne peux plus comprendre

Same as in English:

personne ; Je n'ai cherché personne	Je ne peux chercher personne
que ; Je ne l'ai trouvé qu'après avoir cherché	Je ne peux chercher que mes amis

534. *Ne* redundant. The redundant **ne** occurs with comparatives (the principal clause being affirmative), after affirmative verbs of fearing, preventing, avoiding, after negative verbs of doubting, after **à moins que**, *unless*, and sometimes after **avant que**, *before*:

Jean lit mieux qu'il n'écrit.

John reads better than he writes.

Il craint que je ne parle.

He fears I may speak.

Il parlera à moins qu'on ne le lui défende.

He will speak unless they forbid him.

NOTE. See Permissible Deviations § 560,10.

535. Use of *non*, *not*. **Non**, *no*, *not* is used chiefly to negative individual words in a sentence, or to negative a clause or phrase as a whole — but never in negative conjugation of a verb.

Les mots **non** soulignés.

The words *not* underscored.

Est-il riche? **Non**.

Is he rich? *No*.

INTERROGATION

536. Models for Questions:

1. If the subject is **je**: **Est-ce que je donne?**¹

2. If the subject is a *pronoun* other than **je**:² **Donnez-vous? or Est-ce que vous donnez?**

NOTE. For permitted omission of the hyphen see § 560,7.

3. If the subject is a *noun*: **Est-ce que le livre est sur la table?**³

4. With **où?** and some other interrogative words:⁴ **Où est le livre?**⁵

¹ The **est-ce que** form is to be used in the first person singular, and *may* be used in all persons and numbers.

² When *il* or *elle* follows its verb, **t** (between hyphens) intervenes, if the verb ends in a vowel: **donne-t-il? a-t-elle?**

³ *Or* **Le livre est-il sur la table?** (less used).

⁴ Such are **qui? que? quel? comment? de qui?**

⁵ *Or* **Le livre où est-il?** (less used). This construction or the **est-ce que** form *must* be used if the subject of the verb is a noun and the verb has a direct object.

Où est-ce que le maître trouve le livre? } Where does the master find the
Le maître où trouve-t-il le livre? } book?

VERBS

537. Principal parts and Rules for the Formation of tenses:

1. Infinitive: donner

Future: add **-ai**,¹ **-as**, **-a**; **-ons**, **-ez**, **-ont** ² to the infinitive:³
je donner ai, etc.

Conditional: change **-ai**, **as** etc. of the future to **-ais**,¹
-ais, **-ait**; **-ions**, **-iez**, **-aient** ²

2. Present participle: donnant

Imperfect: change ending (**-ant**) to **-ais**, **-ais**, **ait**; **-ions**,
-iez, **-aient** ⁴

Present subjunctive: change ending (**-ant**) to **-e**, **-es**, **-e**;
-ions, **-iez**, **-ent**.⁴

3. Past participle: donné

All compound tenses: **j'ai donné**, **j'avais donné**; **je suis allé**, **nous serons arrivés**, etc.

4. Present indicative, first person singular: je donne,⁵
je finis ⁵

¹ **-ai** as verb ending is pronounced like *a* in *mate*; **-ais** as verb ending is pronounced like *e* in *met*.

² The endings of the *future* are the present indicative of **avoir** (the **av-** of **avons**, **avez** having been dropped). The endings of the *conditional* are the imperfect of **avoir** (**av-** having been dropped); consequently *imperfect* and *conditional* endings are identical. Observe carefully the difference in the stem: **donn + ais**, imperfect; **donner + ais** conditional.

There are no exceptions to the rule for the formation of the conditional even in the case of irregular verbs.

³ Infinitives ending in **-re** drop **-e**; **vendre + ai** gives **vendrai**: so all verbs of the second conjugation.

⁴ Compare the endings of the present subjunctive with those of the present indicative (*first conjugation*) and imperfect indicative.

⁵ Notes on endings of the present indicative:

(1) Regular endings { **-e**, **-es**, **-e** (*first conj.*)
-s (**-x**), **-s** (**-x**), **-t** (*other conj.*) } **-ons**, **-ez**, **-ent**.

(2) In verbs of the third conjugation the third person singular normally ends in *t*; **il rompt**. This *t* is omitted if the consonant preceding is *d*; **il rend**. So also if the consonant preceding is *t* (**il paraît**.)

(3) Exceptional endings in 2nd pers. plu.: always **-ez**, except **dites**, **êtes**, **faites**.

(4) Exceptional endings in 3rd pers. plu.: always **-ent**, except **font**, **ont**, **sont**, **vont**.

Imperative = second person of present indicative, the pronoun being omitted: (**tu**) **finis**,⁶ (**vous**) **finissez**.⁷

5. **Past definite**, first person singular: **je donnai**.⁸

Imperfect subjunctive: to the *second* person singular add **-se, -ses, - —; -sions, -siez, -sent**. For the 3rd sing. substitute *t* for the *s* of the past definite and put a circumflex over the vowel: **tu donnas, il donnât**.⁹

538. Irregular verbs. Irregular verbs are irregular in only a few forms. It is a great mistake to learn them as if they presented difficulties at every turn. If the student observes the rules for the formation of tenses (§ 537) and the rules given below he will find that in irregular verbs very few forms need be learned. For instance, in

pouvoir: learn only **pu, je peux, je pourrai, je puisse**

venir: learn only **je viens, venant, venu, ils viennent, je viendrai, je vienne**

dire: learn only **disant, dit, vous dites**

écrire: learn only **écrivait, écrit**

conduire: learn only **conduisant, conduit**

croire: learn only **croyant, cru, je croie**

vouloir: learn only **voulant, voulu, je veux, je voudrai, je veuille**

The following rules will be of great aid in learning the *present indicative* and the *present subjunctive* of irregular verbs:

⁶ In verbs of the first conjugation the final **-s** of the pres. ind. 2nd sing. is dropped except before **y** and **en**; pres. ind., **tu donnes**: imperative, **donne; donnes-en**. See also the verbs listed in the next note.

⁷ The imperative of the following verbs is formed not from the present indicative but from the present subjunctive: **avoir** (*aie, ayez*), **être** (*sois, soyez*), **savoir** (*sache, sachez*), **vouloir** (*veuille, veuillez*.) On the dropping of **-s** see the preceding note.

⁸ Regular endings of the past definite:

First conjugation: **-ai, -as, -a, -âmes, -âtes, -èrent**

Other conjugations: **-is, -is, -it, -îmes, -îtes, -irent**. In a few verbs *i* is replaced by *u*; **je voulus, tu voulus**, etc.

⁹ There are no exceptions even in the case of irregular verbs; therefore the student who has learned these endings knows the whole tense if he knows the first person singular.

1. the first, second, third singular and the third plural have the same stem (e.g. **pouvoir: peu-**);

2. *the first and second plural have the stem of the present participle (pouv-);*

3. the consonant which follows the stem of the third plural (**peu-**) is that which precedes the ending (**-ant**) of the present participle (**-v**):

je peux gives the stem of the third plural: **ils peu-**;

pouvant gives the consonant: **ils peuv-**;

-ent (*unpronounced*) is the regular ending: **ils peuvent**.

je peux

tu peux

il peut

nous pouvons

vous pouvez

ils peuvent

539. Prepositions governing verbs. Prepositions, except **en**, govern the **Infinitive**: **pour** aller, *for going*; **sans** partir, *without departing*; **après** avoir répondu, *after having answered*; **avant de** finir, *before finishing*. But **en** allant, *in going*; **en** répondant, etc.

540. Verbs followed by Infinitives. In English the infinitive is sometimes preceded by *to* and sometimes not. We say 'I dare to go,' but 'you dare not go,' 'he is able to go,' but 'he can go.' In French the infinitive (1) may stand alone, (2) may be preceded by **de**, (3) may be preceded by **à**.

(1) **Nous allons partir**, We are going to leave

(2) **Il a oublié de venir**, He forgot to come

(3) **Il apprend à lire**, He is learning to read

This usage can be learned only by observation. Some verbs fall into two or even all three of these classes. The following are some of the common verbs in each class:

1. aller, compter, croire, désirer, devoir, entendre, envoyer, espérer, faire, falloir, laisser, oser, paraître, préférer, pouvoir, savoir, sembler, venir, voir, vouloir.

2. avertir, blâmer, cesser, se charger, commander, conseiller, craindre, défendre, se dépêcher, dire, écrire, empêcher, s'empresser, entreprendre, essayer, éviter, se hâter, jurer, menacer, négliger, ordonner, oublier, permettre, persuader, se presser, prier, promettre, proposer, recommander, refuser, regretter, remercier, souhaiter, tâcher.

3. aider, aimer, s'amuser, apprendre, avoir, chercher, condamner, consentir, se décider, demander, enseigner, s'habituer, hésiter, inviter, se mettre, parvenir, renoncer, réussir, songer, tenir, travailler.

541. Transitive and intransitive verbs (see § 512, NOTE 2).

Verbs transitive (i.e. taking a direct object) in French and intransitive (and followed by a preposition) in English: **attendre, chercher, demander** (ask for), **écouter, regarder**: **Je l'attends**, I am waiting *for* him.

Verbs intransitive in French and transitive in English: **approcher de, assister à** (be present at), **convenir à** (suit, fit), **demandeur à** (ask a *person*), **douter de, entrer dans, jouir de, nuire à, obéir à, pardonner à, plaire à, répondre à** (answer), **ressembler à, se servir de, se souvenir de**.

542. Reflexive verbs. Verbs which are reflexive in French but not in English: **s'arrêter, s'asseoir, se coucher, s'écrier, s'en aller, s'endormir, s'éveiller, s'habiller, se lever, se plaindre, se promener, se sauver** (run away), **se taire**.

543. Auxiliaries. Compound tenses are usually formed by **avoir** and the past participle (*j'ai aimé, j'avais aimé, etc.*) But **être** replaces **avoir** in the following cases:

(1) With all reflexive verbs: **Je me suis flatté**, I flattered myself.

(2) With many verbs (mostly of motion) of which the following are the most common: **aller, arriver, descendre,**

entrer, monter, mourir, naître, partir, sortir, venir:¹ Je suis allé, I went.

544. Agreement of Present Participles. The present participle is invariable when used as a verb (to express action), but it is varied when used as an adjective (to describe a state).

Une bête, vivant dans l'eau,	An animal, living in the water,
s'amuse peu,	has a dull time.
J'ai trouvé une bête vivante dans	I have found a living animal in
le lait,	the milk.

545. Agreement of Past Participles:

1. If the verb is conjugated with **avoir**, the participle agrees with the direct object *when the object precedes* (order; object; verb; participle):

Quelle leçon avez-vous apprise? What lesson have you learned?²

Otherwise no agreement (*order*: verb; participle; object):

J'ai appris la leçon, I have learned the lesson

2. If the verb is conjugated with **être** (§ 543), the participle agrees with the *subject*:

Elle est venue, She has come

Elles sont aimées, They are loved

NOTE. Though reflexive verbs are conjugated with **être**, the past participle agrees not with the *subject* but with a *preceding direct object* as in the case of verbs conjugated with **avoir**: Elle s'est lavée, She washed herself.

With Elle s'est lavée compare:

Elle s'est lavé les mains, She washed her hands

Elle s'est cassé le bras, She broke her arm

¹ Verbs conjugated with **être** are intransitive (that is, they have no direct object). Some may be used also transitively (that is, with a direct object). In the second case they are conjugated with **avoir**:

Je suis descendu (monté), I went down (went up)

J'ai descendu (monté) l'escalier, I went down (went up) the stairs

J'ai descendu (monté) la malle, I carried the trunk down (up)

² With *en* the participle remains invariable: Avez-vous choisi des livres?
— J'en ai choisi.

In the sentence **Elle s'est lavée**, *She washed herself*, **s' (se)** is the direct object; since it *precedes* the participle, the participle agrees with it. In the sentences **Elle s'est lavé les mains**, **Elle s'est cassé le bras**, **s' (se)** is the indirect object (*She washed the hands to herself; She broke the arm to herself*); the direct objects are **mains**, **bras**, and since they *follow* the participles, the participles do not agree with them, but are *invariable*.

Similarly in **Elle s'est parlé**, *She spoke to herself*, the participle does not agree with **s' (to herself)** since it is the *indirect*, not the *direct*, object.

SYNTAX OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE

546. Present and future tenses in the principal clause govern the subjunctive verb or auxiliary in the *present*; and past and conditional tenses govern the subjunctive verb or auxiliary in the *past*.

Je désire qu'il parte.

I desire that he go.

Je désirais qu'il partît.

I desired that he might go.

Croyez-vous qu'il soit parti?

Do you believe he has gone?

Je ne pensais pas qu'il fût parti.

I did not think he had gone.

NOTE. In colloquial style, the past subjunctive is becoming obsolete, the present ungrammatically usurping its place. See Permissible Deviations, § 560,9.

Il était temps que je vous dise
cela.

It was time that I should say
this to you.

547. Subjunctive used Independently. Though the subjunctive is properly a *subjoined*, and therefore a dependent or governed mood, it is in a few cases used independently — though a governing verb may usually be understood:

1. In wishes:

Dieu vous garde (or préserve) !

God guard you!

À Dieu ne plaise qu'il vienne !

May it not please God that he
come !

Puisse-t-il être heureux !
 Vive le roi !
 Plût à Dieu que cela fût vrai !

May he be happy !
 Long live the king !
 Would to God that this might be true !

NOTE. Soit ! So be it.

2. To supply the lacking third persons imperative (occasionally also the first person); it is preceded by **que**:

Qu'il réponde ! Qu'ils répondent ! Let him answer ! Let them answer !

Que je sois pendu si j'en sais le premier mot ! May I be hanged if I know anything about it !

3. In purely literary style to express with special emphasis a condition or concession — **si**, *if*, being omitted and the subject-pronoun following its verb.

Eût-il cent fois raison, je ne céderais point. Were he right a hundred times, I would not yield.

Dussé-je mourir, je le ferais quand même. Were I to die, I would do it nevertheless.

4. To replace the conditional in compound tenses:

Je l'eusse fait volontiers. I would have done it willingly.

Avec une dot, elle se fût mariée plus tôt. With a dowry, she would have got married sooner.

548. Subjunctive after a Governing Verb. The subjunctive is used after:

(1) Verbs expressing an act of will, i.e. verbs like *to wish*, like, prefer, *demand*, order, beg, *permit*, forbid,¹ approve, *prevent*,¹ etc.

Nous voulons qu'il sorte.

We wish that he go.

Je préférerais qu'il régnât.

I should prefer that he should reign.

Je défends qu'on le fasse.

I forbid that one do it.

J'empêcherai qu'on ne le fasse.

I will prevent its being done.

(2) Verbs expressing emotions, such as joy, sorrow, surprise, doubt,¹ fear,¹ anger, shame:

¹ For the redundant **ne** with these verbs see § 534.

Je regrette que cela soit arrivé.	I regret that this has happened.
Je serais bien aise que cela arrivât.	I should be very glad to have that happen.
Je crains que vous ne vous trompiez.	I fear you may be deceiving yourself.

(3) Impersonal verbs, unless they express certainty or probability. When negative or interrogative *all* impersonal verbs govern the subjunctive.

Il faut qu'il parte.	He must go.
Il semble que cela soit facile à faire.	It seems that that is easy to do.
Il convient que vous le fassiez.	It is proper you should do it.
Il est vrai (certain, sûr, probable, clair) que c'est facile.	It is true (certain, sure, probable, clear) that it is easy.

But:

Il n'est pas vrai (certain, sûr, etc.) que ce soit facile.	It is not true (certain, sure, etc.) that it is easy.
--	---

(4) Verbs of *saying* and *thinking*, when used negatively or interrogatively (the indicative *may* be used):

Je dis qu'il a menti.	I say that he has lied.
Je ne dis pas qu'il ait menti (or a menti).	I do not say he has lied.
Je ne crois pas qu'il mente.	I do not believe he lies.
Pensez-vous qu'il mente?	Do you think he lies?
J'espère qu'il le fera.	I hope he will do it.
Je n'espère pas qu'il le fasse (or fera).	I do not hope he will do it.

549. Subjunctive after Conjunctions:

1. The following regularly govern the subjunctive:

quoique	} <i>although</i>
bien que	
pourvu que, provided that	
sans que, without	
à moins que, unless (with redundant <i>ne</i> ; cf. § 534)	
afin que	} in order that, so that
pour que	
avant que, before (for redundant <i>ne</i> see § 534)	

Quoiqu'il ait soixante ans, il est plus fort que moi.	Although he is sixty years old, he is stronger than I.
Venez avant qu'il parte.	Come before he gets away.

2. Certain compound conjunctions govern the subjunctive when the following verb suggests purpose or anticipation, and hence uncertainty. They govern the indicative when they introduce a mere statement of fact.

Such are **de manière que, de façon que, de sorte que**, all meaning *so that*:

Il agit en (or de) sorte que tous le haïront. He acts so that all will hate him.

Agissez de sorte qu'on vous bénisse. Act so that people may bless you.

550. Subjunctive in Relative Clauses:

1. The subjunctive is used in a relative clause when it expresses a *characteristic* which may not be fulfilled:

Il n'avait pas d'outil dont il pût se servir. He had no tool of which he could make use.

Il y a peu de livres qui soient bien écrits. There are few books that are well written.

Quel est le poète qui ait égalé Homère? Who is the poet that has equaled Homer?

Je cherche un domestique qui soit fidèle. I seek a servant who may be faithful (*purpose and desire*).

But:

J'ai un domestique qui est très fidèle. I have a servant who is very faithful (*a mere fact*).

2. The relative clause following a superlative is usually subjunctive.

Napoléon est le plus grand général qui ait jamais existé. Napoleon is the greatest general that ever existed.

NOTE. **Le premier, le dernier, le seul, personne, rien**, etc., being virtual superlatives, govern the relative clause accordingly:

Il n'y a personne qui soit sûr. There is no one who is safe.

De tous mes anciens amis c'est le seul qui se souvienne de moi. Of all my old friends he is the only one who remembers me.

But:

De cette grande armée c'étaient les seuls qui survivaient. Of this great army they were the only ones who survived.

3. Owing to their hypothetical or concessive value, the

French equivalents for the English *whoever, whatever, however, and wherever*, require a verb in the subjunctive (cf. § 530,4):

Quelle que soit la provocation, ne vous battez point.	Whatever be the provocation, do not fight.
Quelques peines qu'il eût, il les cachait.	Whatever griefs he felt, he hid them.
Quelque bons qu'ils fussent, ils ne lui pardonnerent jamais.	However good they were, they never pardoned him.

USE OF TENSES

551. Present tense with depuis:

Depuis quand êtes-vous ici? How long *have you been* here?

Je suis ici depuis huit jours

Voilà (il y a) huit jours que je suis ici } I *have been* here for a week.

NOTE. As the present is used here for the past indefinite, so the imperfect is used for the pluperfect: Depuis quand étiez-vous ici? How long *had you been* here?

552. Use of the past tenses.

The *past indefinite* is the narrative tense, the most frequently used past tense.

The *imperfect* is the descriptive tense, corresponding roughly to the English past in *-ing*, *I was giving*. It is used:

(1) of an action conceived as continuing in past time, especially when another action takes place during the continuance of the first: *I was walking* (imperfect) *in the garden when I saw* (past indefinite) *him*;

(2) of customary or repeated action: *I used to give*, *I* (repeatedly, always, usually, etc.) *gave*.

The *past definite* replaces the past indefinite in literary style.

Enfin il a parlé (*conversational*) } He spoke at last.
Enfin il parla (*literary*) }

Il allait à l'école, He was going to school, he used to go to school, he usually went to school.

Il allait à l'école lorsque l'orage a éclaté (éclata), He was going to school when the storm burst.

553. The future and the conditional are often used to express probability or conjecture:

Sera-ce lui? Serait-ce lui?

Can it be he? Could it be he?

Il l'aura dit.

He probably said it.

Aurait-il dit cela?

Could he have said that?

554. Note the future with **quand, lorsque, aussitôt que, après que**, etc., where the present is used in English:

Je viendrai quand je pourrai, I shall come when I *can*.

555. Conditions. Conditions follow the *normal* English forms:

If he speaks, I shall speak, **S'il parle** (*present*), **je parlerai** (*future*).

If he spoke, I should speak, **S'il parlait** (*imperfect*), **je parlerais** (*conditional*).

NOTE. The future and conditional may be used in English in the *if* clause (if "he will speak," "if he would speak") but not in French except when **si** means whether:

Savez-vous s'il parlera (parlerait)? Do you know if he will (would) speak?

556. Passive. The passive voice corresponds to the English forms, the participle agreeing with the subject since the auxiliary is **être** (see § 545,2): **elle est aimée**, she is loved; **elle sera aimée, elle a été aimée**, etc.

NOTE 1. The passive voice is not so commonly used in French as in English. Two frequent substitutes are:

(1) **On**: **Ici on parle français**, French is spoken here.

(2) The reflexive: **Cela se dit**, That is said.

La lutte se termina, The struggle ended.

NOTE 2. The agent is introduced by **par** when the action is specific, by **de** when the action is general or habitual:

Il fut tué par un brigand, He was killed *by* a bandit.

Un père est aimé de ses enfants, A father is loved *by* his children.

NOTE 3. Observe the passive force of a *transitive* infinitive following **faire** (have, cause) **voir, entendre**, and some other verbs:

J'ai fait bâtir une maison, I had a house built.

Je l'ai vu (entendu) punir, I saw (heard) him punished.

But:

J'ai fait venir (intransitive) **le médecin**, I had the doctor come.

If the infinitive has an object, the agent is the indirect object. **Par** may be used to avoid ambiguity:

Faites-lui faire son devoir, Have him do his duty.

Faites faire son devoir à votre fils, Have your son do his duty.

Il a fait vendre sa maison par un ami, He had his house sold by a friend.

RULES FOR GENDER

(Supplementary to § 481)

557. I. Gender determined by meaning.

A. Masculine:

1. Males: **homme, fils, coq**.
Except **la sentinelle, la recrue**.¹
2. Trees, shrubs, metals: **chêne, saule, argent, cuivre**.
Except **la ronce, l'épine, la vigne**.
3. Seasons, months, days: **printemps, été, janvier, dimanche**.
4. Winds, points of compass: **zéphyr, aiglon, nord**.
Except **la bise, la brise**.
5. Countries not ending in -e: **États-Unis, Canada, Portugal**.
6. Mountains: **Vésuve, Parnasse**.
Except **Alpes, Pyrénées, Vosges**.
7. Adjectives, infinitives and other parts of speech used as nouns:
le blanc, le dormir, le pourquoi.

B. Feminine:

1. Females: **mère, fille, poule**.
2. Fruits and flowers ending in -e: **pomme, cerise; tulipe, rose**.
3. Countries, cities, rivers ending in -e: **France, Russie; Rome, Venise; Seine, Loire**.
Except: **le Mexique, le Rhône, le Tibre**.
4. Holidays (*fête de* is understood): **la Toussaint (la fête de Tous-saint), la Saint-Jean**.

¹ These and **connaissance, dupe, personne, victime** are feminine whether they refer to males or females.

558. II. Gender determined by endings.

A. Feminine:

1. Nouns ending in neutral *-e*:¹ *porte, ville, place, huile.*

Except those ending in

- acle*: *spectacle, oracle, miracle*
- age*:² *voyage, village, courage*
- aire*:³ *dictionnaire*
- ège*: *collège, privilège, manège*
- sme*: *patriotisme, enthousiasme*

2. *Abstract* nouns ending in

-eur:⁴ *chaleur, hauteur, grandeur*

NOTE: When *-eur* denotes an *agent* the noun is masculine:

laboureur, sénateur, facteur

3. Nouns ending in

- ié*: *moitié, pitié, amitié*
- ion*: *nation, confusion, possession*
- té*:⁵ *cité, santé, liberté*
- aison*:⁶ *maison, raison, conjugaison*

B. Nouns ending otherwise are generally masculine.

559. III. Gender of compound nouns.

1. Those composed of two nouns have the gender of the first:
le chou-fleur.
2. Those composed of a noun and another part of speech have the gender of the noun: *une basse-cour.*

Except those composed of a noun and a verb which are always masculine: *le porte-plume, tourne-vis.*

3. Those of which neither component part is a noun are masculine:
le passe-partout.

¹ The following are among the common exceptions to this rule: *âge, automne, centime, cigare, costume, crime, exemple, légume, linge, livre (book), mètre, signe, silence, sucre, timbre, tonnerre, verre, vice.*

² Feminine are *cage, image, page, plage, rage.*

³ Feminine are *grammaire, paire.*

⁴ Except *bonheur, malheur, honneur, labeur.*

⁵ Except *côté, été.*

⁶ Nouns in *-on* are masculine: *bouillon, poison, poisson*; except *boisson, chanson, façon, leçon.*

560. Permissible Deviations.

A decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction, dated February 26, 1901, orders that the following deviations from established orthography be tolerated in public schools:

1. The article need not be dropped in partitive constructions when the noun is preceded by an adjective: **du bon pain, de la bonne viande, des bons fruits.** See § 485, 1, NOTE, (b).
2. **Demi** may agree with its noun even when it precedes: **une demie heure.** See § 507, NOTE.
3. **Vingt** and **cent** may be written with an -s even when a number follows: **quatre vingts dix.** See § 502, NOTE 1.
4. **Mille** may be used in dates: **l'an mille huit cents quatre vingts dix.** See § 509.
5. The hyphen may be omitted in numerals: **dix sept.** See § 502, NOTE 2.
6. The hyphen may be omitted in **moi même**, etc. See § 513, 5.
7. The hyphen may be omitted between the verb and a pronoun subject placed after it: **est ce, avez vous.** See § 536.
8. **C'est** may be used instead of **ce sont**: **c'est eux.** See p. 319, footnote.
9. The present subjunctive may be used instead of the imperfect in a clause depending upon a conditional: **il faudrait qu'il vienne.** See § 546, NOTE.
10. The redundant **ne** may be omitted: **il craint qu'on vienne, l'année a été meilleure qu'on l'espérait, à moins qu'on accorde le pardon.** See § 534.

VOCABULARIES

The numbers following the word defined refer to the lessons in which the word is first used.

The asterisk * after verbs denotes that they are conjugated with *être* in the compound tenses.

The feminine form of the adjective is given only when it offers some special difficulty.

The following abbreviations are used:

<i>adj.</i>	adjective	<i>p. p.</i>	past participle
<i>adv.</i>	adverb	<i>pl.</i>	plural
<i>conj.</i>	conjunction	<i>prep.</i>	preposition
<i>f.</i>	feminine	<i>pron.</i>	pronoun
<i>m.</i>	masculine	<i>rel.</i>	relative

à

FRANÇAIS-ANGLAIS

Amé

à [a], to, at, in, 2.
 absolu [apsɔly], absolute, 34.
 l'achat [laʃa], *m.*, purchase, 23.
 acheter [aʃte], to buy, 17.
 admirer [admire], to admire, 27.
 l'adresse [ladres], *f.*, address, 31.
 afin que [afɛ̃ kə], in order that, 41.
 l'âge [la:ʒ], *m.*, age, 29
 agréable [agréabl], agreeable, 42.

aimable [emabl], amiable, kind, 42.
 aimer [eme], to like, love, 16.
 allemand [almā], German, 3.
 aller* [ale], to go, 14 (to feel), 41.
 l'allumette [lalymet], *f.*, match, 22.
 américain [amerikɛ̃], American, 42.
 l'Amérique [lamerik], *f.*, America, 32.

a

ENGLISH-FRENCH

ami

a, an, un, une.
 to be able, pouvoir.
 about (=on one's person), sur.
 absolute, absolu.
 acquaintance, la connaissance.
 across, à travers.
 address, l'adresse, *f.*
 to admire, admirer.
 to be afraid, avoir peur, craindre.
 after, après.
 afternoon, l'après-midi, *f.*
 again, encore.
 ago, il y a.

agreeable, agréable.
 all, tout, -e, tous, toutes.
 to allow, permettre.
 almost, presque.
 alone, seul.
 already, déjà.
 also, aussi.
 although, quoique, bien que.
 always, toujours.
 am to, devoir, § 447.
 America, l'Amérique, *f.*
 American, américain.
 amiable, aimable.

l'ami [lami], *m.*, **l'amie**, *f.*, friend, 9, 16.

amuser [amyze], to amuse, 34.

l'an [ā], *m.*, year, 29; **le jour de l'—**, New Year's Day, 34.

anglais [āgle], English, 2.

l'animal [lanimal], *m.*, animal, 28.

l'année [lane], *f.*, year, 27.

l'anniversaire [laniverser], *m.*, birthday, 34.

août [u], August, 34.

appeler [aple], to call, 16.

apporter [aporte], to bring, 13.

apprendre [apṛā:dr], to learn, 32.

après [apre], after, 3.

l'après-midi [lapre midi], *f.*, afternoon, 23.

l'argent [larzā], *m.*, silver, money, 16.

l'arme [larm], *f.*, weapon, 39.

l'armée [larme], *f.*, army, 39.

s'arrêter* [sarete], to stop, 38.

arriver* [arive], to arrive, 14.

assez [ase], enough, 17.

l'assiette [lasjet], *f.*, plate, 43.

assis [asi], seated, 32,

asseyez-vous! [aseje vu], sit down! 44.

attendre [atā:dr], to wait (for), 32.

attraper [atrape], to catch, 36.

aujourd'hui [ozurdyi], to-day, 22.

aussi [osi], also, 3; as, 28.

l'automne [lotān], *m.*, autumn, 27.

l'automobile [lotāmobil], *f.*, automobile, 36.

autour (de) [otu:r (dē)], around, 43.

autre [otr], other, 22.

avancer [avāse], to advance, be fast (*clock*), 24.

avant [avā] (*prep. of time*), before, 23; (*conj.*),—*que*, before, 41.

avec [avek], with, 9.

l'avocat [lavoka], *m.*, lawyer, 29.

avoir [avwa:r], to have, 7; **il y a** [il ya], there is, there are, 7; ago, 29.

avril [avril], April, 34.

le bagage [baga:ʒ], baggage, 14.

le bain [bē], bath, 38; **la salle de —s**, bath-room, 38.

to amuse, amuser.

an, un, une.

and, et.

animal, l'animal, *m.*

another, un autre.

to answer, répondre (à).

any, du, etc., § 123.

anything, quelque chose.

apple, la pomme.

April, avril.

are, sont; — to, devoir, § 447.

arm, le bras.

army, l'armée, *f.*

around, autour (de).

to arrive, arriver*.

as, comme, aussi; — . . . —, aussi . . . que.

to ask, ask for, demander (à).

to astonish, étonner.

at, à; — last, enfin; — once, tout de suite.

August, août.

aunt, la tante.

automobile, l'automobile, *f.*

autumn, l'automne, *m.*

back (to come), revenir*.

bad, mauvais.

badly, mal.

le banc [bā], bench, 2.
 bas [ba], low; **en**—, downstairs, 7.
 le bas [ba], stocking, 17.
 la bataille [bata:j], battle, 39.
 la bateau [bato], boat, 44.
 le bâtiment [batimā], building, 11.
 bâtir [batir], to build, 11.
 se battre* [sə batr], to fight, 39.
 beau, belle [bo, bel], beautiful,
 fine, handsome, 8.
 beaucoup (de) [boku (də)], much,
 many, 17.
 le besoin [bɛzwɛ], need; **avoir**—;
 to need, 36.
 bête [bert], foolish, stupid, 36.
 le beurre [bœr], butter, 13.
 bien [bjɛ], well, 23; very, 44; —
 que, although, 41.
 bientôt [bjɛto], soon, 16.

le billet [bijɛ], note, 14.
 blanc, blanche [blā, blā:s], white,
 8.
 la blanchisseuse [blāʃisɛz], laun-
 dress, 37.
 blesser [blɛsɛ], to wound, hurt, 38.
 bleu [blø], blue, 4.
 boire [bwair], to drink, 22.
 la boîte [bwat], box, 22, 31; —
 aux lettres, letter-box, 31.
 bon, bonne [bɔ̃, bɔn], good, 2, 8.
 les bonbons [bɔ̃bɔ̃], candy, 43.
 bonjour [bɔ̃ʒur], good morning,
 21.
 la bonne [bɔn], maid, servant, 7.
 à bord [a bɔr], on board, 44.
 la bouche [buʃ], mouth, 41.
 le boucher [buʃɛ], butcher, 26.
 le boulanger [bulāʒɛ], baker, 26.
 la bouteille [butɛ:j], bottle, 22.

bag

ENGLISH-FRENCH

boy

baggage, le bagage.
 baker, le boulanger.
 barracks, la caserne.
 bath, le bain; — **room**, la salle de
 bains.
 battle, la bataille.
 to be, être; (*health*), aller* (§ 419).
 beautiful, beau, belle.
 because, parce que.
 bed, le lit; to go to —, se coucher*.
 bedroom, la chambre à coucher.
 before (*of time*), avant; (*of place*),
 devant; (*conj.*), avant que.
 to beg, prier.
 to begin, commencer.
 beginning, le commencement.
 behind, derrière.
 to believe, croire.
 bell, la sonnette.
 to belong, être à.
 bench, le banc.

beside, à côté (de). [meux.
best (*adj.*), le meilleur; (*adv.*), le
better (*adj.*), meilleur; (*adv.*),
 mieux; it is —, il vaut mieux.
 between, entre.
 big, grand.
 bill, la note.
 bill-of-fare, la carte.
 bird, l'oiseau, *m.*
 birthday, l'anniversaire, *m.*
 black, noir; to —, cirer.
 blue, bleu.
 board (on), à bord (de).
 boarding-house, la pension.
 boat, le bateau.
 book, le livre.
 born, né*.
 both, tous les deux.
 bottle, la bouteille.
 box, la boîte.
 boy, le garçon.

le bras [bra], arm, 37.
 briller [brije], to shine, 27.
 brosser [brɔse], to brush, 32.
 bu [by], drunk, 22; (*p. p. of boire*, to drink).
 le buffet [byfɛ], lunch-counter, 14.

la cabine [kabin], cabin, 44.
 le cadeau [kado], present, gift, 34.
 le café [kafɛ], coffee, 13; *café*, 22.
 le cahier [kaje], copy-book, 1.
 la campagne [kāpaɲ], country, 28.
 le capitaine [kapiten], captain, 39.
 la carte [kart], bill-of-fare, 16; card, 31.
 la carte-postale [kart pɔstal], post-card, 31; — *illustrée*, picture post-card, 31.
 la caserne [kazern], barracks, 39.
 causer [koze], to chat, 42.

ce, cet, cette [sə, sɛt], this, that, 23; *ce qui, ce que*, what (*rel.*), 36.

ceci [səsi], this, 23.
 cela [sɛla], that, 23.
 celle [sɛl], *f.*, that, this, the one, 43.
 celui [sɛlyi], *m.*, that, this, the one, 43.

cent [sɑ̃], hundred, 29.
 le centime [sɑ̃tim], centime, 17.
 certain [sɛrtɛ̃], certain, 33.
 chacun [ʃakœ̃], each one, 43.
 la chaise [ʃɛz], chair, 7.
 la chambre [ʃɑ̃br], room, 6; — à *coucher* [kuʃɛ], bedroom, 7.
 le champ [ʃɑ̃], field, 28.
 chanter [ʃɑ̃te], to sing, 3.
 le chapeau [ʃapo], hat, 11.
 chaque [ʃak], each, 43.
 charmer [ʃarme], to charm, 43.
 chaud [ʃo], hot, warm, 27; *avoir* —, to be warm, 36.

bread, le pain.
 to break, casser.
 breakfast, le déjeuner; to —, déjeuner.
 to bring, apporter.
 brother, le frère.
 to brush, brosser.
 to build, bâtir.
 building, le bâtiment.
 but, mais.
 butcher, le boucher.
 butter, le beurre.
 to buy, acheter.
 by, par.

cabby, le cocher.
 cabin, la cabine.
 café, le café.

cake, le gâteau.
 to call, appeler.
 can (=to be able), pouvoir.
 candy, les bonbons, *m.*
 captain, le capitaine.
 car, la voiture (*railway*).
 card, la carte.
 carpenter, le menuisier.
 carriage, la voiture.
 to carry, porter.
 to catch, attraper.
 centime, le centime.
 certain, certain.
 chair, la chaise.
 chambermaid, la femme de chambre.
 to charm, charmer.
 to chat, causer.
 cheap, bon marché.

le chauffeur [ʃofœr], chauffeur, 36.

la chaussette [ʃoset], sock, 37.

le chemin [ʃəmɛ], way, road, 12.

la chemise [ʃəmiz], shirt, 37,

cher, chère [ʃɛr], dear, 18.

chercher [ʃɛrʃe], to seek, look for, 4.

le cheval [ʃəval], horse, 28,

les cheveux [ʃəvø], *m.*, hair, 38.

chez [ʃe], at (in, to) the house (shop, *etc.*) of, 18.

choisir [ʃwazir], to choose, 8.

la chose [ʃo:z], thing, 17.

-ci [si], here, 23.

le ciel [sjel], sky, heaven, 27.

le cigare [siga:r], cigar, 22.

la cigarette [sigaret], cigarette, 22.

le cinéma [sinema], moving-picture show, 36.

cinq [sɛk], five, 16.

cinquante [sɛkɑ̃t], fifty, 17.

cirer [sire], to black (*shoes*), 32.

clair [kle:r], light (*of colors*), 33; clear, 36.

la classe [klas], class, 3; salle de —, class-room, 1.

le client [kliɑ̃], customer, 33.

le cocher [koʃe], coachman cabby, 16.

le coin [kwɛ̃], corner, 12.

le colis [kɔli], package, parcel, 14;

— postal, parcel-post package, 31.

le collège [kolɛʒ], school, 28.

combien [kɔbjɛ̃], how much, how many, 17; — de temps, how long, 34.

la comédie [kɔmedi], comedy, 36.

commander [kɔmɑ̃de], to order, 18.

comme [kɔm], as, like, how, 32, 37.

le commencement [kɔmɑ̃smɑ̃], beginning, 28.

commencer [kɔmɑ̃se], to begin, 36.

comment [kɔmɑ̃], how, 37.

comprendre [kɔprɑ̃dr], to understand, 32.

conduire [kɔdyir], to conduct, drive, 21.

la connaissance [kɔnɛsɑ̃s], acquaintance, 43.

connaître [kɔnɛtr], to know, 42.

content [kɔtɑ̃], glad, 42.

le costume [kɔstym], suit, 18.

child, l'enfant, *m. or f.*

to choose, choisir.

Christmas, Noël, *m.*; Merry —, joyeux Noël.

church, l'église, *f.*

cigar, le cigare.

cigarette, la cigarette.

city, la ville.

class, la classe.

class-room, la salle de classe.

clean, propre.

clerk, l'employé, *m.*

clock, la pendule.

to close, fermer.

clothes, les vêtements, *m.*

cloud, le nuage.

coach, la voiture.

coachman, le cocher.

coffee, le café.

cold, froid; (*illness*), le rhume; to be —, avoir froid; to catch —, attraper un rhume.

color, la couleur.

to comb, peigner.

to come, venir*; — back, revenir*; — in, entrer*; — down, descendre*.

comedy, la comédie.

to complain, se plaindre*.

to conduct, conduire.

le côté [kote], side; à—de, beside, d
22.

le coton [kɔtɔ̃], cotton, 17.

se coucher* [sə kuʃe], to go to
bed, 38.

la couleur [kulœr], color, 33

la cour [kur], yard, 4.

la course [kurs], errand, 26.

le cousin [kuzɛ̃]. —e [kuzin], f.,
cousin, 9.

le couteau [kuto], knife, 43.

coûter [kute], to cost, 19.

couvrir [kuvrir], to cover, 44.

craindre [krɛ̃dr], to fear, 44.

la cravate [kravat], cravat, 19.

le crayon [krejɔ̃], pencil, 1.

la crème [krɛ:m], cream, 13.

croire [krwa:r], to believe, 37.

la cuiller [kyje:r], spoon, 43.

la cuisine [kyizin], kitchen, 7.

la cuisinière [kyizinje:r], cook, 7.

la dame [dam], lady, 21.

dans [dā], in, into, 1.

de [də], of, from, 1.

décembre [desɑ̃:br], December, 34

déjà [deʒa], already, 21.

déjeuner [deʒœne], tobreakfast, 7.

demain [dəmɛ̃], to-morrow, 34.

demander (à) [dəməde (a)], to ask
(for), 16.

demeurer [dəmœre], to live, 29.

demi [dəmi], half, 24.

la dent [dā], tooth, 38.

la dentelle [dātel], lace, 19.

se dépêcher* [sə depeʃe], to
hurry, 37.

depuis [dəpyi], since, from, 34;—
quand, how long, 34.

dernier, —ère [dərnje, dərnje:r],
last, 32.

derrière [dərje:r], behind, 23.

descendre* [desɑ̃:dr], to come
(get) down, 11.

se déshabiller* [sə dezabije], to
undress, 38.

désirer [dezire], to wish, 17.

deux [də], two, 11; tous les —,
both, 29.

deuxième [dəʒjem], second, 32.

devant [dəvā], in front of, 1.

devoir [dəvwa:r], to owe, must,
ought, am to, 43.

le devoir [dəvwa:r], paper, exer-
cise, 2.

dévouer [devwe], to devote, 44.

COO

ENGLISH-FRENCH

Dec

cook, la cuisinière.

copy-book, le cahier.

corner, le coin.

to cost, coûter.

cotton, le coton.

country, le pays, la campagne; in
the —, à la campagne.

cousin, le cousin, la cousine.

cow, la vache.

cream, la crème.

cravat, la cravate.

to cover, couvrir.

to cross, traverser.

cup, la tasse.

customer, le client.

custom-house, la douane.

dark (of colors), foncé.

daughter, la fille.

day, le jour; every —, tous les
jours.

dead, mort.

a great deal, beaucoup.

dear, cher, chère.

death, la mort.

to deceive, tromper.

December, décembre.

difficile [difisil], difficult, 2.
 le dimanche [dimā:ʃ], Sunday, 19.
 dîner [dine], to dine, 7.
 dire [dir], to say, 19.
 dit [di], said, 21; (*p. p. of dire*, to say).
 dix [dis], ten, 24.
 dix-huit [di zyit], eighteen, 28.
 dix-neuf [diz nœf], nineteen, 28.
 dix-sept [dis set], seventeen, 28.
 donc [dɔ:k or dɔ], then, so, therefore, 22.
 donne [dɔn], gives, 2.
 donner [done], to give, 3.
 dont [dɔ], of which, of whom, whose, 44.
 dormir [dormi:r], to sleep, 38.
 la douane [dwan], custom-house, 44.
 douter [dute], to doubt, 42.
 douze [duz], twelve, 24.
 le drapeau [drapo], flag, 39.
 droit [drwa], right; à —e, to (on) the right, 31.
 drôle [droil], funny, 36.

l'eau [lo], *f.*, water, 13.
 l'éclair [lekler], *m.*, lightning, 27.
 l'école [lekɔl], *f.*, school, 1.
 écouter [ekute], to listen, 23.
 écrire [ekri:r], to write, 31.
 l'église [legliz], *f.*, church, 12.
 eh bien! [e bjɛ̃], well!
 l'élève [lele:v], *m. or f.*, pupil, 1.
 elle [ɛl], *f.*, she, her, it, 3.
 l'employé [lɑplwaje], *m.*, employee, 17.
 en [ɑ̃], some, any; of it, of them, 13.
 en [ɑ̃], in, 21; —bas, downstairs, 7; —haut, upstairs, 7.
 encore [ɑkɔ:r], still, yet, again, 19.
 l'encre [ɑ:kr], *f.*, ink, 4.
 l'enfant [lɑfɑ̃], *m. or f.*, child, 4.
 enfin [ɑfɛ̃], at last, finally, 23.
 enseigner (à) [ɑsɛne], to teach, 4.
 ensemble [ɑsɑ:bl], together, 24.
 entendre [ɑtɑ:dr], to hear, 11.
 entre [ɑtr], between, 12.
 entrer* (dans) [ɑtre (dɑ)], to go in, enter, 6.
 envelopper [ɑvlɔpe], to wrap, 33.

deck, le pont.
 to depart, partir*.
 to devote, dévouer.
 to die, mourir*.
 difficult, difficile.
 to dine, dîner.
 dining-room, la salle à manger.
 dirty, sale.
 to do, faire.
 doctor, le médecin.
 door, la porte.
 to doubt, douter.
 downstairs, en bas.
 drawing-room, le salon.
 dress, la robe; to —, habiller.
 to drink, boire.
 to drive, conduire.

during, pendant.
 dust, la poussière.

each, chaque; — one, chacun.
 early, de bonne heure.
 Easter, Pâques, *m.*
 easy, facile.
 to eat, manger.
 eight, huit.
 eighteen, dix-huit.
 eleven, onze.
 employee, l'employé, *m.*
 end, la fin.
 English, anglais.
 enough, assez.
 to enter, entrer* (dans).

envoyer [ãvwajɛ], to send, 31.
 l'épée [lepe], *f.*, sword, 39.
 l'épicier [lepisjɛ] *m.*, grocer, 26.
 épouser [epuzɛ], to marry, 29.
 l'escalier [leskaljɛ], *m.*, staircase, 7.
 essayer [esɛjɛ], to try, 33.
 est [ɛ], is, 1; (belongs), 26; n'est-ce pas? [nɛs pa], is it not (so)?
 est-ce que [ɛs kə] (*introduces a question*), 2.
 et [ɛ], and, 3.
 les États-Unis [le zeta zyni], *m.*, the United States, 32.
 l'été [lete], *m.*, summer, 27.
 étonner [etone], to astonish, 21.
 l'étranger [letrãʒɛ], *m.*, stranger, foreigner, 32.
 être [ɛtr], to be, 14; —à, to belong to, 26.
 l'étude [letyd], *f.*, study, 2.
 eux [ø], they, them, 22.

facile [fasil], easy, 2.
 le facteur [faktœr], porter, 14; postman, 31.

faible [febl], weak, 41.
 la faim [fɛ], hunger; avoir—, to be hungry, 24.
 faire [fɛr], to do, make, 26; —beau (temps), to be fine (weather), 27.
 la famille [fami:j], family, 9.
 fatiguer [fatige], to tire, 37.
 il faudra [fodra], it will be necessary, 44.
 il faut [il fo], it is necessary, must, 42.
 le faux-col [fo kɔl], collar, 19.
 la femme [fam], woman, wife, 9.
 la fenêtre [fənɛ:tr], window, 1.
 la ferme [fɛrm], farm, 28.
 fermer [ferme], to shut, close, 6.
 la fête [fɛt], holiday, 34.
 février [fevrie], February, 34.
 le fiancé [fjãse], fiancé, 29.
 la figure [figyr], face, 38.
 la fille [fi:j], daughter, girl, 4, 9.
 le fils [fis], son, 9.
 la fin [fɛ], end, 28.
 finir [finir], to finish, 8.

err

ENGLISH-FRENCH

fin

errand, la course.
 evening, le soir.
 every, tout; chaque.
 everybody, tout le monde
 evil, le mal.
 exercise, le devoir.
 eye, l'œil, *m.*; *pl.* yeux.
 face, la figure.
 to fall, tomber*.
 family, la famille.
 far, loin.
 farm, la ferme.
 fashion, la mode.
 fashionable, à la mode.
 fast, vite; to be — (*watch*), avancer.

father, le père.
 to fatigue, fatiguer.
 fear, la peur.
 to fear, craindre, avoir peur.
 February, février.
 to feel, sentir; to — well, *etc.*, se sentir* bien, *etc.*
 few, peu.
 fewer, moins.
 fiancé, le fiancé.
 field, le champ.
 fifteen, quinze.
 fifty, cinquante.
 to fight, se battre*.
 finally, enfin.
 to find, trouver.
 fine, beau.

la fleur [flœ:r], flower, 8.
 la fois [fwa], time, 23.
 foncé [fōse], dark (*of colors*), 33.
 fort [fɔ:r], strong, 41.
 la fourchette [fɜrʃet], fork, 43.
 le franc [frā], franc (20 cents), 17.
 français [frāse], French, 2.
 la France [frā:s], France.
 frapper [frape], to strike, knock, 11.
 le frère [frɛ:r], brother, 9.
 froid [frwa], cold, 27; avoir —, to be cold, 36.
 fumer [fyme], to smoke, 22.
 le fusil [fyzi], gun, 39.

gagner [gane], to gain, win, 39.
 le gant [gā], glove, 33.

le garçon [garsō], boy, 4; waiter, 13.
 la gare [gar], railway station, 14.
 le gâteau [gato], cake, 23.
 gauche [goʃ], left; à—, to (on) the left, 31.
 le général, *pl.* généraux [ʒeneral, ʒenerol], general, 39.
 la glace [glas], ice, 27; mirror, 33.
 grand [grā], large, great, big, 4.
 la grand'mère [grāme:r], grand-mother, 29.
 le grand-père [grāpe:r], grand-father, 29.
 gris [grɪ], gray, 18.
 la guerre [gɛ:r], war, 39.
 le guichet [giʃe], ticket- or stamp-window, 14.

to finish, finir.
 first, premier, -ère.
 five, cinq.
 flag, le drapeau.
 floor, plancher; on the second —, au premier.
 flower, la fleur.
 foolish, bête.
 foot, le pied; on —, à pied.
 for, pour.
 foreigner, l'étranger, *m.*
 to forget, oublier.
 fork, la fourchette.
 forty, quarante.
 four, quatre.
 franc, le franc.
 French, français.
 Frenchman, le Français.
 Friday, le vendredi.
 friend, l'ami, *m.*; l'amie, *f.*
 from, de.
 in front of, devant.
 funny, drôle.

to gain, gagner.
 garden, le jardin.
 gate, la porte.
 general, le général.
 German, allemand.
 to get, chercher; — down, descendre*; — out, sortir*, descendre*; — into, monter*; — up, se lever*.
 gift, le cadeau.
 girl, la fille.
 to give, donner; — back, rendre.
 glad, content.
 glass, le verre, la glace (*mirror*).
 glove, le gant.
 to go, aller*; — away, partir*; — in, entrer*; — out, sortir*; — to bed, se coucher*; — up, monter*; — (*right*) (*of clocks*), marcher(bien); — down, descendre*.
 good, bon, -ne; — morning, bon-jour.
 grandfather, le grand-père.

habiller [abiʒe], to dress, 37.
 l'habit [labi], *m.*, coat, 18.
 'haut [o], high; **en** —, upstairs, 7.
 Henri [ãri], Henry, 23.
 Henriette [ãrjet], Henrietta, 26.
 l'herbe [lɛrb], *f.*, grass, 8.
 l'heure [lœ:r], *f.*, hour, time,
 o'clock, 23, 24; **de bonne** —,
 early, 21; **de meilleure** —, ear-
 lier, 37.
 heureux, —*se*, [œrø, œrø:z], hap-
 py, 31.

hier [jɛ:r], yesterday, 26.
 l'histoire [listwa:r], *f.*, story, 2.
 l'hiver [livɛ:r], *m.*, winter, 27.
 l'homme [lɔm], *m.*, man, 23.
 l'hôtel [lotel], *m.*, hotel, 32.
 'huit [yit], eight, 24.
 ici [isi], here, 7.
 il [il], *m.*, he, it, 3.
 il y a [il ja], there is, there are, 7;
 ago, 29.

gra

ENGLISH-FRENCH

if

grandmother, la grand'mère.
 grass, l'herbe, *f.*
 ground-floor, le rez-de-chaussée.
 gray, gris.
 green, vert.
 grocer, l'épiciier, *m.*
 to grow, pousser.
 guest, l'invité, *m.*
 to guide, mener.
 gun, le fusil.
 hair, les cheveux, *m.*
 half, demi, la moitié; — **past**, et
 demie.
 hand, la main.
 handkerchief, le mouchoir.
 handsome, beau, belle.
 happy, heureux, —*se*.
 hat, le chapeau.
 to have, avoir; — **to**, devoir, § 447.
 he, il.
 head, la tête; — **ache**, mal à la tête.
 health, la santé.
 to hear, entendre.
 heaven, le ciel.
 Henry, Henri.
 Henrietta, Henriette.
 her (*pron.*), elle, la; **to** —, lui;
 (*adj.*), son, sa, ses.

here, ici; — **is**, — **are**, voici.
 hers, le sien.
 herself, se, elle.
 him, le, lui.
 himself, se, lui.
 his (*adj.*), son, sa, ses; (*pron.*), le
 sien.
 to hold, tenir.
 holiday, la fête.
 at home, chez . . .
 horse, le cheval, *pl.* les chevaux.
 hot, chaud; **to be** —, avoir chaud.
 hotel, l'hôtel, *m.*
 hour, l'heure, *f.*; **at what** —, à
 quelle heure.
 house, la maison; **at (in, to) the** —
 of, chez . . .
 how, comment; — **are you?** com-
 ment allez-vous?; — **much**, com-
 bien (de).
 however, pourtant.
 hunger, la faim; **to be hungry**,
 avoir faim.
 to hurry, se dépêcher*.
 to hurt, blesser; faire mal à . . .
 husband, le mari.

ice, la glace.
 if, si.

illustré [ilystré], *see* carte-postale.
impossible [ēposibl], impossible,
42.

l'invité [lēvite], *m.*, guest, 43.

inviter [ēvite], to invite, 42.

jamais [ʒame], ever; **ne . . . —**,
never, 32.

janvier [ʒāvje], January, 34.

le jardin [ʒardē], garden, 8.

jaune [ʒon], yellow, 33.

je [ʒə], I, 3.

Jean [ʒā], John, 7.

le jeudi [ʒœdi], Thursday, 23.

jeune [ʒœn], young, 29.

joli [ʒoli], pretty, 23.

jouer [ʒwe], to play, 4.

le jour [ʒur], day, 21; **tous les —s**,
every day, 21.

le journal *pl.* journaux [ʒurnal,
ʒurno], newspaper, 38.

joyeux —se [ʒwajø, ʒwajø:z], joy-
ful, 34.

juillet [ʒyijɛ], July, 34.

juin [ʒyɛ], June, 34.

jusqu'à [ʒyska], as far as, up to,
till, 34.

la [la], the, 1; her, it, 18.

là [la], there, 7.

la laine [lən], wool, 18

laisser [lese], to let, leave, 16.

le lait [lɛ], milk, 13.

la langue [lā:g], tongue, language, 4.

large [larʒ], broad, wide, 33.

laver [lave], to wash, 37.

le [lə], the, 1; him, it, 18.

la leçon [ləsɔ̃], lesson, 2.

ill (*adj.*), malade; (*adv.*), mal.

illness, la maladie.

immediately, tout de suite.

impossible, impossible.

in, dans, en.

ink, l'encre, *f.*

into, dans.

to introduce, présenter.

to invite, inviter.

is, est; — to, devoir, § 447.

it, il, elle, le, la; of —, en.

January, janvier.

John, Jean.

journey, le voyage.

joyous, joyeux, —se.

July, juillet.

June, juin.

to kill, tuer.

kind, bon, aimable.

kitchen, la cuisine.

knife, le couteau.

to knock, frapper.

to know, connaître, savoir.

lace, la dentelle.

lady, la dame.

land, la terre.

language, la langue.

large, grand.

last, dernier, dernière.

late, tard.

laundress, la blanchisseuse.

lawyer, l'avocat.

to lead, conduire.

to learn, apprendre.

least, le moins; **at —**, au moins.

to leave (*go away*), partir*.

left, gauche.

less, moins.

lesson, la leçon.

le légume [legym], vegetable, 23.
lent [lā], slow, 36.

lequel, laquelle [ləkəl, lakəl],
which, 44.

les [le], the; them.

la lettre [lɛtr], letter, 31.

leur [lœr], to them, 19; their, 9; le
—, theirs, 43.

lever [ləvɛ], to raise, 37; se —*,
to rise, get up, 37.

le lieutenant [ljœtnā], lieutenant,
39.

le linge [lɛ:ʒ], linen (washing), 37.

lire [lir], to read, 36.

le lit [li], bed, 32.

le livre [livr], book, 1.

loin [lwɛ], far, 42.

longtemps [lɔ̃tā], a long time, long,
27.

louer [lwe], to rent, 42.

lui [lyi], to him, to her, to it, 18;
him, he, 19.

le lundi [lœdi], Monday, 23.

Madame [madam], Madam, Mrs.,
16.

Mademoiselle [madmwazel], Miss,
21.

le magasin [magazɛ], store, 12.

mai [mɛ], May, 34.

la main [mɛ], hand, 38.

maintenant [mɛ̃tnā], now, 12.

mais [mɛ], but, 8.

la maison [mɛzɔ̃], house, 6.

le maître [mɛ:tr], master, teacher,
1.

la maîtresse [mɛtrɛs], mistress, 1.

le mal, *pl.* maux [mal, mo], evil,
pain, 41.

mal [mal], ill, badly, 24; faire —,
to hurt, 41; avoir —à la tête,
to have a head ache, 41.

malade [malad], ill, sick, 41.

la maladie [maladi], illness, 41.

la malle [mal], trunk, 14.

le mandat [māda], money-order, 31.

manger [māʒɛ], to eat, 6.

let (*him, her, them*), que, § 418, 1.
to let, laisser.

letter, la lettre; —-box, la boîte
aux lettres; —-carrier, le fac-
teur.

lieutenant, le lieutenant.

life, la vie.

light (*of colors*), clair.

lightning, l'éclair, *m.*

like, comme.

to like, aimer.

linen, le linge.

to listen, écouter.

little (*adj.*), petit; (*adv.*), peu.

to live, demeurer.

living-room, le salon.

long: a — time, longtemps.

no longer, ne . . . plus.

to look at, regarder; — for, chercher.

to lose, perdre.

to love, aimer.

to lunch, déjeuner.

lunch-counter, le buffet.

maid, la bonne.

to make, faire.

man, l'homme, *m.*

many, beaucoup; too —, trop; so
—, tant; how —, combien.

March, mars.

to march, marcher.

to marry, épouser, se marier*.

Mary, Marie.

master, le maître.

match, l'allumette, *f.*

matter: what is the — with you?
qu'avez-vous?

le marchand [marʃɑ̃], dealer, merchant, 22.
 marcher [marʃe], to walk, go, march, 12.
 le marché [marʃe], market; bon —, cheap, 18.
 le mardi [mardi], Tuesday, 18.
 le mari [mari], husband, 9.
 marier [marje], to marry, 29; se —*, to get married, 37.
 mars [mars], March, 34.
 le matelot [matlo], sailor, 44.
 le matin [matɛ̃], morning, 21.
 mauvais [move], bad, 27.
 me [mə], me, to me, 18, 19.
 le médecin [medsɛ̃], doctor, 29.
 meilleur [mɛʒœr], better (*adj.*), 28.
 même [mɛm], same, 29.
 menuisier [mɛnyizje], cabinet-maker, carpenter, 26.
 la mer [mɛr], sea, 44.
 merci [mersi], thank you, 16.
 le mercredi [merkredɪ], Wednesday, 23.
 la mère [mɛr], mother, 9.
 le métier [metje], trade, 26.
 le mètre [mɛtr], meter, 33.
 mettre [mɛtr], to put, put on, place, set, 11.

midi [midi], *m.*, noon, 23.
 le mien [mjɛ̃], mine, 43.
 mieux [mjø], better (*adv.*), 28.
 minuit [minyi], *m.*, midnight, 24.
 la minute [minyɛt], minute, 24.
 la mode [mød], fashion, 33; à la —, fashionable, 33.
 la modiste [mødɪst], milliner, 19.
 moi [mwa], me, to me, 19.
 moins [mwɛ̃], less, fewer, 17; à — que, unless, 41; au —, at least, 29.
 le mois [mwa], month, 27.
 la moitié [mwatje], half, 31.
 mon, ma, mes [mɔ̃, ma, me], my, 9.
 le monde [mɔ̃d], world, 28; people, 21; tout le —, everybody, 28.
 Monsieur [mɛsjø], Sir, Mr., gentleman, 13.
 monter* [mɔ̃te], to go up, 7.
 la montre [mɔ̃:tr], watch, 24.
 montrer [mɔ̃tre], to show, 19.
 morceau [mɔrsɔ], piece, 43.
 la mort [mɔr], death, 39.
 mort* [mɔr], dead, 29; (*p. p. of mourir**, to die).
 le mot [mo], word, 3.

May

ENGLISH-FRENCH

mov

May, mai.
 me, me, moi.
 meal, le repas.
 to mean, vouloir dire.
 meat, la viande.
 to meet, rencontrer.
 to mend, raccommoder.
 merchant, le marchand.
 meter, le mètre.
 midnight, minuit, *m.*
 milk, le lait.
 milliner, la modiste.
 mine, le mien.
 minute, la minute.

mirror, la glace.
 mistake: to make a —, se tromper*.
 mistress, la maîtresse.
 Monday, le lundi.
 money, l'argent, *m.*; —-order, le mandat.
 month, le mois.
 more, plus; no —, ne . . . plus.
 morning, le matin.
 most, le plus.
 mother, la mère.
 mouth, la bouche.
 moving-picture show, le cinéma.

le mouchoir [muʃwaʁ], handkerchief, 19.

la musique [myzik], music, 21.

la nappe [nap], table-cloth, 43.

naturel, -le [natyʁɛl], natural, 33.

n'est-ce pas? [nɛs pa], isn't that so? 23.

ne . . . pas [nə pa], not, 6.

ne . . . personne [pɛʁsɔn], nobody, no one, 32.

ne . . . plus [ply], no longer, 32.

ne . . . que [kə], only, nothing but, 32.

né [ne], born, 29; (*p. p. of naître**, to be born).

la neige [nɛ:ʒ], snow, 29.

neuf [nœf], nine, 24.

le neveu [nøvø], nephew, 29.

la nièce [njɛs], niece, 29.

Noël [nœl], *m.*, Christmas, 34.

noir [nwaʁ], black, 4.

non [nɔ̃], no, not, 2.

la note [not], bill, 23.

notre, nos [notʁ, no], our, 9.

le nôtre [no:tr], ours, 43.

nous [nu], we, 3; us, to us, 18, 19; ourselves, 37.

novembre [nøvā:br], November, 34.

le nuage [nyɑ:ʒ], cloud, 27.

la nuit [nyi], night, 36.

le numéro [nymero], number, 32.

obliger [ɔbliʒe], to oblige, 26.

l'occasion [ləkazjɔ̃], *f.*, opportunity, 42.

l'œillet [lœjɛ], *m.*, pink, 8.

much, beaucoup (*de*); as —, autant; too —, trop; how —, combien.

music, la musique.

must, il faut que, § 429; devoir, § 447.

my, mon, ma, mes.

napkin, la serviette.

natural, naturel, -le.

near, près de.

nearly, presque.

it is necessary, il faut, § 429.

necktie, la cravate.

to need, avoir besoin de.

nephew, le neveu.

never, ne . . . jamais.

New Year's Day, le jour de l'an;

Happy New Year, bonne année.

newspaper, le journal.

niece, la nièce.

night, la nuit.

nine, neuf.

nineteen, dix-neuf.

no, non; — longer, — more, ne . . . plus; — one, ne . . . personne; no . . ., § 248.

nobody, ne . . . personne.

noon, midi, *m.*

none, § 123.

not, ne . . . pas.

nothing, ne . . . rien.

November, novembre.

now, maintenant.

number, le numéro.

to oblige, obliger.

o'clock, l'heure, *f.*

October, octobre.

of, de.

often, souvent.

old, vieux, vieille.

l'oiseau [lwazo], *m.*, bird, 28.
 on [ɔ̃], one, people, we, you, they, 24.
 l'oncle [lɔ̃:kl], *m.*, uncle, 9.
 onze [ɔ̃:z], eleven, 24.
 ou [u], or, 9.
 où [u], where, 1.
 oublier [ublje], to forget, 23.
 oui [wi], yes, 2.
 ouvert [uveiʁ], open, 27; (*p. p. of ouvrir*, to open).
 l'ouvrier [luvrie], *m.*, workman, 26.
 ouvrir [uvriʁ], to open, 26, 44.

la paille [pai:j], straw, 33.
 le pain [pɛ̃], bread, 13.
 la paire [peʁ], pair, 33.
 la paix [pe], peace, 39.
 le pantalon [pantalɔ̃], trousers, 18.
 le paquebot [pakbo], steamer, 44.
 Pâques [paik], *m.*, Easter, 34.
 le paquet [pake], parcel, bundle, 33.

par [paʁ], by, through, 43.
 le parc [paʁk], park, 12.
 parce que [paʁs kə], because, 16.
 le pardessus [paʁdəsy], overcoat, 18.
 le parent [paʁɑ̃], relative, 9.
 parfait [paʁfɛ], perfect, 38.
 Paris [paʁi], Paris, 14.
 parisien, -ne [paʁizjɛ, paʁizjɛn], Parisian, 32.
 parler [paʁle], to speak, 3.
 la partie [paʁti], part, 42.
 partir* [paʁtiʁ], to depart, go away, leave, 14.
 pas [pa], not, not any. *See ne.*
 passer [pase], to pass; to spend, 33.
 pauvre [po:vʁ], poor, 19.
 payer [peje], to pay, 23.
 le pays [pej], country, 41.
 le paysan [peizɑ̃], peasant, 28.
 peigner [peɛne], to comb, 38.
 pendant [pɑ̃dɑ̃], during, 27;—*que*, while, 27.
 la pendule [pɑ̃dyl], clock, 24.
 penser [pɑ̃se], to think, 26.

on

ENGLISH-FRENCH

pea

on, sur.
 on board, à bord.
 once, une fois; at —, tout de suite.
 one, un, une; (*pron.*), on; the —, celui, celle.
 only, seulement, ne . . . que.
 to open, ouvrir.
 open, ouvert.
 opportunity, l'occasion, *f.*
 or, ou.
 to order, commander.
 in order that, afin que, pour que.
 other, autre.
 ought, devoir, § 447.
 our, notre, nos.
 ours, le nôtre.

overcoat, le pardessus.
 to owe, devoir.

package, le colis.
 pair, la paire.
 paper, le devoir.
 parcel, le colis.
 parcel-post package, le colis postal.
 Parisian, parisien, -ne.
 park, le parc.
 part, la partie.
 to pass, passer.
 to pay, payer.
 peace, la paix.
 peasant, le paysan.

la pension [pɑ̃sjɔ̃], pension; board-
ing-house, 42.

perdre [pɛʁdʁ], to lose, 12.

le père [pɛʁ], father, 9.

permettre [pɛʁmɛtʁ], to permit, 43.

la personne [pɛʁsɔ̃], person; ne
... —, nobody, no one, 32.

petit [pəti], little, small, 4.

peu [pø], little, few, 16.

la peur [pøʁ], fear; avoir —, to be
afraid, 36.

peut-être [pøt-ɛtʁ], perhaps, 16.

la phrase [fʁaːz], sentence, 3.

la pièce [pjɛs], play, 36.

le pied [pje], foot, 36.

Pierre [pjɛʁ], Peter, 9.

la pipe [pip], pipe, 22.

la place [plas], place, seat, 14.

plaindre [plɛ̃dʁ], to pity, 44; se
—*, to complain, 44.

le plaisir [plɛziʁ], pleasure, 21.

s'il vous plaît [sil vu plɛ], if you
please, 33.

pleuvoir [plœvwa:ʁ], to rain, 27.

la pluie [plyi], rain, 27.

la plume [plym], pen, 2

plus [ply], more, most, 28; ne ...

—, not again, no more, no
longer, 32.

plusieurs [plyzjœʁ], several, 44.

poli [pɔli], polite, 32.

la pomme [pɔm], apple, 13; —de
terre, potato, 13.

le pont [pɔ̃], bridge, deck, 44.

la porte [pɔʁt], door, gate, 6.

porter [pɔʁte], to carry, 16; wear,
18.

poser [poze], to place, 26.

possible [pɔsibl], possible, 28.

la poste [post], post-office, 31.

le potage [pɔta:ʒ], soup, 13.

pour [puʁ], for, 12; —que, in or-
der that, 41.

le pourboire [purbwa:ʁ], tip, 31.

pourquoi [purkwa], why, 26.

pourtant [purtɑ̃], however, 29.

pousser [puse], to grow, 8.

la poussière [pusjɛʁ], dust, 28.

pouvoir [puvwa:ʁ], to be able, 6.

premier, —ère [prɛmjɛ, prɛmjɛʁ]
first, 32; au —, on the second
floor, 32

pen, la plume.

pencil, le crayon.

people, le monde.

perfect, parfait.

perhaps, peut-être.

to permit, permettre.

Peter, Pierre.

piece, le morceau.

pink, l'œillet, *m*.

pipe, la pipe.

to pity, plaindre.

place, la place.

to place, mettre, poser.

plate, l'assiette, *f*.

play, la pièce.

to play, jouer.

pleasant, agréable.

if you please, s'il vous plaît.

pleasure, le plaisir.

polite, poli, —e.

poor, pauvre.

porter, le facteur.

possible, possible.

postal-parcel, le colis postal.

post-card, la carte postale; picture

—, la carte postale illustrée.

postman, le facteur.

post-office, la poste.

potato, la pomme de terre.

to prefer, aimer mieux.

present, le cadeau.

to present, présenter.

prendre [prũ:dr], to take, catch, 32.

près (de) [prɛ (də)], near, 22.

présenter [prezãte], to present, introduce, 43.

presque [preskə], almost, 21.

prier [prie], to pray, beg, 26.

le printemps [prẽtã], spring, 27.

le prix [pri], price, 17.

le professeur [profesœr], professor, 2.

se promener* [sə prãmne], to take a walk, 37.

prononcer [pronõse], to pronounce, 3.

propre [prœpr], clean, 37.

la provision [prøvizjõ], supply, 44.

puis [pyi], then, 21.

le quai [kɛ], wharf, 44.

la qualité [kalite], quality, 33.

quand [kã], when, 24.

quarante [karã:t], forty, 29.

quart [kar], quarter, fourth, 24;
—d'heure, quarter of an hour, 24.

quatorze [katorz], fourteen, 28.

quatre [katr], four, 24.

quatre-vingts [katrɔvẽ], eighty, 29.

que [kə], whom, which, that, let (§ 418), than, as; (*interrog.*), what; **ne** . . . —, only, 32.

quel [kɛl], what; which; what a . . . ! 8.

quelque [kɛlkə], some, any, 31;— chose, something, 31,

quelqu'un [kɛlkœ], some one, 38.

quelquefois [kɛlkœfwa], sometimes, 31.

qu'est-ce qui? [kɛs ki], what? 44.

la question [kestjõ], question, 26.

qui [ki], who, which, that, 7; (*interrog. or after prep.*), who, whom, 11.

quinze [kẽ:z], fifteen, 28.

quoi [kwa], which, what, 44.

quoique [kwak], although, 41.

raccommoder [rakomode], to mend, 37.

la raison [rezõ], reason; avoir —, to be right, 36.

se rappeler* [sə raple], to remember, 38.

pretty, joli.

price, le prix.

professor, le professeur.

to pronounce, prononcer.

pupil, l'élève, *m. or f.*

purchase, l'achat, *m.*

to put, put on, mettre.

quality, la qualité.

quarter le quart.

queer, drôle.

question, la question.

quick, vite.

railroad, le chemin de fer.

railway car, le wagon.

railway station, la gare.

rain, la pluie; to —, pleuvoir.

to raise, lever.

to read, lire.

reason, la raison.

to receive, recevoir.

red, rouge.

to regret, regretter.

relative, le parent.

to remain, rester*.

to remember, se rappeler*.

to rent, louer.

recevoir [rəsəvwɑ̃r], to receive, 43.
 regarder [rəgarde], to look at, 24.
 regretter [rəgrete], to regret, be sorry, 42.
 rencontrer [rūkōtre], to meet, 11.
 rendre [rū:dr], to give back, 39.
 le repas [rəpa], meal, 42.
 répondre (à) [repō:dr (a)], to answer, 17.
 se reposer* [sə rəpoze], to rest, 37.
 le restaurant [restorā], restaurant, 16.
 rester* [reste], to remain, 42.
 retarder [rətarde], to be slow (*of clocks*), 24.
 revenir* [rəvəni:r], to come back, 28.
 le rez-de-chaussée [re də ʃose], ground-floor, 32.
 le rhume [rym], cold, 36.

rien [rjē]: **ne . . .** —, nothing, 32.
 la robe [rɔb], dress, 17.
 la rose [ro:z], rose, 8.
 rouge [ru:ʒ], red, 4.
 le ruban [rybā], ribbon, 19.
 la rue [ry], street, 11.

saisir [sezi:r], to seize, 8.
 la saison [sezō], season, 27.
 sale [sal], dirty, 37.
 salir [salir], to soil, 28.
 la salle [sal], room, 1; — **à manger** [māʒe], dining-room, 6; — **d'attente** [datūt], waiting-room, 14; — **de bains** [bē], bath-room, 38; — **de classe** [klas], class-room, 1.
 le salon [salɔ̃], drawing-room, 6.
 le samedi [samdi], Saturday, 23.
 sans [sā], without, 21.

rep

ENGLISH-FRENCH

set

to reply, répondre.
 to rest, se reposer*.
 restaurant, le restaurant.
 to return, revenir*.
 ribbon, le ruban.
 right, droit; to the —, à droite; to be —, avoir raison.
 to ring, sonner.
 to rise, se lever*.
 road, le chemin.
 room, la chambre; la salle; bed—, la chambre à coucher; dining—, la salle à manger; class—, la salle de classe; bath—, la salle de bains; waiting—, la salle d'attente.
 rose, la rose.
 to run, courir, marcher (*of clocks*).

sailor, le matelot.
 same, même.

Saturday, le samedi.
 to say, dire.
 school, l'école, *f.*; **at** —, à l'école.
 school-master, le maître d'école.
 school-mistress, la maîtresse d'école.
 sea, la mer.
 season, la saison.
 seat, la place.
 seated, assis.
 second, deuxième; — **floor**, le premier.
 to see, voir.
 to seek, chercher.
 to seize, saisir.
 to sell, vendre.
 to send, envoyer.
 sentence, la phrase.
 September, septembre.
 sermon, le sermon.
 servant, la bonne.
 to set, mettre.

la santé [sāte], health, 41.
 savoir [savwa:r], to know, 26.
 le savon [savō], soap, 37.
 la scène [sen], stage, 36.
 se [sə], (to) himself, herself, itself, oneself, themselves, 37.
 seize [seiz], sixteen, 28.
 la semaine [səmen], week, 23.
 sentir [sātir], to feel, 38.
 sept [set], seven, 24.
 septembre [septā:br], September, 34.
 le sermon [sermō], sermon, 21.
 la serviette [servjet], towel, 37; napkin, 43.
 seul [sœl], alone, 22.
 seulement [sœlmā], only, 23.
 si [si], if, 18; so, 23.

le sien [sjē], his, hers, its, 42.
 six [sis], six, 24.
 la sœur [sœ:r], sister, 9.
 la soie [swa], silk, 17.
 la soif [swaf], thirst; avoir—, to be thirsty, 24.
 le soir [swa:r], evening, 23.
 soixante [swasā:t], sixty, 29.
 soixante-dix [dis], seventy, 29.
 le soldat [solda], soldier, 39.
 le soleil [solæ:j], sun, 27.
 le sommeil [somæ:j], sleep; avoir—, to be sleepy, 36.
 son, sa, ses [sō, sa, se], his, her, its, 9.
 la sonnette [sonet], bell, 6.
 sonner [sone], to ring, 6.
 sont [sō], are, 2.

sev

ENGLISH-FRENCH

spe

seven, sept.
 seventy, soixante-dix.
 several, plusieurs.
 to shine, briller.
 shirt, la chemise.
 shoe, le soulier.
 shop: to the — of, chez . . .
 to show, montrer.
 to shut, fermer.
 sick, malade.
 sickness, la maladie.
 side, le côté.
 sidewalk, le trottoir.
 silk, la soie.
 since, depuis; — **when**, depuis quand, depuis combien de temps.
 to sing, chanter.
 sir, monsieur.
 sister, la sœur.
 sit down! asseyez-vous!
 six, six.
 sixteen, seize.
 sky, le ciel.
 to sleep, dormir.

sleep, le sommeil.
 to be sleepy, avoir sommeil.
 slow, lent; to be — (*of clocks*), retarder.
 small, petit.
 to smoke, fumer.
 snow, la neige.
 so, donc, si; — **many**, — **much**, tant; — **that**, afin que.
 soap, le savon.
 sock, la chaussette.
 to soil, salir.
 soldier, le soldat.
 some, du, § 123, quelque.
 some one, quelqu'un.
 something, quelque chose.
 sometimes, quelquefois.
 son, le fils.
 soon, bientôt.
 sorry, fâché; to be —, être fâché de; regretter.
 soup, le potage.
 to speak, parler.
 to spend (*time*), passer.

sortir* [sortir], to go out, 14.
 le soulier [sulje], shoe, 32.
 sous [su], under, 37.
 souvent [suvā], often, 22.
 le sucre [sykr], sugar, 26.
 tout de suite [tu də syit], at once,
 19.
 sur [sy:r], on, 1.

le tabac [taba], tobacco, 22.
 la table [tabl], table, 1.
 le tailleur [tajœ:r], tailor, 18.
 tant [tā], so much, so many, 17.
 la tante [tā:t], aunt, 9.
 tard [tar], late, 21.

la tasse [tas], cup, 43.
 le taxi [taksi], taxi, taxicab, 36.
 le temps [tā], time, 31; weather,
 32; à—, in time, 36; combien
 de—, how long, 34.
 tenir [təni:r], to hold, 33.
 la terre [tær], land, 44.
 la tête [tæt], head, 41.
 le thé [te], tea, 26.
 le théâtre [teɑ:tr], theater, 36.
 le timbre [tē:br], stamp, 31.
 la toilette [twalet], toilette, 38.
 tomber* [tōbe], to fall, 27.
 le tonnerre [tōnær], thunder, 27.
 le tort [tœ:r], wrong; avoir—, to
 be wrong, 36.

spo

ENGLISH-FRENCH

the

spoon, la cuiller.
 spring, le printemps.
 stage, la scène.
 stairs, l'escalier, *m*.
 stamp, le timbre; — -window, le
 guichet.
 to start, partir*.
 station, la gare.
 to stay, rester*.
 steamer, le paquebot.
 still, encore.
 stocking, le bas.
 store, le magasin.
 to stop, s'arrêter*.
 story, l'histoire, *f*.
 stranger, l'étranger, *m*.
 straw, la paille.
 street, la rue; — -car, le tramway.
 to strike, frapper.
 strong, fort.
 stupid, bête.
 study, l'étude, *f*.
 sugar, le sucre.
 suit, le costume.
 summer, l'été, *m*.
 sun, le soleil.

Sunday, le dimanche.
 sword, l'épée, *f*.
 table, la table; — -cloth, la nappe.
 tailor, le tailleur.
 to take, prendre.
 to talk, parler.
 taxi, taxicab, le taxi.
 tea, le thé.
 to teach, enseigner.
 teacher, le maître, la maîtresse.
 to tell, dire.
 ten, dix.
 than, que.
 thank you, merci.
 that (*adj.*), ce, cet, cette; (*pron.*),
 celui, celle; celui-là, celle-là;
 cela; (*rel. pron.*), qui, que;
 (*conj.*), que.
 the, le, la, les.
 theater, le théâtre.
 their, leur.
 theirs, le leur.
 them, les, eux, elles; to —, leur.
 themselves, se, eux.

toujours [tuzur], always, 18.
 tout, -e, tous, toutes [tu, tut],
 all, 9; tous les deux, both, 29;
 tous les . . ., every . . ., 21;
 tout de suite, at once, 19.
 la tragédie [trazedi], tragedy, 36.
 le train [trē], train, 14.
 le tramway [tramwe], street-car,
 12.
 le travail [trava:j], work, 8.
 travailler [travaje], to work, 26.

à travers [a traver], across, 26.
 traverser [traverse], to cross, 44.
 treize [trɛ:z], thirteen, 28.
 trente [trā:t], thirty, 29.
 très [trɛ], very, 7.
 trois [trwa], three, 22.
 tromper [trōpe], to deceive, 37; se
 —*, to be mistaken, 37.
 le trottoir [trōtwair], sidewalk, 12.
 trop [tro], too much, too many,
 too, 17.

then, puis.
 there, là, y; — is, — are, il y a,
 voilà.
 therefore, donc.
 these (*adj.*), ces; (*pron.*), ceux-ci,
 celles-ci.
 they, ils, on.
 thing, la chose.
 to think, penser.
 third, troisième.
 thirst, la soif; to be thirsty, avoir
 soif.
 thirty, trente.
 this (*adj.*), ce, cet, cette; (*pron.*),
 celui, celle; celui-ci, celle-ci; ceci.
 those (*adj.*), ces; (*pron.*), ceux-là,
 celles-là.
 three, trois.
 through, par.
 thunder, le tonnerre.
 Thursday, le jeudi.
 ticket, le billet; — -window, le
 guichet.
 till, jusqu'à.
 time, le temps; la fois; l'heure, *f.*
 tip, le pourboire.
 to tire, fatiguer.
 to, à.
 tobacco, le tabac.
 tobacconist, le marchand de tabac.
 to-day, aujourd'hui.

together, ensemble.
 to-morrow, demain.
 tongue, la langue.
 too, aussi; trop; — much, trop.
 tooth, la dent; — ache, mal aux
 dents.
 towel, la serviette.
 town, la ville; in —, en ville.
 trade, le métier.
 tragedy, la tragédie.
 train, le train.
 to travel, voyager.
 traveler, le voyageur.
 trousers, le pantalon.
 true, vrai.
 trunk, la malle.
 to try, essayer.
 Tuesday, le mardi.
 tulip, la tulipe.
 twelve, douze; — o'clock, midi,
 minuit.
 twenty, vingt.
 twice, deux fois.
 two, deux.
 uncle, l'oncle, *m*
 under, sous.
 to understand, comprendre.
 to undress, déshabiller*.
 United States, les États-Unis, *m*.
 unless, à moins que.

trouver [truve], to find, 4.
 tuer [tye], to kill, 39.
 la tulipe [tylip], tulip, 8.

un, une [œ, yn], a, an, one, 3.

les vacances [vakāns], *f.*, vacation, 28,

la vache [vaʃ], cow, 28,

la valise [vali:z], valise, 14.

il vaut [il vo], it is worth, 33;—

mieux, it is better, 39,

le velours [vəlu:r], velvet, 19.

vendre [vā:dr], to sell, 11.

le vendredi [vādrədi], Friday, 23.

venir* [vəni:r], to come, 14.

le vent [vā], wind, 27.

le verre [və:r], glass, 18.

vert [və:r], green, 4.

les vêtements [vətmā]. *m.*, clothes, 19.

la viande [vjā:d], meat, 13.

la vie [vi], life, 42.

vieux, vieille [vjø, vjɛ:j], old, 8.

le village [vila:ʒ], village, 28.

la ville [vil], city, 12.

le vin [vɛ], wine, 13.

vingt [vɛ], twenty, 19.

la visite [vizit], visit, 34.

vite [vit], quickly, 36.

unt

ENGLISH-FRENCH

win

until, jusqu'à.

upstairs, en haut.

us, to us, nous.

to use to, § 262.

vacation, les vacances, *f.*

valise, la valise.

vegetable, le légume.

velvet, le velours.

very, très; — much, beaucoup.

village, le village.

visit, la visite.

to wait (for), attendre.

waiter, le garçon.

waiting-room, la salle d'attente.

to walk. marcher; to take a —, se promener*.

to want, vouloir.

war, la guerre.

warm, chaud; to be —, avoir chaud.

to wash, laver.

watch, la montre.

water, l'eau, *f.*

way, le chemin.

we, nous; on.

weak, faible.

weapon, l'arme, *f.*

to wear, porter.

weather, le temps.

Wednesday, le mercredi.

week, la semaine.

well, bien; to be —, aller* bien.

wharf, le quai.

what, quel, ce qui, que, qu'est-ce qui.

when, quand.

where, où; from —, d'où.

which, que; lequél; quel.

while, pendant que.

white, blanc, blanche.

who, qui.

whose, dont, à qui.

why, pourquoi.

wide, large.

wife, la femme.

to win, gagner.

wind, le vent.

windy: it is —, il fait du vent.

voici [vwasi], here is, here are, 26.	voyager [vwajaze], to travel, 44.
voilà [vwala], there is, there are, 7.	le voyageur [vwajazeœr], traveler, 16,
voir [vwair], to see, 21.	vrai [vre], true, 29.
la voiture [vwatyr], carriage, 12.	vu [vy], seen, 21; (<i>p. p. of voir</i> , to see).
votre, pl. vos [votr, vo], your, 9.	le wagon [vagɔ̃], railway car, 14.
le vôtre [vo:tr], yours, 43.	
vouloir [vulwar], to wish, 6;— dire, to mean, 39.	
vous [vu], you, 3; to you, 19; your- self, 37.	
le voyage [vwajazɛ], journey, 44.	y [i], to it, to them, there, 22.

window , la fenêtre.	to write , écrire.
wine , le vin.	to be wrong , avoir tort.
winter , l'hiver, <i>m.</i>	
to wish , désirer, vouloir.	
with , avec.	
without , sans.	yard , la cour; le mètre.
woman , la femme.	year , l'an, <i>m.</i> ; l'année, <i>f.</i>
wool , la laine.	yellow , jaune.
woolen , de laine.	yes , oui.
word , le mot.	yesterday , hier.
work , le travail; to — , travailler.	yet (<i>still</i>), encore; (<i>however</i>), pour- tant.
workman , l'ouvrier, <i>m.</i>	you , vous; on.
world , le monde.	young , jeune.
it is worth , il vaut.	your , votre, vos.
to wound , blesser.	yours , le vôtre.
to wrap , envelopper.	

INDEX

Numbers refer to sections

à contracted with definite article, 483; with infinitive after verbs, 540; expressing possession, 522, 2.

accent (stress), page 16, § 53.

accents (acute, etc.), page 18, § 57.

adjectives, feminine (formation), 490; (irregular), 490, 6, 7; plural (formation), 491; agreement, 492; possessive, 520; agreement, 521; repeated, 522, 1; demonstrative, 523; comparison, 497 ff; position, 493.

adverbs, formation (-ment), 494; position, 495; comparison, 497 ff; of quantity, 496; numerical, 505.

age, 510.

alphabet (names of letters, etc.), page 19, § 58.

any, see *some*.

article, after *être* to express possession, 522, 2; definite and indefinite, 483; definite, contracted with *de* and *à*, 483; definite with general nouns, 484; definite with proper names, 486, 2; definite with languages, 486, 3; definite with countries, 486, 4; definite with week-days, 486, 5; definite with seasons, 486, 6 and 263; definite in various idioms, 486, 7; definite omitted in titles, 487, 1; definite omitted with appositive nouns, 487, 2; definite in idiomatic uses, 489;

definite in expressions of *measure, weight*, etc., 489, 1; definite with parts of body, 489, 2; indefinite, 483; omitted with predicate nouns, 488, 1; omitted with appositive nouns, 488, 2; omitted with *cent, mille*, 488, 4.

as, in comparisons, 499.

aucun (ne), 532.

autre }
autrui } 530, 6.

auxiliary verbs, conjugation (*avoir, être*), page 278; use, 543; use in compound tenses, page 277.

avant, distinguished from *devant*, page 126, footnote.

avoir, see auxiliary verbs.

bien (+ *de* + article), 486, note 1.

cedilla, page 18, § 57.

c'est, ce sont, page 120, footnote; 525, 2.

ce, cet, cette, 523.

ce and *il*, distinguished, 525.

ceci, cela, 524, 525.

celui, celle, 524.

celui-ci, celui-là, 524, note 1.

chaque, 530, 3

chez, 173.

-ci (-là), 523, note 2; 524, note 1.

clock, 508, 525; exceptions: 1.

comme and *comment*, distinguished, page 209, footnote.

comparison, see *adjectives* and *adverbs*.

conditional, formation, use, 303.

- conditions, 555, 305.
conjectural future or conditional, 553.
conjugations, of regular verbs (in full), page 275; of irregular verbs, pages 281-293; interrogative, 26; negative, 54.
conjunctive pronouns, see *pronouns*.
connaître, distinguished from *savoir*, page 243, footnote.
dates, 509.
days of the week (list), 222.
de, contracted with definite article, 483; with infinitive after verbs, 540; partitive use, 485; after adverbs of quantity, 496; 485, 1, c; = in (after superlative), page 313, footnote 3; with names of countries, 486, 4.
definite article, see *article*.
demonstrative adjectives or pronouns, see *adjectives, pronouns*.
depuis (tenses after), 551.
devant, distinguished from *avant*, page 126, footnote.
deviations permissible, 560.
devoir (translation), 447.
dieresis, page 18, § 57.
disjunctive pronouns, see *pronouns*.
elision, page 17, § 56.
en (prep.), with names of countries, 486, 4, and 319; (pronoun), uses, 518; (= *some, any*, etc.), 485, 2; with numerals and with adverbs of quantity, 485, 2, Note.
est-ce que, use, 536.
être, conjugation, page 278; auxiliary in compound tenses, 543; with passive voice, 556.
floor (1st, 2d, etc.), page 177, footnote.
fois (*temps, heure*), distinguished, page 126, footnote.
fractions, 507.
future (= English present), 554; (or **conditional**), to express conjecture or probability, 553.
gender (of nouns), rules for, 557, 558.
guère (*ne — guère*), 532.
heure, see *fois*; used to tell time, 508.
i (final) elision, page 18, Note 2.
il and *ce*, distinguished, 525.
il y a and *voilà*, 66.
imperative, forms, 537, 4; third person (how rendered), 547, 2; with object pronouns, 516.
imperfect tense (indicative), use, 552; (subjunctive), formation, 537, 5; (subjunctive), sequence of tenses, 546.
in (before places or countries), 319.
indefinite adjective or pronoun, 530.
indefinite article, see *article*.
infinitive (following verbs), 540.
interrogation, models for questions, 536.
interrogative adjectives, see *adjectives*.
interrogative pronouns, see *pronouns*.
irregular verbs, tabulated, pp. 281-293; stem, 538.
jamais (*ne — jamais*), 532.
-là, 523, Note 2; 524, Note 1.
le (pleonastic), 517.
lequel, declined, 528, 2; (and *quel*), 526, 527 ff.
linking (of words), page 17, § 55.

meilleur and *mieux*, distinguished, page 153, footnote.

même, use, 530, 7.

mon for *ma*, 520, Note 1.

months (list of), 347.

ne (with *pas*, *point*), 531; position, 531, 4; redundant, 534.

n'est-ce pas, page 130, footnote.

negation, 531.

ni — *ni* (with *ne*), 523; (with *partitive*), 485, Note 1.

non, use, 535.

nouns, gender, 481, 557–559; number, 482; rules for gender, 557–558; gender (compound nouns), 559; used as adjectives, 485, 1, d.

nul (*ne*), 532.

numerals, 502; pronunciation, 504; collective, 506; fractions, 507.

on, use, 530, 1.

où (= relative pronoun), 529, 3.

participle (present), agreement, 544; (past), agreement, 545; (past), agreement with reflexive pronoun, 545.

partitive, use, 485; (see *some*).

pas, use, 531; position, 531, 1, 2, 3; omitted, 533.

passive voice, 556.

past definite tense, use, 552.

past indefinite tense, use, 552 (2).

permissible deviations, 560.

personal pronouns, see *pronouns*.

personne (*ne* — *personne*), 532.

plupart, use, page 307, footnote 1.

plus (*ne* — *plus*), 532.

possession, how expressed, 522, 2.

possessive adjective, see *adjectives*.

possessive pronouns, see *pronouns*.

prepositions with infinitive, 539–541; see also *à* and *de*.

present subjunctive, formation, 537, 2; sequence of tenses, 546.

principal parts of verbs (formation of tenses), 537.

probability or conjecture, (in future or conditional), 553.

pronouns, conjunctive, 512; use, 513; order, 515, 516; demonstrative, 524 ff; disjunctive, 512; use, 513, 514; interrogative, summary of uses, 517; remarks on, 528; personal (subject), 511 ff; (object), 512 ff; possessive, 520; relative, 527, 529; reflexive, 519; as reciprocals, 519, 3.

pronunciation, pages 3–23.

que (*ne* — *que*), 523.

quel and *lequel*, 526, 527 ff.

quelconque, 530, 9, a.

quelque, 530, 4.

questions, models for, 536.

qui? and *qui*, 527 ff.

quiconque, 530, 9, b.

quoi, 527 ff.

regular verbs, paradigms, page 275.

reflexive pronouns, see *pronouns*.

reflexive verbs, see *verbs*.

rien (*ne* — *rien*), 532.

savoir, distinguished from *connaître*, page 243, footnote.

seasons, 263 and 486, 6.

si, elision of *i*, page 101, footnote; = *aussi* in comparison, 499, Note.

some (any), 485; before a noun, 485, 1; with negative, 485, 1, Note; before an adjective, 485, 1, Note; as pronoun, 485, 2.

son for *sa*, 520, Note 1.

stress (accentuation), page 16, § 53.

- subjunctive**, sequence of tenses, 546; uses, 547 ff.
superlative, formation, 497.
syllables, division of, page 17, § 54.
temps, see *fois*.
tenses, formation from principal parts, 537; compound (synopsis of), page 277; compound (with *avoir* or *être*), 543; compound (verbs of motion), 543, 2; compound (reflexive verbs), 543, 1; use of (with *depuis*), 551; use of past tense, 552; sequence in subjunctive, 546.
-tes (instead of *-ez*), as ending of 2d person plural, 537 (3).
than, before numerals, page 313, footnote 2.
time of day, 508.
ton for *ta*, 520, Note 1.
tous, pronunciation, page 329, footnote.
tout, 530, 2.
tu and *vous*, distinguished, 511, Note.
verbs, regular (paradigms), page, 275; stem of irregular verbs, 538; irregular (table of), pages 281-293; irregular (compounds) pages 294-295; principal parts and formation of tenses, 537; compound tenses (paradigm), 537; compound tenses (auxiliaries used with), 543, 1; reflexive verbs, 542; prepositions used with verbs, 539; followed by infinitive, 540; transitive and intransitive (differing from English use), 541.
voici and *voilà*, distinguished page 141, footnote.
voilà and *il y a*, distinguished, 66.
vous and *tu*, distinguished, 511, Note 1.
weather, 264.
y (pronoun), uses, 518.



He does not give it to them
He does not give her a ny
He has given us some
He gave it to me.
They gave it to us.

Betty Field
Box 105
Pontiac Road,
Ann Arbor, Mich

W

Miss H. M. M. M.
137 C. M. M. M.
Ann Arbor, Mich

afternoon



